



Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

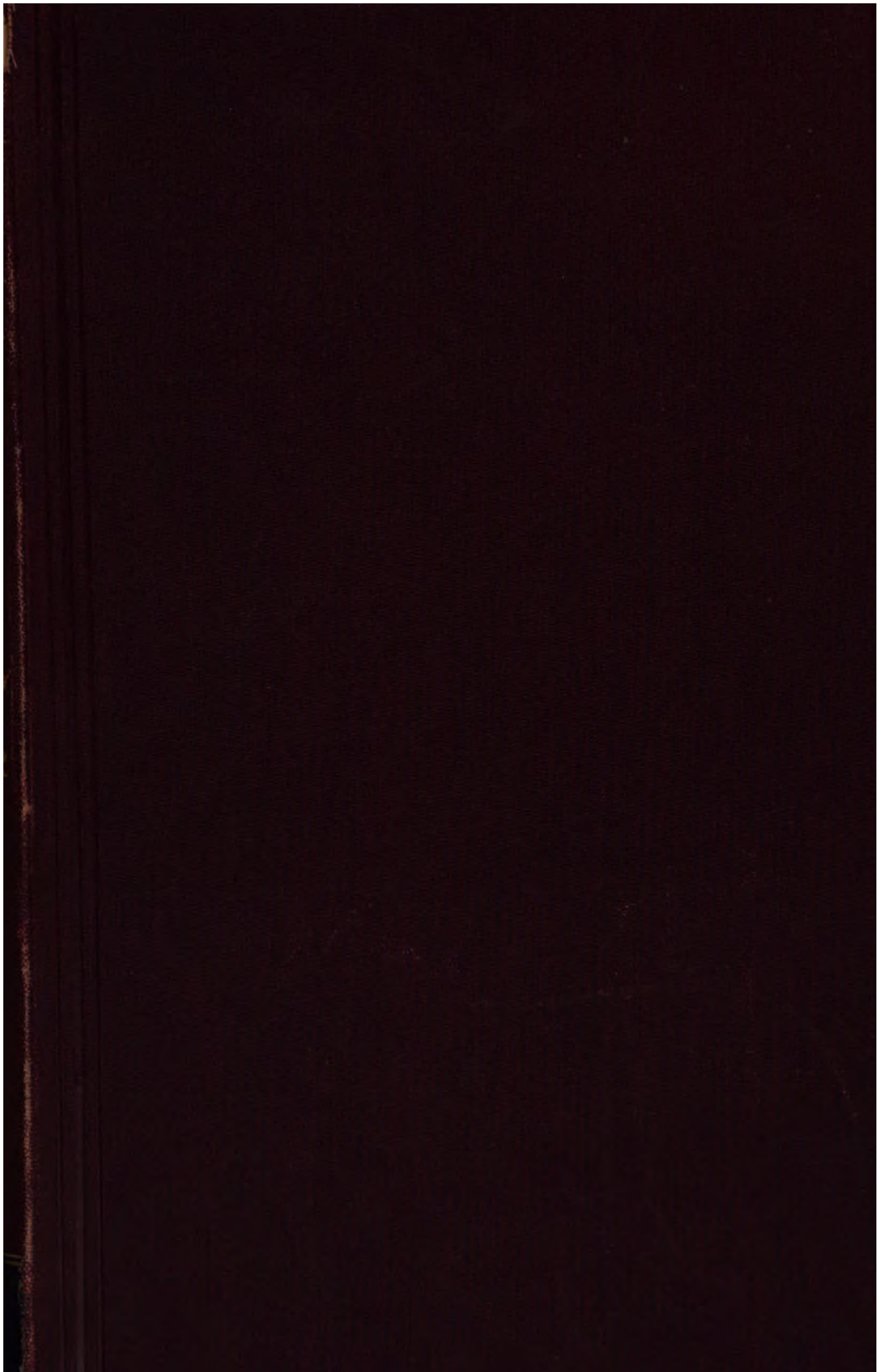
This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

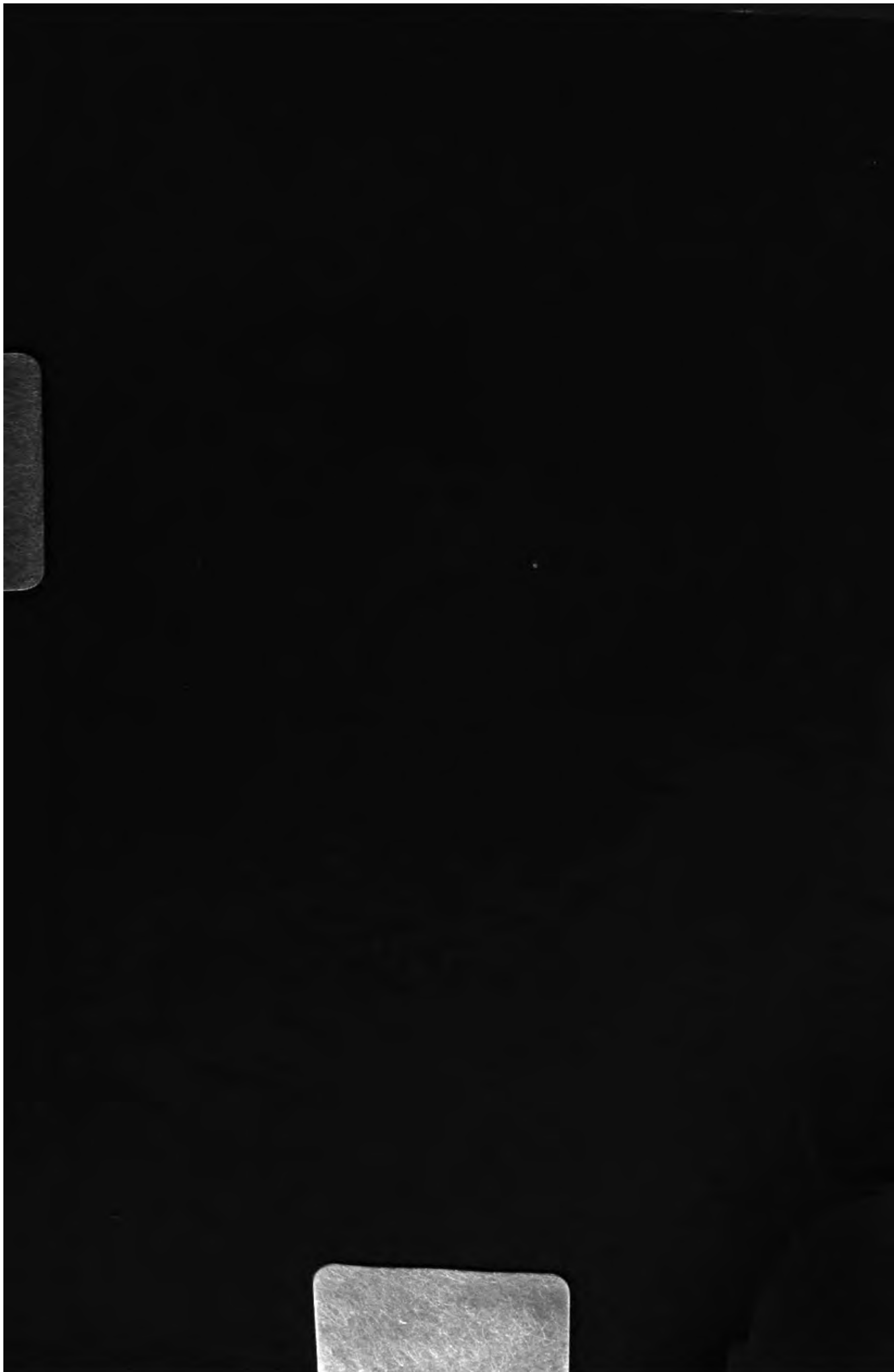
For more information see:

<http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks>



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.

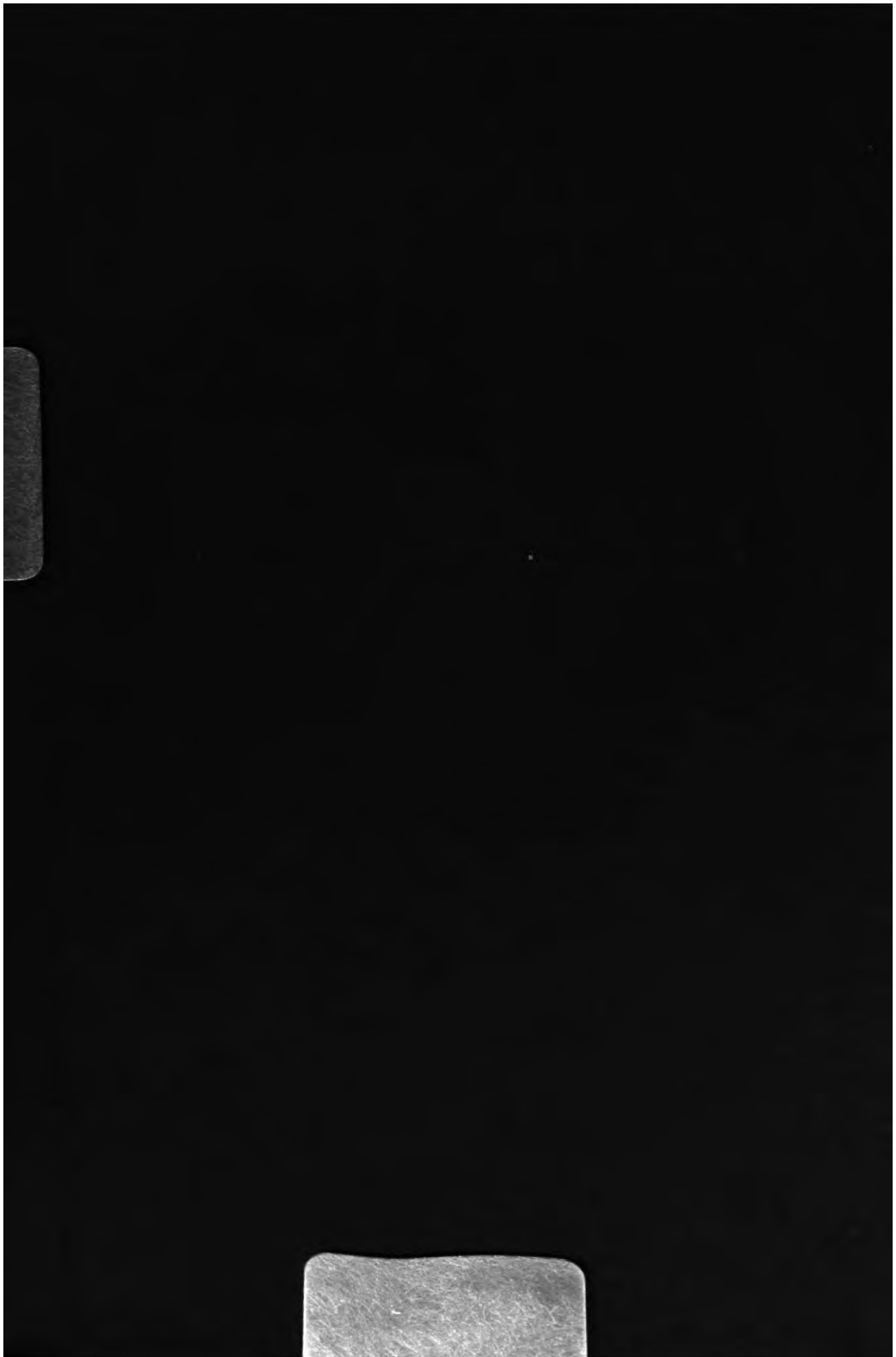






THE WORKS
OF
ROBERT LEIGHTON, D.D.

VOL. III.



The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions. It emphasizes that every entry, no matter how small, should be recorded to ensure the integrity of the financial data. This includes not only sales and purchases but also expenses and income. The document also highlights the need for regular reconciliation of accounts to identify any discrepancies early on.

In addition, the document provides a detailed overview of the accounting cycle, which consists of eight steps: identifying the accounting cycle, analyzing the source documents, journalizing the transactions, posting to the ledger, preparing a trial balance, adjusting the accounts, preparing financial statements, and closing the books. Each step is explained in detail, with examples provided to illustrate the process.

The document also covers the classification of assets and liabilities, as well as the calculation of net worth. It explains how to determine the fair market value of assets and how to properly record them in the accounts. Furthermore, it discusses the importance of understanding the tax implications of various transactions and how to properly record them.

The second part of the document focuses on the preparation of financial statements. It provides a step-by-step guide to creating a balance sheet, an income statement, and a statement of cash flows. Each statement is explained in detail, and the relationship between them is discussed. The document also includes a section on the preparation of a statement of retained earnings, which is used to track the changes in the equity account over time.

In addition, the document discusses the importance of providing a clear and concise explanation of the financial statements to management and other stakeholders. It provides tips on how to present the information in a way that is easy to understand and highlights the key findings of the analysis.

The document also covers the process of closing the books at the end of the accounting period. It explains how to transfer the balances from the temporary accounts to the permanent accounts and how to prepare the closing entries. This process is essential for ensuring that the accounts are ready for the start of the next period.

Finally, the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions and the need for regular reconciliation of accounts. It provides a checklist of items to be reviewed at the end of each period to ensure that all transactions have been properly recorded and that the accounts are in balance.

The document concludes with a summary of the key points discussed and a final reminder of the importance of accuracy and integrity in the accounting process. It emphasizes that the financial statements are a reflection of the company's performance and that they should be prepared with the highest level of care and attention to detail.





THE WORKS
OF
ROBERT LEIGHTON, D.D.

VOL. III.

LONDON: PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

THE WHOLE WORKS
(AS YET RECOVERED)
OF THE
MOST REVEREND FATHER IN GOD
ROBERT LEIGHTON, D.D.

BISHOP OF DUNBLANE
AND
ARCHBISHOP (COMMENDATOR) OF GLASGOW.

CONTAINING
THE CORRECTED TEXT OF THE PIECES PREVIOUSLY PUBLISHED, AND
INCLUDING MANY LETTERS, SERMONS, AND OTHER PIECES NEVER
BEFORE PUBLISHED: THE WHOLE CAREFULLY EDITED AND
FURNISHED WITH ILLUSTRATIVE NOTES AND
WITH INDEXES.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED
A LIFE OF THE AUTHOR AND OF HIS FATHER.

BY WILLIAM WEST, B.A.

INCUMBENT OF S. COLUMBA'S, NAIRN.

IN SIX VOLUMES.—VOLUME III.

LONDON:
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.
1870.

141. i. 272.

A PRACTICAL COMMENTARY
UPON THE
FIRST EPISTLE OF ST. PETER.

BY
ROBERT LEIGHTON,
MINISTER OF NEWBATTLE IN MID-LOTHIAN, AFTERWARDS
ARCHBISHOP OF GLASGOW.

NOW FOR THE FIRST TIME CORRECTLY PRINTED, AND FURNISHED WITH
ILLUSTRATIVE NOTES AND INDEXES.

BY WILLIAM WEST, B.A.

INCUMBENT OF S. COLUMBA'S, NAIRN.

PART I.
CONTAINING THE FIRST TWO CHAPTERS.

LONDON:
LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO.
1870

TO
THE MOST NOBLE
WILLIAM SCHOMBERG ROBERT
MARQUIS OF LOTHIAN,
EARL OF ANCRUM, BARON NEWBOTTLE,
&c. &c.

THIS EDITION OF THE
COMMENTARY ON ST. PETER,

PUBLISHED BY HIS MUNIFICENCE,

Is gratefully Dedicated

BY

THE EDITOR.



CONTENTS

OF

THE COMMENTARY ON ST. PETER.

CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
Section I. verse 1. Character and Scope of the Epistle: its Author and address	2
Sect. II. ver. 2. The Christian State, and the causes of it	9
Sect. III. ver. 3, 4. The Inheritance of Christians; their Title to it; their Assurance of it	32
Sect. IV. ver. 5. The State of Salvation	47
Sect. V. ver. 6. Christian Trials and Temptations, Joys and Sorrows	53
Sect. VI. ver. 7. The worth and excellency of Faith; the usefulness of Temptations in relation to it	62
Sect. VII. ver. 8, 9. Christian Joy and its causes, viz., Faith, Hope, and Love, centering in Christ Jesus	68
Sect. VIII. ver. 10–12. The excellency of the Gospel: its Author, matter, and ministry. The Admiration of the Angels	86
Sect. IX. ver. 13. The Apostle's comfortable Exhortation to his afflicted Brethren. The Christian Pilgrim's equipment, <i>Girded Loins, Sober Watchfulness, and a Perfect Hope</i>	101
Sect. X. ver. 14–16. Exhortation to Holiness	112
Sect. XI. ver. 17. The Exhortation enforced by a consideration of the Fear of God	120
Sect. XII. ver. 18, 19. The Service of Sin, or the Custom of the World. Our Redemption by the Lamb of God	128
Sect. XIII. ver. 20. The purpose, performance, and application of Redemption	135

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Sect. XIV. ver. 21. CHRIST the Object of Faith: His Resurrection and Glory the ground and warrant of it . . .	140
Sect. XV. ver. 22. The Divine Doctrine of Love: its nature and obligation. The Work of Sanctification . . .	142
Sect. XVI. ver. 23. Regeneration: its Seed, the Word of GOD	149
Sect. XVII. ver. 24. The vanity and frailty of the natural life of Man	158
Sect. XVIII. ver. 25. The glory and immortality of the Word of GOD and the Spiritual Life	163

CHAPTER II.

Sect. I. ver. 1, 2. The Word of GOD the Food of the Spiritual Life. The conditions of Spiritual Growth	166
Sect. II. ver. 3. The Goodness of GOD. The character and conditions of Spiritual Taste. They who taste of GOD's Love are made like Him	185
Sect. III. ver. 4, 5. The Spiritual House or Temple of GOD: the Spiritual Priesthood, and their Sacrifices	192
Sect. IV. ver. 6. CHRIST the Foundation Stone. The building on this Foundation, by Faith. The Fixedness of Faith, and the Blessedness of Union with Christ	208
Sect. V. ver. 7, 8. Belief and Unbelief contrasted with reference to the Corner Stone	221
Sect. VI. ver. 9. Christians a Chosen Generation, a Royal Priesthood. Their calling and its end. Spiritual Light and Darkness contrasted	228
Sect. VII. ver. 10. The Blessedness of GOD's People, and the Misery of Aliens	253
Sect. VIII. ver. 11. The Christian Pilgrim: his condition, character, and conduct	263
Sect. IX. ver. 12. Christians must expect Calumny; how to meet it, and turn it to GOD's Glory	273
Sect. X. ver. 13, 14. Obedience to the Civil Powers inseparable from true Religion. The extent and the ground of this Duty	285
Sect. XI. ver. 15, 16. The Will of GOD the Christian's Law and chief Delight. Christian Liberty and its counterfeit	290

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Sect. XII. ver. 17. The Sum of our Duty towards God and Man	295
Sect. XIII. ver. 18-20. The Duty of Servants ; the extent of it ; the right principle of it	310
Sect. XIV. ver. 21-23. Suffering the lot of Christians ; Innocence and Patience their duty. The argument enforced by the Example of Christ	323
Sect. XV. ver. 24. The Sufferings of Christ : their nature and end	335
Sect. XVI. ver. 25. The Wretchedness of our natural condition as lost Sheep : our Blessedness in CHRIST, the Good Shepherd	365

**N.B. The Author's Notes and References are distinguished
by numerals.**

INTRODUCTION.

THIS celebrated Commentary is the substance of a series of Sermons delivered at intervals by the Author during his ministry at Newbattle.

Leighton was presented to the living of Newbattle, or Newbottle as it was then called, by his great friend and patron, William third Earl of Lothian, and was ordained and instituted after the Presbyterian form on December 16, 1641.

These Discourses extend over the whole period of his incumbency (1642-1653), and contain many allusions to the Sword, Famine, Pestilence, and other miseries of that eventful and troubled time. They were delivered in the old parish Kirk, some remains of which still exist within the precincts of Newbattle Abbey. The ancient Manse in which they were composed forms part of the larger structure now in use.

The first part of the Commentary was published in a quarto volume at York in 1693; the second part, also in quarto, was published at London in 1694.

This inestimable Commentary has hitherto shared the fate of the Author's other works, having been marred and mutilated, misread and misunderstood, disfigured and obscured in every possible way, and to an inconceivable extent. It would almost seem as if the

Author's dying charge to have his works destroyed had haunted every impression of them. The Editor humbly trusts that the spell is now broken.

In the Appendix to LEIGHTON'S Life will be found the Prefaces of Dr. Fall and Dr. Doddridge, some critical remarks on the Commentary, and other necessary matter. Here it may suffice to consider the general scope and spirit of the work.

Leighton seems to have been especially attracted to St. Peter's Epistle because addressed to the people of GOD in exile and affliction, and designed 'to establish them in believing, to direct them in doing, and to comfort them in suffering.' He regarded it as a complete Pilgrim's Guide, containing 'a brief yet very clear summary both of the consolations and instructions needful for the encouragement and direction of a Christian in his journey to Heaven, elevating his thoughts and desires to that Happiness, and strengthening him against all opposition in the way, both that of corruption within, and temptations and afflictions without.'

The Divine Spirit which inspired the Apostle breathes throughout the Commentary, and what has been said of the Epistle applies to this exquisite expansion of it, which may well be styled 'Theologia Viatorum,' a Practical Manual for Pilgrims.

The following passages, selected from various writers, give the key-note of the Commentary, and may serve as a prelude.

The first is from S. Bernard's Sermon on *The Pilgrim, the Dead, and the Crucified*:—

Blessed are they who live as strangers and pilgrims in this present evil world, keeping themselves unspotted by it. *For*

here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. Wherefore, as St. Peter exhorts, let us, *as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts which war against the soul.* The pilgrim keeps to the king's highway, turning aside neither to the right hand nor to the left. If he see men engaged in a broil, or a marriage feast, or a dance, or in anything whatever, he heeds it not, but passes on, because he is a pilgrim, and these things concern him not. He sighs for his native land, and thither he directs his steps: having food and raiment, he is therewith content, and cares not to be burdened with other things. Blessed indeed is he who thus acknowledges and bewails his banishment, saying to the Lord, with David, *For I am a stranger with Thee and a sojourner, as all my fathers were.*

This is indeed a great attainment, but there is a higher degree still. For a pilgrim, though he mingle not with the citizens of the world, yet sometimes takes pleasure in seeing what is going on, or in hearing it from others, or in relating what he himself has seen; and although he be not altogether kept back by these and such like things, yet he is delayed and retarded, while, less mindful of his home, he abates in the fervour of his longing, and slackens his speed. Nay, he may become so wholly taken up with these pleasures, as not only to loiter on the way, but remain altogether behind, and never reach his journey's end.

Who, then, is more estranged from the affairs of the world than a pilgrim? They truly to whom the Apostle says, *Ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in GOD.* For a pilgrim may easily be over-anxious about his provision for the way, delayed in searching for it, or overburdened in carrying it; but a dead man feels no want, not even that of sepulture. He hears men reviling him as though they praised him, and flattering him as though backbiting; nay rather, he hears not at all, for he is dead. Happy beyond measure is that death which keeps him thus unspotted, yea, which wholly estranges him from the world! But it must needs be that Christ lives in him who lives not in himself. For this is what the Apostle says, *I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me; q. d., to all other things I am wholly dead, I feel not, I heed not, I care not; but whatever is of Christ finds me alive and ready.*

Ascending a step higher, we hear the same Apostle, who was caught up into the third Heaven, not glorying in himself, but saying, *GOD forbid that I should glory save in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.* He says not merely *dead* to the world, but *crucified*, which is an ignominious kind of death; I to it, and it to me. All that the world loves is to me a cross; fleshly pleasures, honours, riches, and the empty praises of men. But what the world regards as a cross, to that I am attached, to that I cling, that I embrace with all my heart. Is not this greater than the second and the first step? A pilgrim, if he be prudent and not forgetful of his pilgrimage, advances on his way, though with difficulty. A dead man despises alike the smooth and the rough, the frowns and the smiles of this world. But he that has been caught up into the third Heaven, regards as a cross all that the world clings to, and cleaves to all that the world deems a cross. Let us then consider well, each of us, in which grade we severally stand, and strive to advance from day to day, *going from strength to strength till we see the GOD of Gods in Zion.**

The next extract is from some Sermons on Heb. xi. 13, by Dr. Sibbes, a writer much esteemed by Leighton:—

This chapter is a little Book of Martyrs. It discovers the life and death of the holy Patriarchs, and by what means GOD's children are brought into possession of that that they have an interest and right unto upon earth. It is by faith. By faith we do and suffer all that we do and suffer, all that GOD has ordained us to go through, till He have brought us and invested us to Heaven which is prepared for us.

The blessed Patriarchs 'received not the promises, but, having seen them afar off, they were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on earth.' Theirs was a real confession, they dis-

* S. Bern. in Quadragesima Serm. vii. *De Peregrino, Mortuo, et Crucifixo.* The view of Christian life in this Sermon is completely monastic, that in the Commentary is not; but the passage is here

given as being one that Leighton had frequently in mind both in this work and elsewhere. Cf. Leighton's *Works*, vol. ii. p. 41.

covered by their carriage that they were strangers: their course spake louder than their words. Those that in the whole course of their life show a weaned affection to earthly things, though they talk not gloriously, as some idle persons do in a bravery, 'We are but strangers here, and we must be gone,' &c.; though they do not speak thus as some do that never think so; yet, notwithstanding, their carriage bewrays it: their course, and company, and conversation show that indeed they 'confess themselves Strangers and Pilgrims.'

There is little difference between the two words: 'Strangers' shows our absence from home, that we are in another country; and 'Pilgrims' shows our carriage to our country, our going home. They confessed that they were not at home, but were going toward their Home, towards Heaven, to that City whose builder and maker is GOD. In regard of Heaven we are strangers on earth, and not mere strangers that rest and do nothing, but such strangers as are passing home towards their country, *Strangers and Pilgrims*.

It is the disposition of him that hath truly interest in better things (though but in faith and hope) to be a stranger and a pilgrim in regard of all things here below. For where the eyes of the understanding are opened, and a man is persuaded, there is an embracing of better things, as our proper good things; there is a considering of all other things as things that do not belong to us: in a manner we are strangers. When faith apprehends Christ, and Heaven, and happiness to be our own, and our country to be above, at the same time it is to be supposed, and necessarily follows, that we are strangers.

Wherever a Christian is, if it be upon any place on earth, he is a stranger and a pilgrim. As Austin saith very well, 'Every man is a stranger in his own house.' No condition is exempted. David and the greatest kings in the world have confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims. All Christians from the highest to the meanest are strangers upon earth.

And it must needs be so, for the Head of Christians was a stranger. His love drew Him from Heaven to earth, and made Him a stranger. He came unto His own, and His own knew Him not. He conversed with us here, and was among us as a stranger. He was talking alway of His Father's house,

and of the Kingdom of Heaven. And all His work was to draw men from earth to Heaven. Now we must be conformable to Him—we must be strangers as He was.

But you will say, Wicked men are strangers and pilgrims too? I answer, They are indeed so, for in regard of the shortness of their lives, and the uncertainty of the things they enjoy—for they outlive all their happiness here—they are snatched hence before they be aware, therefore they are but travellers here; but they go from ill to worse. Yet in regard of their affections they are no strangers, but account themselves at home, from a spirit of infidelity and pride and earthliness. Therefore they are called ‘men of the earth,’ and ‘those that dwell on the earth,’ in Rev. iii. 10, because they look no further than the earth, and here they root and fix their affections. They do not fix their affections on the things above; they care not for them, and esteem them not. Therefore they are called ‘the world,’ because they love nothing but the world; they are, as it were, changed into the things they love; they are earth, as the Prophet saith, ‘O Earth, Earth,’ &c. Jer. xxii. 29. They account themselves at home here, and here they plant themselves; therefore, though in some sense they be strangers, yet not in that sense that the Children of GOD are.

Every Christian is born from above, and born to things above, and he is a stranger here. All his course till he come to the possession of his inheritance in Heaven is nothing but a travelling. He never sits down, but is always in motion and passage. Every good work is a step of his way; he takes degrees from better to better, from grace to grace, from knowledge to knowledge, till he come to his home.

Let us make a trial of ourselves, how our affections stand to these things, whether our hearts be weaned from earthly things. Undoubtedly, if we have embraced Christ, we shall use the world as though we used it not. We shall be transformed into the image of Christ; we shall have the same mind that He had.

A stranger that is travelling homeward is *content* with his present condition, for he knows he shall have better at home. In Jer. xlv. 4, GOD by Jeremiah speaks to Baruch, a good man, ‘I will destroy all these things, and dost thou seek great

things for thyself?' If a Christian did consider—I am going to Heaven, to GOD, what do I, seeking great things here, which GOD will destroy? What will become of Heaven and Earth and all things here ere long? and what will become of me ere long? I shall be turned to earth, and shall I seek great things here upon earth? Shall I not be content with my portion? He that is a traveller, when he comes to his inn, if perhaps things be not so clean, if his usage be not so good, he thinks it but a night and away; it is no great matter. He knows he shall have better usage when he comes home.

So he will be *patient* if he meet with unkind usage: he will not stand quarrelling by the way, and so hinder himself in his journey; he will be patient in the injuries and wrongs of this life. Thus faith in Christ makes him that is a stranger here content and patient. He whose soul hath embraced Christ is contented with anything; anything is sufficient to his soul that is filled with better things. Nothing will content a covetous earthly man, a man of earth. Such men think themselves at home; they make a league with hell and death. The men of the world think they shall live here alway; but a Christian that embraceth a better life with Christ in happiness to come, he knows he shall not be here long. He is here but a stranger, and shall shortly be at home, and therefore he is contented with anything.

Therefore let us do as travellers, often think of home, and what is at home for us; and that will make us, when any comfort would draw us out of our way, to think, Oh, these are good comforts, but this is not my home. I have better at home than this, and this will stay me from home. Therefore the Cross is necessary for travellers to embitter their comforts, that they may know they are not at home.*

The next extract is from a Sermon on 1 Peter ii. 11, by the Rev. W. Jones, of Nayland:—

We are strangers and pilgrims in this world, and reason requires that we should behave like what we are, and not act out of character. The short stay we make in this world, proves to every reasonable mind that this cannot be our home.

* *Faith Triumphant*, by Richard Sibbes, D.D. 4to. Lond. 1639.

Our life is a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth like a flying cloud scattered by the wind; it is like a blade of grass, which groweth up green in the morning, and is cut down and withered by the evening: nay, St. Paul says, it is 'but for a moment;' and certainly, if compared with the duration of Eternity (of which it is no part), it is scarcely so much as a moment. The rapid succession of things, the departure of one generation, and the sudden rising up of another, reduces the appearance of individuals to a trifling circumstance. The far greater number pass through life, and make no more impression upon us than the face of an unknown traveller as he passes by us upon the road. We see him, and he is gone, and another succeeds, of whom we take as little notice.

But besides the shortness of our abode upon earth, some other considerations make it equally evident that we are not at home. Our habitation, our inheritance, our friends, are all in another place: where these are, there must be our home; and so long as we are absent from them, we are but as visitors and strangers. Here, the Scripture tells us, we have no abiding city, and comforts us at the same time with the hope of 'a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God;' and, as His work, will endure for ever.

As we have no home, so neither have we any inheritance here; for by the very terms of our baptism, we are as men who give up their title, and become dead to the world, that we may live with Christ. His immortality is our inheritance; we are 'heirs according to the hope of eternal life.' The instrument of conveyance is signed and sealed, but till the resurrection of the just there can be no actual possession.

Our friends also are in that country to which we are travelling. To the Christian considered as such, the world hath never been, nor will its principles ever suffer it to be, a friend. The friend of the Christian is Christ, whom the Jews in scorn called the friend of publicans and sinners. The blessed angels are friends to those that love GOD; the saints departed are friends to those who are passing through the trials which they have happily escaped; the prophets and evangelists are friends to those who are enlightened by their writings. We are brought to a communion with these, and are intimately related to them, from the time that we are made Christians. 'Ye are come

(saith the Apostle) to Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living GOD, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the first born, which are written in heaven, and to GOD the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, and to Jesus the Mediator of the New Covenant.' To this great society we are related; our friends are all the members of it, our home is the heavenly Jerusalem, and the immortality of Christ is our inheritance.

To this dwelling, these friends, this inheritance we are travelling; this world is the road we pass through; this life is the time of our journey. It is with respect to this journey that the Apostle calls us *pilgrims* as well as *strangers*. We are strangers because we are absent from home, and pilgrims because we are travelling towards it.

If men would but consider that these are the real circumstances of their life; that they are absent from all that is truly valuable, and hastening forward to such enjoyments as will engage all the affections, and fill all the powers of the understanding; how easy would it be to persuade them not to search any longer for substance in shadows, nor for happiness in the miseries of vice. The Apostle, knowing this, begins with reminding his Christian brethren of their present pilgrimage. Let them but allow and remember this doctrine of their *Pilgrimage*, and all the inferences from it are too plain to be avoided.

Therefore, let me beseech you, dearly beloved, now we have considered these things, to remember that you are strangers and pilgrims, and to abstain from fleshly lusts, because they war against the soul, and if they are not restrained will certainly destroy it.

This world is not the place of our abode; but we are hastening to a better through a way that is beset with enemies. We are to wrestle not only against flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers, who use our own passions as the instruments of our ruin; and he who thus striveth for the mastery should be temperate in all things. Be assured of this, that the law of GOD lays no restraint upon us, but for the avoiding of real evils, or for the obtaining of some greater good. The soldier is commanded to be vigilant, not

for the sake of vigilance, but for the rewards of victory, and we are led to abstain, not that we may be mortified and disappointed, but that we may find that happiness for which we were made; and by renouncing what is deceitful, unsatisfactory, transient, and destructive, we may obtain full and everlasting enjoyment in the presence of GOD.*

One of Dr. Newman's most striking Sermons is that on Phil. iv. 4, in which he sketches with a master's hand the mind of a Christian Pilgrim, and sums it up in one word, EQUANIMITY. No extract can do justice to this finished picture, which should be contemplated as a whole; but the following passage is given here both as being very appropriate to our present purpose, and as being likely to attract the attention of readers not already acquainted with it:—

Let us consider more particularly what is this state of mind, and what the grounds of it. These seem to be as follows:—The Lord is at hand; this is not your rest; this is not your abiding place. Act then as persons who are in a dwelling not their own; who are not in their own home; who have not their own goods and furniture about them; who accordingly make shift and put up with anything that comes to hand, and do not make a point of things being the best of their kind. 'But this I say, brethren, the time is short.' What matters it what we eat, what we drink, how we are clothed, where we lodge, what is thought of us, what becomes of us, since we are not at home? It is felt every day, as regards this world, that when we leave home for awhile, we are unsettled. This, then, is the kind of feeling which a belief in Christ's coming will create within us. It is not worth while establishing ourselves here; it is not worth while spending thought on such an object. We should hardly have got settled when we shall have to move.

This being apparently the general drift of the passage, let us enter into the particular portions of it.

I. 'Be careful for nothing,' he says, or as St. Peter,

* *Posthumous Sermons*, Lond. 1830.

‘ casting all your care upon Him,’ or as He Himself, ‘ Take no thought ’ or care for the morrow, for the morrow will take thought for the things of itself.’ This of course is the state of mind which is directly consequent on the belief that ‘ the Lord is at hand.’ Who would care for any loss or gain to-day, if he knew for certain that Christ would show Himself to-morrow? No one. Well, then, the true Christian feels as he would feel, did he know for certain that Christ would be here to-morrow. For he knows for certain that at least Christ will come to him when he dies ; and faith anticipates his death, and makes it just as if that distant day, if it *be* distant, were past and over. One time or another Christ will come, for certain ; and when He once *has* come, it matters not what length of time there was before He came ; however long that period may be, it has an end. Judgment is coming, whether it comes sooner or later, and the Christian realises that it is coming ; that is, time does not enter into his calculation, or interfere with his view of things. When men expect to live out their plans and projects, then they care for them ; when they know they will come to nought, they give them over, or become indifferent to them.

So, again, is it with all forebodings, anxieties, mortifications, griefs, resentments of this world. ‘ The time is short.’ It has sometimes been well suggested as a mode of calming the mind when set upon an object, or much vexed or angered at some occurrence, What will you feel about all this a year hence? It is very plain that matters which agitate us most extremely now, will then interest us not at all ; that objects about which we have intense hope and fear now, will then be to us nothing more than things which happen at the other end of the earth. So will it be with all human hopes, fears, pleasures, pains, jealousies, disappointments, successes, when the last day is come. They will have no life in them ; they will be as the faded flowers of a banquet, which do but mock us. Or when we lie on the bed of death, what will it avail us to have been rich, or great, or fortunate, or honoured, or influential? All things will then be vanity. Well, what this world will be understood by all to be then, such is it felt to be by the Christian now. He looks at things as he then will look on them, with an uninterested and dispassionate eye, and

is neither pained much nor pleased much at the accidents of life, because they are accidents. *

To the above may be appended a few sentences from Leighton's favourite book, the 'Imitation of Christ':—

Sic obsecrat beatus Apostolus Petrus ut tanquam *advenas et peregrinos* in hoc mundo se contineant Christi fideles. III. 53.

Si vis debite stare et proficere, teneas te tanquam exulem et peregrinum super terram. I. 17.

Quid hoc vel illud ad te? Tu ME sequere. III. 24.

Non habes hic manentem civitatem, et ubicumque fueris extraneus es et peregrinus, nec requiem aliquando habebis, nisi Christo intime fueris unitus.

Quid hic circumspicis, cum iste non sit locus tuæ requietionis?

In cœlestibus debet esse habitatio tua et sicut in transitu cuncta sunt aspicienda.

Transeunt omnia, et tu cum eis pariter.

Vide, ut non hæreas, ne capiaris, et pereas. II. 1.

O Jesu, splendor æternæ gloriæ, solamen peregrinationis animæ meæ, apud Te est os meum sine voce, et silentium meum loquitur tibi. III. 21.

Confirma me, Deus, per gratiam Sancti Spiritus; da mihi virtutem corroborari in interiori homine, et cor meum ab omni inutili sollicitudine et angore evacuare, nec variis desideriis trahi cujuscumque rei vilis aut pretiosæ: sed omnia inspicere sicut transeuntia, et me pariter cum illis transiturum, quia nihil permanens sub sole, quia omnia vanitas et afflictio spiritus. O, quam sapiens qui ita considerat.

Da mihi, Domine, cœlestem sapientiam, ut discam Te super omnia quærere et invenire, super omnia sapere et diligere, et cætera, secundum ordinem sapientiæ Tuæ, prout sunt, intelligere.

Da prudenter declinare blandientem et patienter ferre adversantem, quia hæc magna sapientia, omni vento non moveri verborum, nec aurem male blandienti præbere: sic enim incepta pergitur via secure. III. 27.

* *Parochial Sermons for the Winter Quarter*, London, 1842.

We shall close our Pilgrim's Breviary with the excellent version from the German, partly quoted at p. 329, of

THE PILGRIM'S SONG.

Uncomplaining, tho' with care grown hoary,
I desire to wear no Crown of glory
Where my Saviour wore a Crown of Thorn;
Not in paths of roses would I dally,
Where my Saviour trod the gloomy valley,
Where He suffered bitter pain and scorn.

Lord, send forth thy Light and Truth to lead me
In the way wherein Thy saints precede me,
With Thy Holy Spirit for my Guide;
Let me choose the path of self-denial,
Shunning no sharp cross or bitter trial
Which my Saviour's steps have sanctified.

Give me, Thou, who art the soul's renewer,
Stedfast Faith which day by day grows truer;
Kindle Love, the fruit of Faith, in me—
Love which puts the soul in active motion;
Love which fills the heart with true devotion,
And which leads me thro' the world to Thee.

Many a painful step must be ascended,
Ere my weary Pilgrimage is ended,
And in Heaven I see Thee face to face:
O then reach Thy Hand, dear Lord, to raise me,
For alas! the giddy height dismays me;
Guide, uphold me, with Thine Arm of Grace!

On the wide world's ocean rudely driven,
Let me gaze upon Thine own bright Heaven,
The sweet Haven where I long to be;
Give me now the comfort of possessing
What I value as the highest blessing,
Perfect Peace thro' stedfast Faith in Thee!

Here I am, a sojourner and stranger,
Worn with hardship and exposed to danger,
Like a Pilgrim with my staff in hand;
With the Cross upon my breast I wander
To the promised Canaan which lies yonder,
My beloved and longed-for Fatherland!

W W

THE PARSONAGE, NAILN,
Advent, 1869.

A

PRACTICAL COMMENTARY

UPON THE

FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL

OF

S T. P E T E R.*

CHAPTER I. VERSE 1.

Peter, an Apostle of JESUS CHRIST, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia.

THE GRACE OF GOD in the heart of man is a tender plant in a strange, unkindly soil; and therefore cannot well prosper and grow without much care and pains, and that of a skilful hand, and that hath the art of cherishing it: for this end hath GOD given the constant ministry of the word to His Church, not only for the first work of conversion, but also for confirming and increasing of His grace in the hearts of His children.

And though the extraordinary ministers of the Gospel, the Apostles, had principally the former for their charge—the converting of unbelievers, Jews and Gentiles, and so the planting of churches, to be after kept, and watered by others (as the Apostle intimates, 1 Cor. iii. 6); yet did they not neglect the other work of strengthening the grace of GOD begun in the new converts of those times, both by revisiting them, and exhorting them in person, as they could, and by the supply of their writing to them when absent.

* This Commentary was delivered in the form of Sermons or Expository Lectures at intervals during the author's ministry at Newbattle. It was commenced probably in 1642, and the half of it was written before the beginning of 1645. It appears to have been completed in 1653.

And the benefit of this extends (not by accident, but by the purpose and good providence of God) to the Church of God in all succeeding ages.

This excellent Epistle (full of evangelical doctrine and apostolical authority) is a brief, and yet very clear summary both of the consolations and instructions needful for the encouragement and direction of a Christian in his journey to Heaven, elevating his thoughts and desires to that happiness, and strengthening him against all opposition in the way, both that of corruption within, and temptations and afflictions from without.

The heads of doctrine contained in it are many, but the main that are most insisted on are these three, *Faith*, *Obedience*, and *Patience*; to establish them in believing, to direct them in doing, and to comfort them in suffering. And because the first is the ground-work and support of the other two, this *first chapter* is much occupied with that, persuading them of the truth of that mystery which they had received and did believe, viz., their redemption and salvation by Christ Jesus; that inheritance of immortality bought by His blood for them; and the evidence and stability of their right and title to it.

And then he uses this belief, this assurance of the glory to come, as the great persuasive to the other two, both to holy obedience, and constant patience, since nothing can be too much either to forego or undergo, either to do or to suffer, for the attainment of that blessed state.

And as, from the consideration of that object and matter of the hope of believers, he encourages to patience, and exhorteth to holiness in this chapter in general, so, in the following chapters, he expresses more particularly both the universal and special duties of Christians, both in doing and suffering, often setting before those to whom he wrote, the matchless example of the Lord Jesus, and the greatness of their engagement to follow Him.

In the first two verses, we have the *Inscription* and *Salutation*, in the usual style of the apostolic Epistles.

The *Inscription* hath the *author* and the *address*,—from whom, and to whom. The *author* of this *Epistle* is designated by his *name*—PETER, and his *calling*—an APOSTLE.

We shall not insist upon his name, that it was imposed by

Christ, or what is its signification; this the Evangelists teach us, John i. 42; Matt. xvi. 18.

By that which is spoken of him in divers passages of the Gospel, he is very remarkable amongst the Apostles, both for his graces and his failings; eminent in zeal and courage, and yet stumbling oft in his forwardness, and once grossly falling. And these by the providence of GOD being recorded in Scripture, give a check to the excess of Rome's conceit concerning this Apostle. Their extolling and exalting him above the rest, is not for his cause, much less to the honour of his Lord and Master Jesus Christ, for He is injured and dishonoured by it; but it is in favour of themselves. As Alexander distinguished his two friends,* that the one was a friend of *Alexander*, the other a friend of the *king*; the preferment which they give this Apostle is not in good-will to Peter, but in the desire of *primacy*.† But whatsoever he was, they would be much in pain to prove Rome's right to it by succession. And if ever it had any such right, we may confidently say it has forfeited it long ago, by departing from St. Peter's footsteps, and from his faith, and retaining too much those things wherein he was faulty, namely:

His unwillingness to hear of, and consent to, Christ's sufferings,—his *Master, spare thyself*, or, *Far be it from thee* ‡—in those they are like him; for thus they would disburden and exempt the church from the cross, from the real cross of afflictions, and, instead of that, have nothing but painted, or carved, or gilded crosses; these they are content to embrace, and worship too, but cannot endure to hear of the other. Instead of the cross of affliction, they make the *crown* or *mitre* the badge of their Church, and will have it known by prosperity, and outward pomp; and so turn the Church militant into the Church triumphant, not considering that it is Babylon's voice, not the Church's, *I sit as a queen, and shall see no sorrow*. Rev. xviii. 7.

* Hephæstion and Craterus.

† Coleridge observes: 'The real ground of the priority of the Roman See was that Rome, for the first three or perhaps four centuries, was the metropolis of the Christian world. Afterwards, for the very same reason, the Patriarch of New Rome or Constantinople claimed it; and never ceased to

assert at least a co-equality. Had the Apostolic foundation been the cause, Jerusalem and Antioch must have had priority; not to add that the Roman Church was not founded by either Paul or Peter, as is evident from the Epistle to the Romans.'

‡ Ἰλεός σοι Κύριε! S. Mat. xvi. 22.

Again, they are like him in his saying on the Mount at Christ's Transfiguration, when he knew not what he said, *It is good to be here*:* so they have little of the true glory of Christ, but the false glory of that monarchy on their seven hills: *It is good to be here*, say they.†

Again, in their undue striking with the sword, not the enemies, as he, but the faithful friends and servants of Jesus Christ. But to proceed.

We see here St. Peter's office or title,—*an Apostle*; not *chief bishop*. Some in their glossing have been so impudent as to add that beside the text; though in chap. v. ver. 4 he gives that title to Christ alone, and to himself only *fellow elder*; and here, not *prince of the Apostles*, but *an Apostle*, restored and re-established after his fall, by repentance, and by Christ Himself after His own death and resurrection. (See John xxi.) Thus we have in our Apostle a singular instance of human frailty on the one side, and of the sweetness of divine grace on the other. Free and rich grace it is, indeed, that forgives and swallows up multitudes of sins, of the greatest sins, not only sins before conversion, as to St. Paul, but foul offences committed after conversion, as to David, and to this Apostle; not only once raising them from the dead, but when they fall, stretching out the same hand, and raising them again, and restoring them to their station, and comforting them in it by His *free Spirit*, as David prays;‡ not only to cleanse polluted clay, but to work it into vessels of

* Chrysostom observes: 'Peter yet fears for Christ, but after his rebuke he dares not again say, *Pity thyself, Lord*, but suggests the same covertly, under other guise. He sought to remain here for ever, therefore he proposes to *make here three tabernacles*. For he concluded if he should do this, Christ would not go up to Jerusalem to die, for he knew that there the Scribes laid

wait for him.' Theophylact makes the same comment. The throne of David so filled his mind that he could not endure to think of the cross, but desired that the kingdom of the elect should be set up on earth, as Remigius observes. See the *Catena Aurea* on the Gospels, and Bp. Hall on the Transfiguration, pt. 2.

† Sed quæ de Septem totum circumspicit orbem
Montibus imperii ROMA, Deumque locus.—Ovid. *Trist.* i. 5.

'Great and glorious ROME, queen of the earth,
With towers and temples proudly elevate
On Seven small Hills.'—*Par. Reg.*

S. John, in the Apocalypse, describes imperial city seated on her Seven Hills Rome by some of her most distinctive features, and clearly sets before us the in the wilderness of the Campagna.—*Rev.* xvii. 4, 9, 18.

‡ Ps. li. 12.

honour, yea, of the most defiled clay to make the most refined vessels, not vessels of honour of the lowest sort, but for the highest and most honourable services, vessels to bear His own precious name to the nations; making the most unworthy and the most unfit, fit by His grace to be His messengers.

Of Jesus Christ.] Both as the beginning and the end of his apostleship, as Christ is called *Alpha* and *Omega* (Rev. xxii. 13); chosen and called by Him, and called to this—to preach Him, and salvation wrought by Him.

Apostle of Jesus Christ.] Sent by Him, and the message no other than His name, to make that known. And what this apostleship was *then*, after some extraordinary way befitting these first times of the Gospel, the ministry of the word in ordinary is *now*, and therefore an employment of more difficulty and excellency than is usually conceived by many, not only of those who look upon it, but even of those who are exercised in it;—to be ambassadors for the greatest of kings, and upon no mean employment, that great treaty of peace and reconcilement betwixt Him and mankind. See 2 Cor. v. 20.

This Epistle is directed to the *Elect*, who are described here, by their *temporal* and by their *spiritual* conditions. The one hath very much dignity and comfort in it; the other hath neither, but rather the contrary of both; and therefore the Apostle's intent being their comfort, he mentions the one but in passing, to signify to whom particularly he sent his Epistle; but the other is that which he would have their thoughts dwell upon, and therefore he prosecutes it in his following discourse. And if we look to the order of the words, their temporal condition is but interjected; for it is said, *To the Elect*, first, and then, *To the strangers scattered*, &c. And he would have this as it were drowned in the other—*according to the foreknowledge of God the Father*.

That those dispersed strangers who dwelt in the countries here named were Jews, appears if we look to the foregoing Epistle, where the same word is used, and expressly appropriated to the Jews. St. James i. 1. St. Peter in Gal. ii. is called *an Apostle of the circumcision*, as exercising his apostleship most towards them; and there is in some passages of this Epistle somewhat which, though belonging to all Christians,

yet hath, in the strain and way of expression, a particular fitness to the believing Jews, as being particularly verified in them, which was spoken of their nation, chap. ii. ver. 9, 10.

Some argue from the name, Strangers, that the Gentiles are here meant, which seems not to be; for proselyte Gentiles were indeed called strangers in Jerusalem, and by the Jews; but were not the Jews strangers in these places—Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia?—Not strangers dwelling together in a prosperous flourishing condition, as a well-planted colony, but *strangers of the dispersion*, scattered to and fro. Their dispersion was partly occasioned, first by the Assyrian captivity, and after that by the Babylonish, and by the invasion of the Romans; and it might be in these very times increased by the believing Jews flying from the hatred and persecution raised against them at home.

The places here mentioned, through which they were dispersed, are all in Asia. So Asia here, is Asia the *lesser*. Where it is to be observed, that some of those who heard St. Peter, Acts ii. 9, are said to be of those regions. And if any of those then converted were amongst these dispersed, the comfort was no doubt the more grateful from the hand of the same Apostle by whom they were first converted; but this is only conjecture. Though divine truths are to be received equally from every minister alike, yet it must be acknowledged, that there is something (we know not what to call it) which causes a more acceptable reception of those who at first were the means of bringing men to GOD, than of others; like the opinion some have of physicians whom they love.

The Apostle comforts these strangers of this dispersion, by the spiritual union which they obtained by *effectual calling*:* and so calls off their eyes from their outward, dispersed, and despised condition, to look above that, as high as the spring of their happiness, the *free love* and *election* of GOD. *Scattered* in the countries, and yet gathered in GOD'S election, chosen or picked out; strangers to men amongst whom they dwelt,

* Mark how the author, taking the Calvinistic scheme for Gospel, *paves his way* by introducing technical terms which involve its fundamental principles. *Effectual calling* is a phrase which has no equivalent in Scripture generally, or in S. Peter's address in

which it is here assumed to be contained. The Apostle addresses *all* the Christians to whom he writes as *elect, sanctified, &c.*; but *effectual calling* involves the Calvinistic distinction of Elect and non-Elect among the members of Christ's visible Church.

but *known* and *foreknown* to GOD; removed from their own country to which men have naturally an unalterable affection, but made *heirs* of a *better* (as follows, ver. 3, 4); and having within them the evidence both of eternal election and of that expected salvation, the *spirit of holiness* (ver. 2). At the best, a Christian is but a stranger here, set him where you will, as our Apostle teacheth after; and it is his privilege that he is so; and when he thinks not so, he forgets and disparages himself; he descends far below his quality, when he is much taken with anything in this place of his exile.

But this is the wisdom of a Christian, when he can solace himself against the meanness of his outward condition, and any kind of discomfort attending it, with the comfortable assurance of the love of GOD, that He hath called him to holiness, given him some measure of it, and an endeavour after more; and by this may he conclude, that He hath ordained him unto salvation. If either he is a stranger where he lives, or as a stranger deserted of his friends, and very near stripped of all outward comforts, yet may he rejoice in this, that the eternal unchangeable love of GOD, which is from everlasting to everlasting, is sealed to his soul. And O what will it avail a man to be compassed about with the favour of the world, to sit unmolested in his own home and possessions, and to have them very great and pleasant, to be well monied, and landed, and befriended, and yet estranged and severed from GOD, not having any token of His special love?

To the Elect.] The Apostle here denominates *all* the Christians to whom he writes, by the condition of true believers, calling them *Elect* and *Sanctified*, &c.; and the Apostle St. Paul writes in the same style in his Epistles to the churches.* Not that all in these churches were such in-

* 'I cannot but think,' says Abp. Whately, 'that an attentive examination of the Old Testament will go far towards furnishing a key to the true meaning of S. Paul's and the other apostolic Epistles.' God is no respecter of persons; but in every nation he that feareth Him and worketh righteousness is accepted with Him, as Job the Edomite, Ruth the Moabitess, &c. At the same time God *arbitrarily* (i.e. for wise reasons not known to us) elects a certain number of persons to the enjoyment of peculiar

privileges. The Divine election of the Hebrew people under the old dispensation was thus *arbitrary*, as Moses clearly states, Deut. ix. 4-6; but it was an election of *the whole nation* without any exception, and it was an election not absolute and final, but probationary and conditional: they were all brought out of Egypt, delivered from their enemies, placed in a state of salvation, and put on the road to the Promised Land. In the same way: 'No reason that we know of can be assigned why we our-

deed, but because they professed to be such, and by that their profession and calling as Christians, they were obliged to be such; and as many of them as were in any measure true to that their calling and profession were really such. Besides, it would seem not unworthy of consideration, that in all probability there would be fewer false Christians, and the number of true believers would be usually greater, in the churches in those primitive times, than now in the best reformed churches: because there could not then be many of them that were from their infancy bred in the Christian faith, but for the greatest part were such as, being of years of discretion, were, by the hearing of the Gospel, converted from Paganism and Judaism to the Christian religion first, and made a deliberate choice of it; to which there were at that time no great outward encouragements, and therefore the less danger of multitudes of hypocrites, which, as vermin in summer, breed most in the time of the Church's prosperity. At the same time, though no nation or kingdom had then universally received the faith, but rather hated and persecuted it, yet, were there even then amongst them, as the writings of the Apostles testify, false brethren, and inordinate walkers, and men of corrupt minds, earthly-minded, and led with a spirit of envy and contention and vain-glory.

However, the question that is moved concerning the necessary qualifications of all the members of a true visible church, can no way (as I conceive) be decided from the inscriptions of

selves in this country should have received the light of the Gospel, while many other regions of the earth remain in the darkness of idolatry. The calling and selection of us and of other Christians to the knowledge of the true God seems as arbitrary as that of the Israelites. And as this promise belonged not to *some* only, but to *every one* of that nation, whether he chose to avail himself of it, or to convert it into a heavy curse by his neglect of it; so we may conclude that *every* Christian is called and elected to the Christian privileges, just as every Jew was to his; but that it rests with us to use or abuse the advantage. The Jews were not chosen to enjoy God's favour and to enter into the Promised Land *absolutely*, but on condition of their obedience; and as

many as were rebellious perished in the wilderness. So also, we may conclude, no Christian is elected to eternal salvation *absolutely*, but only on condition of being a faithful follower of Christ.'

'It is very remarkable that the Apostles never themselves applied to their converts the title of "Christians." They preferred calling them by titles which had long been *known as designating God's peculiar people of old*, the Israelites after the flesh; such as "Saints," "Brethren," "Elect," or "Chosen," &c., in order, no doubt, to point out that the Gospel was a *sequel* to the Mosaic dispensation, and that the believers of all races were become by adoption "the ISRAEL of GOD." See Abp. Whately's *Essay on Election*.

the Epistles ; but certainly, they are useful to teach Christians and Christian churches what they ought to be, and what their holy profession requires of them, and sharply to reprove the gross unlikeness and inconformity that is in the most part of men to the description of Christians. As there be some that are too strait in their judgment concerning the being and nature of the Visible Church, so certainly the greatest part of churches are too loose in their practice.

From the dissimilitude betwixt our churches and those, we may make this use of reproof, that if an apostolical Epistle were to be directed to us, it ought to be inscribed, ‘To the ignorant, profane, malicious, &c.’ As he who, at the hearing of the Gospel read, said, ‘Either this is not the Gospel or we are not Christians,’* so either these characters, given in the inscription of these Epistles, are not true characters or we are not true Christians.

Ver. 2. Elect, according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ : grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.

IN this verse we have their *condition* and the *causes* of it.— Their condition, *sanctified* and *justified*; the former expressed by *obedience*, the latter, by *sprinkling of the blood of Christ*. The causes: 1. *Eternal election*. 2. *The execution of that decree*, viz.. their *effectual calling*, which (I conceive) is meant by *election* here, the selecting them out of the world, and joining them to the fellowship of the children of God. So John xv. 19. The former, *election*, is particularly ascribed to GOD the Father, the latter to the Holy Spirit; and the *blood of Jesus Christ* the Son of GOD is here assigned as the cause of their *justification*; and so the whole Trinity concurring, dignify them with this their spiritual and happy estate.

First, I shall discourse of these separately, and then of their connexion.

I. Of the state or condition of the children of GOD, and, though named last :

1. Of their Justification. *Elect unto sprinkling of*

* This is recorded of Dr. Whitaker, Master of St. John's College, Cambridge, who died in 1595. On one occasion, after reading the Sermon on the Mount in the 5th ch. of S. Matthew's Gospel,

he exclaimed, *Aut hoc non est Evangelium, aut nos non sumus evangelici*, ‘Either this is not the Gospel, or we are not of the Gospel.’

*the blood of Jesus Christ.]** This *sprinkling* has respect to the rite of the legal purification by the sprinkling of blood; and that appositely, for these rites of sprinkling and blood did all point out this blood and this sprinkling, and exhibited this true ransom of souls, which was only shadowed by them.

The use and end of sprinkling were *purification* and *expiation*, because sin merited death, and the pollutions and stains of human nature were by sin. Such is the pollution, that it can be no manner of way washed off but by blood. (Heb. ix. 22.) Neither is there any blood able to purge from sin, except the most precious Blood of Jesus Christ, which is called (Acts xx. 28) the *blood of GOD*.

That the stain of sin can be washed off only by blood, intimates that it merits death; and that no blood but that of the Son of GOD can do it, intimates that this stain merits eternal death; and it had been our portion, except the death of the eternal Lord of life had freed us from it.

Filthiness needs sprinkling; *guiltiness* (such as deserves death) needs sprinkling of blood; and the death it deserves being everlasting death, the blood must be the blood of Christ, the eternal Lord of life, dying to free us from the sentence of death.

The soul (as the body) hath its life, its health, its purity, and the contrary of these,—its death, diseases, deformities, and impurity, which belong to it as to their first subject, and to the body by participation.

The soul and body of all mankind are stained by the pollution of sin. The impure leprosy of the soul is not a spot outwardly, but wholly inward; hence, as the corporal leprosy was purified by the sprinkling of blood, so is this. Then by reflecting, we see how all this that the Apostle St. Peter expresseth, is necessary to justification. 1. Christ the Mediator betwixt GOD and man, is GOD and man. 2. A Mediator not only interceding, but also satisfying (Eph. ii. 16). 3. This satisfaction doth not reconcile us, unless it be applied: therefore there is not only mention of *blood* but the *sprinkling* of it. The SPIRIT by faith sprinkleth the soul, as with hyssop,

* Whitby and others read the passage: *Elect through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and through the sprinkling, &c.* But see Heb. xiii. 24: *Ye are come to Jesus, and to the blood of sprinkling.* Schleusner paraphrases it, *ἵνα βαπτίζωνται αἰματι, &c., Elect that they may be purified by the blood of Jesus Christ.*

wherewith the sprinkling was made: this is it of which the Prophet speaks (Isa. lii. 15), *So shall He sprinkle many nations*; and which the Apostle to the Hebrews prefers above all legal sprinklings (chap. ix. 12, 13, 14), both as to its duration and as to the excellency of its effects.

Men are not easily convinced and persuaded of the deep stain of sin, and that no other laver can fetch it out but the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ. Some who have moral resolutions of amendment, dislike at least gross sins and purpose to avoid them, and it is to them cleanness enough to reform in those things; but they consider not what becomes of the guiltiness they have contracted already, and how that shall be purged, how their natural pollution shall be taken away. Be not deceived in this: it is not an evanishing sigh, or a light word, or a wish of *GOD forgive me*; no, nor the highest current of repentance, nor that which is the truest evidence of repentance, amendment: it is none of these that purify in the sight of GOD, and expiate wrath; they are all imperfect and stained themselves, cannot stand and answer for themselves, much less be of value to counterpoise the former guilt of sin. The very tears of the purest repentance, unless they be sprinkled with this blood, are impure; all our washings, without this, are but washings of the blackmoor, it is labour in vain. Jer. ii. 22; Job ix. 30, 31. There are none truly purged by the blood of Christ, who do not endeavour after purity of heart and conversation; but yet it is the blood of Christ by which they are all made fair, and there is no spot in them. Here it is said, *Elect to obedience*; but because that obedience is not perfect, there must be sprinkling of the blood too. There is nothing in religion further out of nature's reach, and out of its liking and believing, than **THE DOCTRINE OF REDEMPTION BY A SAVIOUR, AND A CRUCIFIED SAVIOUR**—by Christ, and by His blood, first shed on the cross in His suffering, and then sprinkled on the soul by His Spirit. It is easier to make men sensible of the necessity of repentance and amendment of life (though that is very difficult), than of this purging by the sprinkling of this precious blood. Did we see how needful Christ is to us, we should esteem and love Him more.

It is not by the hearing of Christ and of His blood in the doctrine of the Gospel; it is not by the sprinkling of water,

even that water which is the sign of this blood, without the blood itself, and the sprinkling of it. Many are present where it is sprinkled, and yet have no portion in it. Look to this, that this blood be sprinkled on your souls, that the destroying angel may pass by you. *There is a generation* (not some few, but a generation) deceived in this; they are their own deceivers, *pure in their own eyes*. (Prov. xxx. 12.) How earnestly doth David pray, *Wash me, purge me with hyssop!* Though bathed in tears (Psal. vi. 6), that satisfied not:—*Wash Thou me*. This is the honourable condition of the saints, that they are purified and consecrated unto GOD by this sprinkling; yea, they have on *long white robes washed in the blood of the Lamb*. There is mention indeed of *great tribulation*, but there is a double comfort joined with it.

1. They come out of it; that tribulation hath an end. And,
2. They pass from that to glory; for they have on *the robe of candidates*,* *long white robes washed in the blood of the Lamb*, washed white in blood. As for this blood, it is nothing but purity and spotlessness, being stained with no sin, and besides hath that virtue to take away the stain of sin, where it is sprinkled. *My well-beloved is white and ruddy*, saith the spouse; † thus in His death, ruddy by bloodshed, white by innocence and purity of that blood.

Shall they, then, who are purged by this blood, return to live among the swine, and tumble with them in the puddle? What gross injury were this to themselves, and to that blood by which they are cleansed! They who are *chosen to this sprinkling*, are likewise *chosen to obedience*. This blood purifieth the heart; yea, this blood *purgeth our consciences from dead works to serve the living God*. (Heb. ix. 14.)

2. Of their sanctification. *Elect unto obedience.*] It is easily understood to whom. When obedience to God is expressed by the simple absolute name of obedience, it teacheth us that to Him alone belongs absolute and unlimited obedience, all obedience by all creatures. It is the shame and misery of man, that he hath departed from this obedience,

* Ut aptissimo Tertulliani verbo utar, *eternitatis candidati*, says our author, in his first *Exhortation*. The Romans when standing for office or honour wore a robe more white than ordinary, called *candida toga*; hence the word *candidate*.
 † Cant. v. 10. Cf. vol. ii. p. 236.

that we are become *sons of disobedience*; but grace, renewing the hearts of believers, changeth their natures, and so their names, and makes them *children of obedience* (as afterwards in this chapter). As this obedience consists in the receiving Christ as our Redeemer, so also at the same time as our Lord or King; it is an entire rendering up of the whole man to His obedience. This obedience, then, of the only-begotten Jesus Christ may well be understood not as *His actively*, as Beza interprets it, but *objectively*, as 2 Cor. x. 5. I think here it is contained, yea, chiefly understood to signify that obedience which the Apostle in the Epistle to the Romans calls the *obedience of faith*, by which the doctrine of Christ is received (and so Christ Himself); which uniteth the believing soul to Christ, who sprinkles it with His blood, to the remission of sin; and which is the root and spring of all future obedience in the Christian life.

By *obedience*, sanctification is here intimated; it signifies then, both habitual and active obedience, renovation of heart, and conformity to the divine will. The mind is illuminated by the Holy Ghost, to know and believe the divine will; yea, this faith is the great and chief part of obedience. (See Rom. i. 8.) The truth of the doctrine is first impressed on the mind: hence flows out pleasant obedience, and full of love; hence all the affections, and the whole body, with its members, learn to give a willing obedience, and submit unto GOD, whereas before they resisted Him, being under the standard of Satan.

This obedience, though imperfect, yet hath a certain (if I may so say) *imperfect perfection*. It is universal in three manner of ways. 1. In the subject. 2. In the object. 3. In the duration: the whole man is subjected to the whole law, and that constantly and perseveringly.

The first universality is the cause of the other: because it is not in the tongue alone, or in the head, &c., but has its root in the heart; therefore it doth not wither as the grass or flower, lying on the surface of the earth, but it flourishes because rooted. And it embraces the whole law, because it arises from a reverence it has for the Lawgiver Himself. Reverence, I say, but tempered with love; hence it accounts no law nor command little, or of small value, which is from

GOD, because He is great and highly esteemed by the pious heart; no command hard (though contrary to the flesh), because all things are easy to love. There is the same authority in all, as St. James divinely argues; and this authority is the golden chain of all the commandments, which if broken in any link, all falls to pieces.

That this threefold perfection of obedience is not a picture drawn by fancy is evident in David, Psalm cxix., where he subjects himself to the whole law;—his feet, ver. 105; his mouth, ver. 13; his heart, ver. 11; the whole tenor of his life, ver. 24. He subjects himself to the whole law, ver. 6, and he professes his constancy therein, in verses 16 and 33: *Teach me the way of Thy statutes, and I shall keep it unto the end.*

II. We have the causes of the condition above described.

According to the foreknowledge of GOD the Father.] The exactest knowledge of things is to know them in their causes; it is then an excellent thing, and worthy of their endeavours who are most desirous of knowledge, to know the best things in their highest causes; and the happiest way of attaining to this knowledge is to possess those things, and to know them in experience.* To such persons the Apostle here speaks, and sets before them the excellency of their spiritual condition, and leads them to the causes of it.

Their state is, that they are *sanctified* and *justified*: the nearest cause of both these is JESUS CHRIST. He is made unto them both *righteousness* and *sanctification*: the sprinkling of His blood purifies them from guiltiness, and quickens them to obedience.

The appropriating or applying cause comes next under consideration, which is THE HOLY, and *holy-making* or *sanctifying SPIRIT*, the author of their selection from the world, and effectual calling unto grace.

The source of all, the appointing or decreeing cause, is GOD THE FATHER; for though they all work equally in all, yet, in order of working, we are taught thus to distinguish and par-

* A beautiful expansion of Virgil's *Felix qui potuit rerum cognoscere causas*. Cf. Sir J. Davies on—

‘That adamantine chain
Whose golden links effects and causes be,
And which to God’s own chair doth fixed remain.’
Immortality of the Soul, § 8.

ticularly to ascribe the first work of eternal election to the First Person of the blessed Trinity.

In or through sanctification.]* For to render it *elect to the sanctification*, is strained: so then I conceive this election is their *effectual calling*, which is by the working of the Holy Spirit. See 1 Cor. i. 26–28, where *vocation* and *election* are used in the same sense: *Ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, &c., but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise.* It is the first act of the decree of election; the beginning of its performance in those that are elected; and it is in itself a real separating of men from the profane and miserable condition of the world, and an appropriating and consecrating of a man unto God; and therefore, both in regard of its relation to election, and in regard of its own nature, it well bears that name. See Rom. viii. 28, 30; Acts ii. 47, and xiii. 48; John xv. 19.

Sanctification in a narrower sense, as distinguished from *justification*, signifieth the inherent holiness of a Christian, or his being inclined and enabled to perform the *obedience* mentioned in this verse: but it has here a sense more large, and is co-extensive with the whole work of renovation; it is the severing and separating of men to God, by His Holy Spirit, drawing them unto Him; and so it comprehends justification (as here) and the first working of faith, by which the soul is justified, through its apprehending and applying the righteousness of Jesus Christ.

Of the Spirit.] The word calls men externally, and by that external calling prevails with many to an external receiving and professing of religion; but if it be left alone it goes no further. It is indeed the means of sanctification and effectual calling, as John xvii. 17, *Sanctify them through Thy truth*; but this it doth when the Spirit, that speaks in the word, works in the heart, and causes it to hear and obey. The spirit or soul of a man is the chief and first subject of this work, and it is but slight false work that begins not there; but the *Spirit*, here, is to be taken for THE SPIRIT OF GOD, the *efficient*, rather than for the spirit of man, the *subject* of this sanctification. And therefore our Saviour in that place prays to the Father, *that He would sanctify His own by that truth*;

* Ἐν ἁγιασμῷ Πνεύματος.

and this He doth by the concurrence of His Spirit with that word of truth which is the life and vigour of it, and makes it prove *the power of GOD unto salvation to them that believe*. It is a fit means in itself, but it is a prevailing means only when the Spirit of GOD brings it into the heart. It is a sword, and *sharper than a two-edged sword*, fit to divide, yea, *even to the dividing of soul and spirit*: but this it doth not, unless it be in the Spirit's hand, and He apply it to this cutting and dividing. The word calls, but the Spirit draws, not severed from that word, but working in it and by it.

It is a very difficult work to draw a soul out of the hands and strong chains of Satan, and out of the pleasing entanglements of the world, and out of its own natural perverseness, to yield up itself unto GOD,—to deny itself, and live to Him, and, in so doing, to run against the main stream and the current of the ungodly world without, and corruption within.

The strongest rhetoric, the most moving and persuasive way of discourse, is all too weak; the tongue of men or angels cannot prevail with the soul to free itself, and shake off all that detains it. Although it be convinced of the truth of those things that are represented to it, yet still it can and will hold out against it, and say, *Non persuadebis etiamsi persuaseris*.

The hand of man is too weak to pluck any soul out of the crowd of the world, and to set it in amongst the select number of believers. Only the Father of spirits hath absolute command of spirits, viz., the souls of men, to work on them as He pleaseth and where He will. This powerful, this sanctifying Spirit knows no resistance; works sweetly, and yet strongly; it can come into the heart, whereas all other speakers are forced to stand without. That still voice within persuades more than all the loud crying without; as he that is within the house, though he speak low, is better heard and understood, than he that shouts without doors.*

When the Lord Himself speaks by this His Spirit to a man, selecting and calling him out of the lost world, he can no more disobey than Abraham did, when the Lord spoke to him after

* Qui doces corda fidelium sine strepitu verborum. Qui attingis a fine usque ad finem fortiter, et disponis omnia suaviter. Sap. 8. 1.—S. Aug. *Med.* c. 29. S. Austin elsewhere says: Melius dicit et docet

qui intus habitat quam qui foris clamat. And S. Gregory says: Nisi sit intus Spiritus qui doceat, doctoris lingua exterius in vacuum laborat.—*Hom.* 30 in *Evang.* § 3.

an extraordinary manner, to depart from his own country and kindred: *Abraham departed as the Lord had spoken to him.* Gen. xii. 4. There is a secret, but very powerful, virtue in a word, or look, or touch of this Spirit upon the soul, by which it is forced, not with a harsh, but a pleasing violence, and cannot choose but follow it, not unlike that of Elijah's mantle upon Elisha. How easily did the disciples forsake their callings and their dwellings to follow Christ!

The Spirit of God draws a man out of the world by a sanctified light sent into his mind: 1. Discovering to him, how base and false the sweetness of sin is, which withholds men and amuses them, that they return not; and how true and sad the bitterness is, that will follow upon it; 2. Setting before his eyes the free and happy condition, *the glorious liberty of the sons of God*, the riches of their present enjoyment, and their far larger and assured hopes for hereafter; 3. Making the beauty of Jesus Christ visible to the soul; which straightway takes it so, that it cannot be stayed from coming to Him, though its most beloved friends, most beloved sins, lie in the way, and hang about it, and cry, Will you leave us so? It will tread upon all to come within the embracements of Jesus Christ, and say with St. Paul, *I was not disobedient to (or unpersuaded by) the heavenly vision.*

It is no wonder that the godly are by some called singular and *precise*; they *are* so,—singular, a few selected ones, picked out by GOD'S own hand for Himself. *Know that the Lord hath set apart him that is godly for Himself*, Psal. iv. 3. *Therefore*, saith our Saviour, *the world hates you, because I have chosen you out of the world.* For the world lies in unholiness and wickedness,—is buried in it;* and as living men can have no pleasure among the dead, neither can these elected ones amongst the ungodly: they walk in the world as warily as a man or woman neatly appavelled, would do amongst a multitude that are all sullied and bemired.

Endeavour to have this sanctifying Spirit in yourselves; pray much for it; for His promise is passed to us, that *He will give this Holy Spirit to them that ask it.* And shall we be such fools as to want it, for want of asking? When we find heavy fetters on our souls, and much weakness, yea averseness

* 1 S. John v. 19; see vol. ii. p. 76.

to follow the voice of GOD calling us to His obedience, then let us pray with the Spouse, *Draw me*. She cannot go nor stir without that drawing; and yet with it, not only goes, but runs: *We will run after thee*.

Think it not enough that you hear the word, and use the outward ordinances of GOD, and profess His name; for *many are thus called*, and yet *but a few of them are chosen*. There is but a small part of the world outwardly called, in comparison of the rest that is not so, and yet the number of the true elect is so small, that it gains the number of these that are called, the name of *many*. They that are in the Visible Church, and partake of external vocation, are but like a large list of names (as in civil elections is usual) out of which a small number is chosen to the dignity of true Christians, and invested into their privilege. Some men in nomination to offices or employments, think it a worse disappointment and disgrace to have been in the list, and yet not chosen, than if their names had not been mentioned at all. Certainly, it is a greater unhappiness to have been *not far from the kingdom of GOD* (as our Saviour speaks) and miss of it, than still to have remained in the furthest distance; to have been at the mouth of the haven (the *Fair Havens* indeed), and yet driven back and shipwrecked. Your labour is most preposterous; you seek to ascertain and make sure things that cannot be made sure, and that which is both more worth, and may be made surer than them all, you will not endeavour to make sure. Hearken to the Apostle's advice, and at length set about this in earnest, to *make your calling and election sure*. Make sure this election, as it is here (for that is the order), your effectual calling sure, and that will bring with it assurance of the other, the eternal election and love of God towards you, which follows to be considered.

According to the foreknowledge of GOD the Father.]
Known unto GOD are all His works from the beginning, saith the Apostle James. Acts xv. 18. He sees all things from the beginning of time to the end of it, and beyond, to all eternity, and from all eternity He did foresee them. But this foreknowledge here, relates peculiarly to the elect. *Verba sensus in sacra Scriptura denotant affectus*, as the Rabbins remark. So in man, Psal. lxxvi. *If I see iniquity*; and in GOD, Psal. i. 6. *For the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous &c.* And

again, Amos iii. 2. *You only have I known of all the families of the earth, &c.* And in that speech of our Saviour, relating it as the terrible doom of reprobates at the last day, *Depart, &c., I know you not, I never knew you.* So St. Paul, Rom. vii. 15. *For that which I do, I allow [Gr. know] not.* And Beza observes that *γινώσκειν* is by the Greeks sometimes taken for *decernere, judicare*; thus some speak, to *cognosce* upon a business. So then this foreknowledge is no other than that eternal love of God, or decree of election, by which some are appointed unto life, and being foreknown or elected to that end, they are predestinate to the way to it. *For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.* Rom. viii. 29.

It is most vain to imagine a foresight of faith in men, and that GOD, in the view of that faith, as the *condition* of election itself, has chosen them: for, 1. Nothing at all is *futurum*, or can have that imagined futurition, but as it is, and because it is, decreed by GOD to be; and therefore, (as says the Apostle St. James, in the passage before cited,) *Known unto GOD are all His works*, because they are His works in time, and His purpose from eternity.* 2. It is most absurd to give

* Montaigne observes: 'Amongst our other controversies, that concerning *Fate* has been revived; and to tie things to come, and even our wills, to a certain and inevitable Necessity, men revert to the old argument that, "Since God foresees that all things shall so fall out, as doubtless He does, it necessarily follows then that they *must* so fall out." To which our doctors reply: "That the seeing anything should come to pass, as we do, and as God Himself also does (for all things being present with Him, He rather sees than foresees), is not to compel an event; that is, we see because things do fall out, but things do not fall out because we see; events cause knowledge, but knowledge does not cause events. That which we see happen does happen, but it might have happened otherwise; and God, in the catalogue of the causes of events, which He has in His presence, has also those which we call accidental and involuntary (which depend upon the liberty He has given our free will), and knows that we shall do amiss because we *would* do so."—*Essays*, ii. 29. See also Whitby, *Disc.*

vi. c. 1, and *Disc.* i. c. 5.

Our author's assertion that 'Nothing is *futurum* but as it is and because it is decreed by God to be,' must be modified by that distinction which he himself elsewhere makes between the *effective* and the *permissive* will of God: 'Things which fall out in the world are either good or bad. Most certain it is, that there is nothing good but that whereof God is the Author; *from Him, the father of lights, cometh down every good and perfect gift.* It is sure, upon the other part, that God is not the author nor can be the cause of evil (viz., the evil of sin); *for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man; but every man is tempted when he is drawn away of his own lust and enticed.* It is also certain, that nothing can fall out against the will of God, when He is pleased to oppose it,—this were to say that Omnipotence could be overcome, which were absurd. We must say, then, that these things fall out by the permission of God, or by His permissive will.'—See the whole passage in the *Rule of Conscience*, § 56.

any reason of Divine will without Himself.* 3. This supposition easily solves all that difficulty which the Apostle speaks of; and yet he never thought of such a solution, but runs high for an answer, not to satisfy cavilling reason, but to silence it, and stop its mouth: for thus the Apostle argues, Rom. ix. 19, 20: *Thou wilt say unto me, Why doth He yet find fault; for who hath resisted His will? Nay, but, O man, who art thou that repliest against GOD? Who can conceive whence this should be, that any man should believe, unless it be given him of GOD? And if given him, then it was His purpose to give it him; and if so, then it is evident that He had a purpose to save him; and for that end He gives faith; not therefore purposes to save because man shall believe.* 4. This seems cross to these Scriptures, where they speak of the subordination, or rather co-ordination of those two: as here, *foreknown and elect, not because of obedience, or sprinkling, or any such thing, but to obedience and sprinkling which is by faith.* So GOD predestinated, not because He foresaw men would be conformed to Christ, but that they might be so.† Rom. viii. 29. *For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate.* And the same order is observable, Acts ii. 47. *And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved.* Also xiii. 48. *And as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.*

* 'They err who think that of the will of GOD to do this or that, there is no reason besides His will. Many times, no reason known to us; but that there is no reason thereof, I judge it most unreasonable to imagine, inasmuch as He worketh all things *κατὰ τὴν βουλήν τοῦ θελήματος αὐτοῦ*, not only according to His own will, but *the counsel of His own will.* And whatsoever is done with counsel or wise resolution hath of necessity some reason why it should be done, albeit that reason be to us in some things so secret that it forceth the wit of man to stand, as the blessed Apostle himself doth, amazed thereat: *O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of GOD! how unsearchable are His judgments, &c.*'—Hooker, *E. P. b. i. c. 2. § 5.* See also §§ 3, 4: *GOD worketh nothing without cause, &c.*

† These are the words of Calvin, who says. *GOD hath chosen us, non quia eramus. sed ut essemus sancti*, not because we were nor, because He foresaw that we should be, but (as S. Paul declares)

in order that we might be holy in all good works. These words, and the citations from the Acts which follow, show the true character of GOD's election and predestination; for no one will venture to assert that *all* of those whom *the Lord added to the Church daily*, and who were ordained to eternal life, were finally saved. Those who embraced the Gospel were called, Acts ii. 47, *οἱ σωζόμενοι*, those that were being saved, that is, who followed S. Peter's advice, ver. 38-40, and by baptism were added to the Church and placed in a state of salvation. In Acts xiii. 48, it is said that the Gentiles *ὑσοι ἦσαν τεταγμένοι εἰς ζωὴν αἰώνιον* as many as were disposed for eternal life believed: here being manifestly contrasted with the Jews, ver. 46, who *by rejecting the word of GOD behaved as if they judged themselves not worthy of eternal life.* See Parkhurst and Whitby. The former observes: 'I think with Wolfius, that *τεταγμένος εἰς* in this passage is equivalent to *εὐθετος εἰς*, Luke ix. 62.'

This foreknowledge, then, is His eternal and unchangeable love; and that thus He chooseth some, and rejecteth others, is for that great end, to manifest and magnify His mercy and justice: but *why* He appointed this man for the one, and that man for the other, made Peter a vessel of this mercy, and Judas of wrath, this is even so, because it seemed good to Him. This, if it be harsh, yet is Apostolic doctrine. *Hath not the potter (saith St. Paul) power over the same lump, to make one vessel unto honour and another unto dishonour?** This deep we must admire, and always, in considering it, close with this: *O the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and knowledge of GOD!*

III. *The connexion* of these, we are now for our profit to take notice of; that *effectual calling* is inseparably tied to this eternal *foreknowledge* or *election* on the one side, and to *salvation* on the other. These two links of the CHAIN are UP in heaven in GOD'S own hand; but this middle one is let down to earth, into the hearts of His children, and they laying hold on it have sure hold on the other two, for no power can sever them. And, therefore, they reading the characters of GOD'S image in their own souls, which are the counter-pane† of the golden characters of His love, in which their names are written in the book of life; their believing writes their names under the promises of the revealed book of life, the Scriptures, and so ascertains them, that the same names are in the

* Well may S. Peter warn us that in S. Paul's Epistles *are some things hard to be understood* and liable to be *wrested* and perverted. He seems expressly to refer to Rom. ix. 22 in connexion with Rom. ii. 4, 5; and this very similitude of the Potter has been pre-eminently misunderstood and perverted. The potter never makes any vessel for the express purpose of being broken and destroyed, nor is it said that God ever *fitted to destruction* any of His creatures. The potter, of his own arbitrary choice, makes *of the same lump* one vessel to a more honourable, and another to a meaner use; but all for *some* use: none to be cast away and destroyed. God gives to all His servants at least one talent, and *will render to every man according to his deeds*: the unprofitable servant was cast out not because he had only received one talent, but because he was unprofitable and neglected the gift of God. It will be found instructive to

refer to the ancient Scriptures in which this similitude of the Potter is introduced, viz. Isa. xlv. 9; lxiv. 8; Jer. xviii. 1-10; Eccles. xxxiii. 13; Wisd. xv. 7. S. Paul here, and throughout his Epistle to the Romans, appears to have had especially in mind Wisd. xi.-xv. God never 'made Judas a vessel of wrath;' on the contrary He *gave him* to Christ, and Christ called him and made him His Apostle and friend, as our Saviour Himself declares to His heavenly Father: *Those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost but the son of perdition.* In like manner Ham was one of the *few, that is eight souls, saved by water* in the Ark, yet he failed to make his calling and election sure, and so became a castaway.

† *Counter-pane* is a law term, meaning one of a pair of deeds or indentures. One of Sibbes' Discourses is styled in the preface, 'A Counter-pane of a Christian's Charter.'

secret book of life which GOD hath by Himself from eternity.* So, finding the stream of grace in their hearts, though they see not the fountain whence it flows, nor the ocean into which it returns, yet they know that it hath its source in and shall return to that ocean from which arise their eternal election and salvation,† and shall empty itself into [that] eternity of happiness.

Hence much joy ariseth to the believer; this tie is indissoluble, as the agents are, the Father, the Son, and the Spirit: so are *election* and *vocation*, and *sanctification* and *justification*, and *glory*. Therefore, in all conditions, believers may, from a sense of the working of the Spirit in them, look back to that election, and forward to that salvation; but they that remain unholy and disobedient, have as yet no evidence of this love; and therefore cannot, without vain presumption and self-delusion, judge thus of themselves, that they are within the peculiar love of GOD. But in this *Let the righteous be glad, and let them shout for joy, all that are upright in heart.*

It is one main point of happiness, that he that is happy doth know and judge himself to be so; this being the peculiar good of a reasonable creature, it is to be enjoyed in a reasonable

* The ancient allegory of the Golden Chain of Homer was often adapted to the Calvinistic chain of salvation: see Rennecher's *Aurca Salutis Catena*. Herbornæ, 1589, translated Lond. 1604; and W. Perkins' work similarly entitled, and translated Lond. 1600. The passage in the text, and Card. Pole's saying given below at chap. ii. 17, appear to be derived from a sermon of Fuller's, quoted in Spencer's *Similies*, Lond. 1658, p. 603: 'Cardinal Pole, being desired by one to tell him how he might come to understand the former part of S. Paul's Epistles, which are for the most part doctrinal positions, made this answer: "By a careful practising of the latter part of the same Epistles," which consist much in precepts and directions how to lead a life in all godliness and holiness of conversation. And thus, if any man desire to know the former part of predestination, whether his name be written in the book of life; whether he be of the election of grace; whether he be predestinated to life eternal; let him but look into the latter part of predestination; whether his conversation be in heaven; whether his life be suitable to

the profession of the Gospel of Christ: and though he meet with many rubs in the way, and through frailty stumble and fall, yet riseth again and presseth on to the mark of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. Thus if a man do, he may conclude himself to be within the number of the elect. And this is the right use that is to be made of the doctrine of predestination; but it is otherwise with too many in these all-questioning days of ours. For whereas S. Paul presents us with a CHAIN let down from heaven (Rom. viii.), *election* and *predestination* at one end of the chain, and *glorification* at the other end thereof; both which ends God keepeth fast in His hand: as for the middle links of the chain, *calling* and *justification*, those He leaves for them to lay hold on; but they cannot be quiet, but must be tugging and labouring to wrest these parts out of God's hands, and so miss of the right use and comfort that is to be found in the abstruse yet sweet doctrine of predestination.'

† The first edition reads, 'that ocean which ariseth from their eternal election and salvation.'

way; it is not as the dull resting of a stone, or any other natural body in its natural place; but the knowledge and consideration of it is the fruition of it, the very relishing and tasting its sweetness.

The perfect blessedness of the saints is abiding them above; but even their present condition is truly happy, though incompletely, and but a small beginning of that which they expect. And this their present happiness is so much the greater, the more clear knowledge and firm persuasion they have of it. It is one of the pleasant fruits of the godly, *to know the things that are freely given them of GOD*, 1 Cor. ii. 12. Therefore the Apostle, to comfort his dispersed brethren, sets before them a description of that excellent spiritual condition to which they are called.

If they [viz., *election and vocation, sanctification and justification*] be inseparably linked together, then, by any one of them a man may lay hold upon all the rest, and may know that his hold is sure: and this is that way wherein we may attain, and ought to seek, that comfortable assurance of the love of GOD. Therefore *make your calling sure*, and by that your *election*; for that being done, this follows of itself. We are not to pry immediately into the decree, but to read it in the performance. Though the mariner sees not the pole-star, yet the needle of the compass which points to it tells him which way he sails: thus the heart that is touched with the loadstone of Divine love, trembling with godly fear, and yet still looking towards GOD by fixed believing, points at the love of election, and tells the soul that its course is Heavenward, toward the haven of eternal rest. He that loves, may be sure he was loved first; and he that chooses GOD for his delight and portion, may conclude confidently, that GOD hath chosen him to be one of those that shall enjoy Him, and be happy in Him for ever; for that our love, and electing of Him is but the return and repercussion of the beams of His love shining upon us.*

* 'But hath the unvirtued steel a power to move?
Or can the untouched needle point aright?
Or can my wand'ring thoughts forbear to rove,
Unguided by the virtue of Thy Spright?
Not first beloved have I the power to love?—
I cannot stir, but as Thou please to move me;
Nor can my heart return Thee love, until Thou love me.

Find thou but within thee sanctification by the Spirit, and this argues necessarily, both justification by the Son, and the election of GOD the Father. *Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, and He in us, because He has given us of His Spirit,* 1 John iv. 13. It is a most strange demonstration, *ab effectu reciproco*: He called those He hath elected; He elected those He called. Where this sanctifying Spirit is not, there can be no persuasion of this eternal love of GOD: they that are *children of disobedience* can conclude no otherwise of themselves but that they are the *children of wrath*. Although from present unsanctification, a man cannot infer that he is not elected; for the decree may, for a part of a man's life, run (as it were) under ground; yet this is sure, that that estate leads to death, and unless it be broken, will prove the black line of reprobation. A man has no portion amongst the children of GOD, nor can read one word of comfort in all the promises that belong to them, while he remains unholy. Men may please themselves in profane scoffing at the Holy Spirit of grace, but let them withal know this, that that Holy Spirit whom they mock and despise, is that Spirit *who seals men to the day of redemption*. Eph. iv. 30.

If any pretend they have the Spirit, and so turn away from the straight rule of the holy Scriptures, they have the spirit indeed, but it is a fanatical spirit, the spirit of delusion and giddiness; but the Spirit of GOD, that leads His children in the way of truth, and is for that purpose sent them from heaven to guide them thither, squares their thoughts and ways to that rule whereof it is author, and that word which was inspired by it, and sanctifies them to obedience. *He that saith, I know Him, and keepeth not His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.* 1 John ii. 4.

Now this Spirit, which sanctifieth, and sanctifieth to obe-

'Eternal God! O Thou that only art
 The sacred fountain of eternal light,
 And sacred loadstone of my better part,
 O Thou, my heart's desire, my soul's delight,
 Reflect my soul, and touch my heart!
 And then my heart shall prize no good above Thee,
 And then my soul shall know Thee; knowing, love Thee;
 And then my trembling thoughts shall never start
 From Thy commands, or swerve the least degree,
 Or once presume to move, but as they move in Thee.'

Quarles' *Emblems*, v. 4.

dience, is within us the evidence of our election, and the earnest of our salvation. And whoso are not sanctified and led by this Spirit, the Apostle tells us what is their condition. Rom. viii. 8. *If any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.*

Let us not delude ourselves: this is a truth, if there be any in religion; they that are not made saints in the state of grace, shall never be saints in glory.

The stones that are appointed for that glorious temple above, are hewn and polished and prepared for it here; as the stones were wrought and prepared in the mountains for building the temple at Jerusalem.

This is GOD'S order: Psal. lxxxiv. 11. He gives *grace*, and then *glory*; as moralists can tell us, that the way to the temple of honour is through the temple of virtue.* They that think they are bound for heaven in the ways of sin have either found a new way untrodden by all that are gone thither, or will find themselves deceived in the end. We need not, then, that poor shift for the pressing of holiness and obedience upon men, to represent it to them as the *meriting cause* of salvation. This is not at all to the purpose, seeing that without it the necessity of holiness to salvation is pressing enough; for Holiness is no less necessary to salvation, than if it were the *meriting cause* of it; it is as inseparably tied to it in the purpose of GOD. And in the order of performance Godliness is as certainly before salvation, as if salvation did wholly and altogether depend upon it, and were in point of justice deserved by it. Seeing, then, there is no other way to happiness but by holiness, no assurance of the love of GOD without it, take the Apostle's advice: study it, seek it, follow earnestly after Holiness, *without which no man shall see the Lord.*†

Grace unto you and peace be multiplied.] It hath always been a civil custom amongst men to season their intercourse with good wishes one for another; this the Apostles use in their epistles, in a spiritual divine way, suitable to their

* 'We must all go, *non a deliciis ad delicias*, but from the cross to the crown, as the old Romans put Virtue's temple in the way to that of Honour.'—Burton, *Anat. Mel.* penult.

† Coleridge observes that 'Leighton throughout his inestimable work avoids

all metaphysical views of election, relatively to GOD, and confines himself to the doctrine in its relation to man, and in that sense too, in which every Christian may judge of it who strives to be sincere with his own heart.'

holy writings. It well becomes the messengers of *grace* and *peace* to wish both, and to make their salutation conform to the main scope and subject of their discourse. The Hebrew word of salutation we have here—*Peace*,* and that which is the spring both of this and all good things, in the other word of salutation used by the Greeks—*Grace*. All right rejoicing and prosperity and happiness flow from this source, and from this alone, and are sought elsewhere in vain.†

In general this is the character of a Christian spirit, to have a heart filled with *blessing*, with this sweet good-will and good-wishing to all, especially to those who are their brethren in the same profession of religion. And this charity is a precious balm, diffusing itself in the wise and seasonable expressions of it, upon fit occasions; and those expressions must be cordial and sincere, not like what you call *court holy-water*,‡ in which there is nothing else but falsehood, or vanity at the best. This manifests men to be the sons of blessing, and of the ever-blessed GOD, the Father of all blessing, when in His name they bless one another: yea, our Saviour's rule goes higher, to *bless those that curse them*, and urges it by that relation to GOD as their Father, that in this they may resemble Him: *That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven.*

But in a more eminent way, it is the duty of Pastors to bless their people, not only by their public and solemn benediction, but by daily and instant prayers for them in secret. And the great *Father, who seeth in secret, will reward them openly.*

They are to be ever both endeavouring and wishing their increase of knowledge and all spiritual grace, in which they have St. Paul a frequent pattern.

They that are messengers of this *Grace*, if they have expe-

* *Shalom*, or *Salem*, the universal *Salaam* of the East.

† 'Usually, the usual temper and disposition of a man in a state of grace is joy, for, as one saith, Grace is the begetter of joy, and they both have one root in the Greek language, $\chi\acute{\alpha}\rho\iota\varsigma$ and $\chi\acute{\alpha}\rho\iota\varsigma$ from $\chi\acute{\alpha}\lambda\omega$.'—Sibbes, iii. 19.

‡ 'Court holy-water,' an expressive proverbial phrase adopted from the French *eau bénite de la cour*. Heylin, who visited France in 1625, observes: 'The French language is very full of courtship, which maketh all the people complimentary. The poorest village cob-

bler hath his court cringes and his *eau bénite de cour*, his court holy-water, as perfectly as the Prince of Condé.' Knox relates a curious anecdote, in which this phrase is applied to the gentle and conciliatory way in which Mary, on her return to Scotland in 1561, met the fierce intolerance of her reformed subjects: 'My lord,' said Campbell of Kingzeanleuch to Lord Ochiltree, 'you have but lately arrived, and I perceive you are yet warm; but when the holy-water of the court is sprinkled upon you, you will become temperate like the rest.'

rience of it, it is *the oil of gladness* that will dilate their heart, and make it large in love and spiritual desires for others, especially their own flocks.

Let us consider, 1. The matter of the Apostle's desire for them,—*grace and peace*. 2. The measure of it,—that it may *be multiplied*.

1. *Grace*.] We need not make a noise with the many school-distinctions of *Grace*, and describe in what sense it is here to be taken; for no doubt it is all *saving grace* to those dispersed brethren, so that in the largest notion which it can have that way, we may safely here take it.

What are *preventing grace*, *assisting grace*, *working* and *co-working grace*, (as we may admit these differences in a sound sense,) but divers names of the same effectual saving Grace, in relation to our different estate? as the same sea receives different names from the different parts of the shore it beats upon. First, it prevents and works; then it assists and prosecutes what it hath wrought: *He worketh in us to will and to do*. But the whole sense of saving grace, I conceive, is comprehended in these two: 1. Grace in the fountain, that is, the peculiar love and favour of God. 2. Grace in the streams, and fruits of this love (for it is not an empty, but a most rich and liberal love), viz., all the graces and spiritual blessings of GOD bestowed upon them whom He hath freely chosen. The love of GOD in itself can neither diminish nor increase, but it is multiplied, or abounds in the manifestation and effects of it. So then, to desire Grace to be multiplied to them, is to wish to them the living spring of it, that love which cannot be exhausted, but is ever flowing forth, and, instead of abating, makes each day richer than the preceding.

And this is that which should be the top and sum of Christian desires,—to have, or want any other thing indifferently, but to be resolved and resolute in this, to seek a share in this Grace, the free love of GOD, and the sure evidences of it within you, the fruit of holiness, and the graces of His Spirit. But the most of us are otherwise taken up; we will not be convinced how basely and foolishly we are busied, though in the best and most respected employments of the world, so long as we neglect our noblest trade of growing rich in grace, and the comfortable enjoyment of the love of GOD. Our Saviour tells

us of *one thing needful*, importing that all other things are comparatively unnecessary, by-works and mere impertinencies; and yet in these we lavish out our short and uncertain time; we let the other stand by till we find leisure. Men who are altogether profane think not on it at all. Some others possibly deceive themselves thus, and say, When I have done with such a business in which I am engaged, then I will sit down seriously to this, and bestow more time and pains on these things that are undeniably greater and better, and more worthy of it. But this is a slight that is in danger to undo us. What if we attain not to the end of that business, but end ourselves before it? Or if we do not, yet some other business may step in after that. Oh then, say we, that must be despatched also. Thus by such delays, we may lose the present opportunity, and, in the end, our own souls.

Oh! be persuaded it deserves your diligence, and that without delay, to seek somewhat that may be constant enough to abide with you, and strong enough to uphold you in all conditions, and that is alone this free grace and love of GOD. While many say, *Who will shew us any good?* set you in with David in his choice, *Lord, lift thou up the light of Thy countenance upon me, and this shall rejoice my heart more than the abundance of corn and wine.* Psal. iv. 6, 7.

This is that light which can break into the darkest dungeons, from which all other lights and comforts are shut out; and without this, all other enjoyments are what the world would be without the sun, nothing but darkness. Happy they who have this light of Divine favour and grace shining into their souls, for by it they shall be led to that city where the sun and moon are needless; for *the glory of GOD doth lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.* Rev. xxi. 23.

Peace.] *Godliness is profitable for all things,* saith the Apostle, *having the promises of this life and that which is to come;* all other blessings are the attendants of grace, and follow upon it. This blessing which the Apostle here (as St. Paul also in his Epistles) joins with grace, was, with the Jews, of so large a sense as to comprehend all that they could desire; when they wished *Peace*, they meant all kind of good, all welfare and prosperity. And thus we may take it here for all kind of peace; yea, and for all other blessings, but especially

that spiritual peace, which is the proper fruit of grace, and doth so intrinsically flow from it.

We may and ought to wish to the Church of GOD outward blessings, and particularly outward peace, as one of the greatest, and one of the most valuable favours of GOD: thus prayed the Psalmist, *Peace be within thy walls, and prosperity within thy palaces.* Psal. cxxii. 7.

That Wisdom which doth what He will, by what means He will, and works one contrary out of another, brings light out of darkness, good out of evil,—can and doth turn tears and troubles to the advantage of His Church; but certainly, in itself, peace is more suitable to its increase, and, if not abused, it proves so too. Thus in the Apostolic times, it is said, Acts ix. 31, *the Church had peace and increased exceedingly.*

We ought also to wish for ecclesiastical peace to the Church, that she may be free from dissensions and divisions. These readily arise, more or less, as we see, in all times, and haunt Religion, and the reformation of it, as a *malus genius*. St. Paul had this to say to his Corinthians, 1 Ep. i. 5, though he had given them this testimony, that they were enriched in all utterance and knowledge, and were wanting in no gift, yet, presently after, ver. 13, *I hear that there are divisions and contentions among you. The enemy hath done this*, as our Saviour speaks; and this enemy is no fool, for, by Divine permission, he works to his own end very wisely: for there is not one thing that doth on all hands choke the seed of Religion so much, as thorny debates and differences about itself. So, in succeeding ages, and at the breaking forth of the light in Germany in Luther's time, multitudes of sects arose.

Profane men do not only stumble, but fall and break their necks upon these divisions. We see (think they, and some of them possibly say it out) that they who mind religion most cannot agree upon it: our easiest way is not to embroil ourselves, nor at all to be troubled with the business. Many are of Gallio's temper; they *will care for none of those things*. Thus these offences prove a mischief to the profane world, as our Saviour says, *Woe to the world because of offences.*

Then those on the erring side, who are taken with new opinions and fancies, are altogether taken up with them, their main thoughts are spent upon them; and thus the sap is drawn

from that which should nourish and prosper in their hearts, *sanctified useful knowledge* and *saving grace*. The other are as weeds, which divert the nourishment in gardens from the plants and flowers: and certainly these weeds, viz., men's own conceits, cannot but grow more with them, when they give way to them, than solid religion doth; for their hearts (as one said of the earth) are mother to those, and but step-mother to this.

It is also a loss even to those that oppose errors and divisions, that they are forced to be busied in that way: for the wisest and godliest of them find (and such are sensible of it) that disputes in religion are no friends to that which is far sweeter in it; but hinder and abate it, viz., those pious and devout thoughts that are both the more useful and truly delightful.

As peace is a choice blessing, so this is the choicest peace, and is the peculiar inseparable effect of this grace with which it is here jointly wished,—*Grace* and *Peace*; the flower of peace growing upon the root of grace. This spiritual peace hath two things in it: 1. Reconciliation with GOD. 2. Tranquillity of spirit. The quarrel and matter of enmity, you know, betwixt GOD and man is, the rebellion, the sin of man; and he being naturally altogether sinful, there can proceed nothing from him but what foment and increases the hostility. It is grace alone, the most free grace of GOD, that contrives, and offers, and makes the peace, else it had never been; we had universally perished without it. Now in this consists the wonder of Divine grace, that the Almighty GOD seeks agreement, and entreats for it, with sinful clay, which He could wholly destroy in a moment.

Jesus Christ, the Mediator and purchaser of this peace, bought it with His blood, killed the enmity by His own death, Eph. ii. 15. And therefore the tenor of it in the Gospel runs still in His name (Rom. v. 1): *We have peace with God through Jesus Christ our Lord*; and St. Paul expresses it in his salutations, which are the same with this, *Grace and peace from GOD the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ*.

As the free love and grace of GOD appointed this means and way of our peace and offered it, so the same grace applies it, and makes it ours, and gives us faith to apprehend it.

And from our sense of this peace, or reconciliation with GOD,

arises that which is our inward peace, a calm and quiet temper of mind. This peace which we have with GOD in Christ, is inviolable; but because the sense and persuasion of it may be interrupted, the soul that is truly at peace with GOD may for a time be disquieted in itself, through weakness of faith, or the strength of temptation, or the darkness of desertion, losing sight of that grace, that love and light of GOD's countenance, on which its tranquillity of joy depends. *Thou didst hide Thy face,* saith David, *and I was troubled.* But when these eclipses are over, the soul is revived with new consolation, as the face of the earth is renewed and made to smile with the return of the sun in the spring; and this ought always to uphold Christians in the saddest times, viz., that the grace or love of GOD towards them depends not on their sense, nor upon anything in them, but is still in itself incapable of the smallest alteration.

It is natural to men to desire their own peace, the quietness and contentment of their minds; but most men miss the way to it, and therefore find it not, for there is no way to it, indeed, but this one, wherein few seek it, viz., reconciliation and peace with GOD. The persuasion of that alone makes the mind clear and serene, like your fairest summer days. *My peace I give you,* saith Christ, *not as the world.* *Let not your hearts be troubled.* All the peace and favour of the world cannot calm a troubled heart; but where this peace is which Christ gives, all the trouble and disquiet of the world cannot disturb it. *When He giveth quietness, who then can make trouble? and when He hideth His face, who then can behold Him? whether it be against a nation, or against a man only.* Job xxxiv. 29. (See also for this, Psalms xlvi. cxxiii.) All outward distress, to a mind thus at peace, is but as the rattling of the hail upon the tiles to him that sits within the house at a sumptuous feast. A good conscience is called *a feast*, and with an advantage which no other feast can have, nor, were it possible, could men endure it. A few hours of feasting will weary the most professed epicure; but a conscience thus at peace is a *continual feast*, with continual unwearied delight. What makes the world take up such a prejudice against religion as a sour unpleasant thing? They see the afflictions and griefs of Christians, but they do not see their joys, the inward pleasure of mind that they can possess in a very hard estate. Have

you not tried other ways enough? Hath he not tried them who had more ability and skill for it than you, and found them not only *vanity* but *vexation of spirit*? If you have any belief of holy truth, put it but this once upon the trial, and seek peace in the way of grace. This inward peace is too precious a liquor to be poured into a filthy vessel. A holy heart, that gladly entertains grace, shall find that it and peace cannot dwell asunder. An ungodly man may sleep to death in the lethargy of carnal presumption and impenitency; but a true, lively, solid peace he cannot have. *There is no peace to the wicked, saith my GOD*, Isa. lvii. 21. And if He say there is none, speak peace who will, if all the world with one voice should speak it, it shall prove none.

2. Consider the *measure* of the Apostle's desire for his scattered brethren, that this *Grace* and *Peace* may be *multiplied*. This the Apostle wishes for them, knowing the imperfection of the graces and peace of the saints while they are here below; and this they themselves, under a sense of that imperfection, ardently desire. They that have tasted the sweetness of this grace and peace call incessantly for more. This is a disease in earthly desires, and a disease incurable by all the things desired; there is no satisfaction attainable by them; but this avarice of spiritual things is a virtue, and by our Saviour is called *blessedness*, because it tends to fulness and satisfaction.* *Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness, for they shall be filled.*

Ver. 3. Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who, according to His abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

Ver. 4. To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away.

IT is a cold lifeless thing to speak of spiritual things upon mere report: but they that speak of them as their own, as having share and interest in them, and some experience of their sweetness, their discourse of them is enlivened with firm

* L'Avarice temporelle, par laquelle on désire avidement les trésors terrestres, est *la racine de tous maux*: mais l'Avarice spirituelle, par laquelle on souhaite incessamment le fin or de l'amour sacré, est *la racine de tous biens*. Quant aux biens spirituels, celui n'en a pas ce

qui lui suffit, auquel il suffit d'avoir ce qui lui suffit; et la suffisance n'est pas suffisante, parceque la vraie suffisance ès choses Divines consiste en partie au désir de l'affluence.—S. F. De Sales *De l'Amour de Dieu*, l. 12. c. 2; l. 8. c. 8.

belief and ardent affection; they cannot mention them but their hearts are straight taken with such gladness, as they are forced to vent in praises. Thus our Apostle here, and St. Paul, Eph. i., and often elsewhere, when they considered these things wherewith they were about to comfort the godly to whom they wrote, they were suddenly elevated with the joy of them, and broke forth into thanksgiving; so teaching us, by their example, what real joy there is in the consolations of the Gospel, and what praise is due from all the saints to the GOD of those consolations. This is such an inheritance that the very thoughts and hopes of it are able to sweeten the greatest griefs and afflictions. What then shall the possession of it be, wherein there shall be no rupture, nor the least drop of any grief at all?

The main subject of these verses is, that which is the main comfort that supports the spirits of the godly in all conditions:—

1. Their *after inheritance*, in the 4th verse. 2. Their *present title* to it, and *assured hope* of it, verse 3. 3. The *immediate cause* of both assigned, viz., *Jesus Christ*. 4. All this derived from the *free mercy of GOD*, as the first and highest cause, and returned to His praise and glory as the last and highest end of it.

We should begin with the first, *the inheritance*; but because the fourth verse, which describes it, is linked with the subsequent, we will not go so far off to return back again, but first speak to this third verse, and in it,

Consider: 1. Their *title* to this *inheritance*, *Begotten again*. 2. Their *assurance* of it, viz., *a holy or lively hope*.

The *title* which the saints have to their rich inheritance is of the validest and most unquestionable kind, viz., by birth. Not by their first natural birth; by it we are all born indeed, but we find what it is (Eph. ii. 3), *children of wrath*, heirs apparent of eternal flames. It is an everlasting inheritance, too, but so much the more fearful, being of everlasting misery, or (so to speak) of immortal death; and we are made sure to it, they who remain in that condition cannot lose their right, although they gladly would escape it: they shall be forced to enter possession. But it is by a new and supernatural birth that men are both freed from their engagement to that woeful inheritance, and invested into the rights of this other here men-

tioned, which is as full of happiness as the former is miserable ; therefore are they said here to be *begotten again* to that lively hope. GOD, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, hath begotten us again. And thus are the regenerate the children of an immortal Father, and, as such, entitled to an inheritance of immortality : *If children, then heirs, heirs of GOD* ; and this sonship is by adoption in Christ ; therefore it is added, *joint heirs with Christ*, Rom. viii. 17. We adopted children, and HE the only-begotten SON OF GOD by an eternal ineffable generation.

And yet, this our adoption is not a mere extrinsical denomination, as is adoption amongst men ; but is accompanied with a real change in those that are adopted, a new nature and spirit being infused into them, by reason of which, as they are adopted to this their inheritance in Christ, they are likewise begotten of GOD, and born again to it, by the supernatural work of REGENERATION. They are like their heavenly Father ; they have His image renewed on their souls, and their Father's Spirit ; they have it, and are acted and led by it. This is that great mystery of the kingdom of GOD which puzzled Nicodemus ; it was darkness to him at first, till he was instructed in that night, under the covert whereof he came to Christ.

Nature cannot conceive of any generation or birth but that which is within its own compass : only they who are partakers of this spiritual birth understand what it means ; to others it is a riddle, an unsavoury, unpleasant subject.

It is sometimes ascribed to the subordinate means ; to Baptism, called therefore the *laver of regeneration*, Tit. iii. 5 ;—to the word of GOD, which is that immortal seed whereby we are born again, James i. 18 ;—to the ministers of this word, and the seals of it, as 1 Cor. iv. 15 : *For though you have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers ; for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel*. As also, Gal. iv. 19. But all these means have their vigour and efficacy in this great work from the Father of spirits, who is their Father in their first creation and infusion, and in this their regeneration, which is a new and second creation : *If any man be in Christ he is a new creature*, 2 Cor. v. 17.

Divines have reason to infer, from the nature of conversion

thus expressed, that man doth not bring anything to this work himself. It is true he hath a will, as his natural faculty; but that this will embraces the offer of grace, and turns to Him that offers it, is from renewing grace, which sweetly and yet strongly, strongly and yet sweetly, inclines it.

1. Nature cannot raise itself to this, any more than a man can give natural being to himself. 2. It is not a superficial change; it is a new life and being. A moral man, in his changes and reformations of himself, is still the same man. Though he reform so far as that men, in their ordinary phrase, call him 'quite another man,' yet, in truth, till he be *born again*, there is no new nature in him. *The sluggard turns on his bed as the door on the hinges*, says Solomon. Thus, the natural man turns from one custom and posture to another, but never turns off. But the Christian, by virtue of this new birth, can say indeed, *Ego non sum ego*, I am not the same man I was.*

You that are Nobles, aspire to this honourable condition; add this nobleness to the other, for it far surpasses it; make it the crown of all your honours and advantages. And you that are of mean birth, or if you have any stain on your birth, the only way to make up and repair all, and truly to ennoble you, is this—to be the sons of a king, yea of the KING of kings, and *this honour have all His saints. To as many as received Him, He gave this privilege, to be the sons of GOD*, John i. 12.

Unto a lively Hope.] *Now are we the sons of GOD* (saith the Apostle, 1 John iii. 2), *but it doth not yet appear what we shall be*. These sons are *heirs*, but all this lifetime is their under-age [or minority]; yet, even then, being partakers of this new birth and sonship, they have a right to it, and in the assurance of that right, this *living hope*: as an heir, when he is capable of those thoughts, hath not only right of inheritance, but may rejoice in the hope he hath of it, and please himself in thinking of it. But Hope is said to be only in respect of an uncertain good: † true, in the world's phrase it is so; for *their* hope is conversant in uncertain things, or in things that may be certain, after an uncertain manner: all their worldly hopes are tottering, built upon sand, and their hopes of Heaven are but blind and groundless conjectures; but the Hope of the sons of the Living

* See Comment on ch. iv. ver. 3. † *Spes incerti boni nomen est.*—Sen. *Ep.* 10.

GOD is a living hope. That which Alexander said when he dealt liberally about him, that he *left Hope to himself*,* the children of GOD may more wisely and happily say, when they leave the hot pursuit of the world to others, and despise it; their portion is hope. The thread of Alexander's life was cut off in the midst of his victories, and so all his hopes vanished; but their hope cannot die nor disappoint them.

But then it is said to be *lively*, not only *objectively*, but *effectively*; enlivening and comforting the children of GOD in all distresses, enabling them to encounter and surmount all difficulties in the way. And then it is *formally* so; it cannot fail, dies not before accomplishment. Worldly hopes often mock men, and so cause them to be ashamed, and men take it as a great blot, and are most of all ashamed of those things that discover weakness of judgment in them. Now worldly hopes do thus, they put the fool upon a man: when he hath judged himself sure, and laid so much weight and expectation on them, then they break and foil him: they are not living, but lying hopes, and dying hopes; they die often before us, and we live to bury them, and see our own folly and infelicity in trusting to them; but at the utmost, they die with us when we die, and can accompany us no further. But this Hope answers expectation to the full, and much beyond it, and deceives no way but in that happy one of far exceeding it.

A *living Hope*, living in death itself! The world dares say no more for its device than *Dum spiro spero*;† but the children of GOD can add, by virtue of this living hope, *Dum exspiro spero*.‡ It is a fearful thing when a man and all his hopes die together. Thus saith Solomon of the wicked, Prov. xi. 7: *When he dieth, then die his hopes* (many of them *before*, but at the utmost *then*, all of them); *but the righteous*

* Before setting out on his expedition against Persia, Alexander distributed most of the crown property among his friends, and when Perdicas asked him what he had reserved for himself he replied, 'my hopes.' Bacon's comment is: 'Weigh whether he had not cast up his account right, because *Hope* must be the portion of all that resolve upon great enterprises.'

† This was the private motto of Charles I., often written in his books.

‡ 'Hope is the sweetest friend that ever kept a distressed soul company; it beguiles the tediousness of the way, all the miseries of our pilgrimage. Therefore, *Dum spiro spero* said the heathen, but *Dum exspiro spero* says the Christian. The one, "Whilst I live I hope," the other also, "When I die I hope." So Job, *I will hope in Thee though Thou killest me.*'—Adams of Willington, *Serm. on Faith, Hope, and Charity.*

hath hope in his death, Prov. xiv. 32. Death, which cuts the sinews of all other hopes, and turns men out of all other inheritances, alone fulfils this hope, and ends it in fruition; as a messenger sent to bring the children of GOD home to the possession of their inheritance.

By the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead.] This refers both to being *begotten again* by His resurrection, and having this *living hope* by His resurrection; and well suits both, it being the proper cause of both, in this order. First, then, of the *birth*; next, of the *hope*.

The image of GOD is renewed in us by our union with Him who is *the express image of His Father's person*, Heb. i. 3. Therefore this new Birth in the conception is expressed by the *forming of Christ in the soul*, Gal. iv. 19; and His resurrection particularly is assigned as the cause of our new life. This new birth is called our *resurrection*, and that in conformity to Christ, yea, by virtue and influence of His. His resurrection is called a *birth*, He the *first begotten from the dead*, Rev. i. 5; and that prophecy, *Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee*, Psal. ii. 7, is applied to His resurrection as fulfilled in it, Acts xiii. 33, *GOD hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second Psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee*. Not only is it the exemplary but the efficient cause of our new birth. Thus in the sixth chapter of Romans at large, and often elsewhere.

And thus likewise it is the cause of our *living Hope*,—that which indeed inspires and maintains life in it. Because He hath conquered death, and is risen again, and that is implied which followeth, He is *set down at the right hand of GOD*, hath entered into possession of that inheritance;—this gives us a living hope that, according to His own request, *where He is there we may be also*. Thus this hope is strongly underset, on the one side, by the resurrection of Christ, on the other, by the abundant mercy of GOD the Father. Our hope depends not on our own strength or wisdom, nor on anything in us (for if it did, it would be short-lived, would die, and die quickly); but on His resurrection who can die no more: for *in that He died, He died unto sin once; but in that He liveth, He liveth unto GOD*, Rom. vi. 10. This makes this hope not to imply,

in the notion of it, uncertainty, as worldly hopes do; but it is a firm, stable, inviolable hope, *an anchor fixed within the veil*.

According to His abundant mercy.] Mercy is the spring of all this; yea, great mercy, and manifold mercy: 'for (as St. Bernard saith) great sins and great miseries need great mercy, and many sins and miseries need many mercies.* And is not this great mercy, to make of Satan's slaves, sons of the most High? Well may the Apostle say, *Behold what manner of love, and how great love the Father hath shewed us, that we should be called the sons of GOD!*—The world knows us not, because it knew not Him. They that have not seen the father of a child, cannot know its resembling him; thus the world knows not GOD, and therefore discerns not His image in His children, so as to esteem them for it. But whatever be their opinion, this we must say ourselves, Behold what love is this! to take firebrands of hell and to appoint them to be one day brighter than the sun in the firmament: to *raise the poor out of the dunghill, and set them with princes*, Psal. cxiii. 7, 8.

Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.] Here, lastly, we see it stirs up the Apostle to praise the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. This is the style of the Gospel,—as formerly, under the Law, it was *The GOD of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob*, and *The GOD that brought thee up out of the land of Egypt*, &c. This now is the order of the covenant of grace, that it holds first with Christ our head and in Him with us. So He says, *I go to my Father, and your Father, and to my GOD and your GOD*; which, as St. Cyril of Jerusalem in his catechism observes, shows us not only our communion with Him,—that might have been expressed thus, 'I go to our GOD and Father,'—but the order of the covenant, first my Father and my GOD, and then yours.† Thus ought we, in our consideration of the mercies of GOD, still to take in Christ, for in Him they are con-

* Cf. S. Bern. *De Diversis*, Serm. 13, § 1: *Magnus peccator magna misericordia opus habet; ut ubi abundavit delictum, superabundet et gratia.*

† S. Cyril's words—more correctly given by our author in treating of the Lord's Prayer—are: 'He said not, "I ascend to our Father," lest the creatures should be made fellows of the Only-

begotten: but he said, *my Father and your Father*; in one way mine, by nature; in another yours, by adoption. And again, *to my God and your God*; in one way mine, as His true and only-begotten Son; in another yours, as being His workmanship.'—*Catech. Lect. xi. 19.* Cf. also *Lect. vii. 7.*

vayed to us: thus, (Eph. i. 3) *With all spiritual blessings in Christ Jesus.*

Blessed.] He blesseth us really: *benefaciendo benedicit.* We bless Him by acknowledging His goodness. And this we ought to do at all times, Psal. xxxiv. 1: *I will bless the Lord at all times, His praise shall be continually in my mouth.* All this is far below Him and His mercies. What are our lame praises in comparison of His love? Nothing, and less than nothing; but love will stammer, rather than be dumb. They who are amongst His children, *begotten again*, have, in the resurrection of Christ, a lively hope of glory: as it is, Col. i. 27, *Which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.* This leads them to observe and admire that rich mercy whence it flows; and this consideration awakes them, and constrains them to break forth into praises.

To an inheritance incorruptible.] *As he that taketh away a garment in cold weather, and as vinegar upon nitre, so is he that singeth songs to a heavy heart.* Prov. xxv. 20. Worldly mirth is so far from curing spiritual grief, that even worldly grief, where it is great and takes deep root, is not allayed but increased by it. A man who is full of inward heaviness, the more he is encompassed about with mirth, it exasperates and enrages his grief the more; like ineffectual weak physic, which removes not the humour, but stirs it and makes it more unquiet; but spiritual joy is seasonable for all estates: in prosperity, it is pertinent to crown and sanctify all other enjoyments, with this which so far surpasses them; and in distress, it is the only *Nepenthe*,* the cordial of fainting spirits: so, Psal. iv. 7, *He hath put joy into my heart.* This mirth makes way for itself, which other mirth cannot do. These songs are sweetest in the night of distress. Therefore the Apostle, writing to his scattered afflicted brethren, begins his Epistle with this song of praise, *Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

The matter of this joy is, the joyful remembrance of the happiness laid up for them, under the name of *inheritance*. Now this Inheritance is described by the singular qualities of it. These comprise: 1. The excellency of its nature. 2. The certainty of its attainment. The former is conveyed in these

* See Homer's *Odyssey*, iv. 221. Cf. Milton's *Comus*, and *Samson*, 652-666.

three, *Incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away*; the latter, in the last words of this verse, and in the verse following: *Reserved in heaven for you, &c.*

GOD is bountiful to all, gives to all men all that they have, health, riches, honour, strength, beauty, and wit, but these things He scatters (as it were) with an indifferent hand. Upon others He looks, as well as on His beloved children; but the *inheritance* is peculiarly *theirs*. Inheritance is convertible with sonship; Abraham gave gifts to Keturah's sons, and dismissed them, Gen. xxv. 5; but the inheritance was for the son of the promise. When we see a man rising in preferment or estate, or admired for excellent gifts and endowments of mind, we think, *there is a happy man*: but we consider not that none of all those things are matter of inheritance; within awhile he is to be turned out of all, and if he have not somewhat beyond all those to look to, he is but a miserable man, and so much the more miserable, that once he seemed and was reputed happy. There is a certain time wherein heirs come to possess: thus it is with this inheritance too. There is mention made by the Apostle of *a perfect man—unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ*, Eph. iv. 13. And though the inheritance is rich and honourable, yet the heir, being young, is held under discipline, and is more strictly dealt with, possibly, than the servants,—sharply corrected for that which is let pass in them; but still, even then, in regard of that which he is born to, his condition is much better than theirs, and all the correction he suffers prejudices him not, but fits him for inheriting. The love of our heavenly Father is beyond the love of mothers in tenderness, and yet beyond the love of fathers (who are usually said to love more wisely) in point of wisdom. He will not undo His children, His heirs, with too much indulgence. It is one of His heavy judgments upon the foolish children of disobedience, that *Ease shall slay them, and their prosperity shall prove their destruction*.

While the children of God are childish and weak in faith, they are like some great heirs before they come to years of understanding; they consider not their Inheritance and what they are to come to, have not their spirits elevated to thoughts worthy of their estate, and their behaviour conformed to it; but as they grow up in years, they come, by little and little,

to be sensible of those things, and the nearer they come to possession the more apprehensive they are of their quality, and of what doth answerably become them to do. And this is the duty of such as are indeed heirs of glory;—to grow in the understanding and consideration of that which is prepared for them, and to suit themselves, as they are able, to those great hopes. This is what the Apostle St. Paul prays for, on behalf of his Ephesians, ch. i. ver. 18, *The eyes of your understanding being enlightened, that ye may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints.* This would make them holy and heavenly, to *have their conversation in Heaven, from whence they look for a Saviour.* That we may, then, the better know somewhat of the dignity and riches of this Inheritance, let us consider the description which is here given us of it. And, first, it is:

Incorruptible.] Although this seems to be much the same with the *third* quality, *That fadeth not away* (which is a borrowed expression for the illustrating of its incorruptibility), yet I conceive that there is some difference, and that in these three qualities there is a gradation. Thus it is called *incorruptible*; that is, it perisheth not, cannot come to nothing, is an estate that cannot be spent; but though it were abiding, yet it might be such as that the continuance of it were not very desirable; thus it would be but a misery at best, to continue always in this life. Plotinus thanked GOD that his soul was not tied to an immortal body.* Then, *undefiled*; it is not stained with the least spot: *this* signifies the purity and perfection of it, *that*, the perpetuity of it. It doth not only abide, and is pure, but both together, it abideth always in its integrity. And lastly, it *fadeth not away*; it doth not fade nor wither at all, is not sometimes more, sometimes less pleasant, but ever the same, still like itself; and this constitutes the immutability of it.

As it is *incorruptible*, it carries away the palm from all earthly possessions and inheritances; for all those epithets are intended to signify its opposition to the things of this world, and to show how far it excels them all; and in this comparative light we are to consider it. For as divines say of the

* See S. Aug. *De Civ. Dei*, ix. 10, and Vives' note.

knowledge of GOD which we have here, that the *negative* notion makes up a great part of it—we know rather what He is *not*, than what He *is*, infinite, incomprehensible, immutable, &c.;* so it is of this Happiness, this Inheritance; and indeed it is no other than GOD. We cannot tell you what it is, but we can say so far what it is not, as declares it is unspeakably above all the most excellent things of the inferior world and this present life. It is by privatives, by removing imperfections from it, that we describe it,—and we can go no further than this,—*Incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away.*

All things that we see, being compounded, may be dissolved again. The very visible heavens, which are the purest piece of the material world, (notwithstanding the pains the Philosopher † takes to exempt them,) the Scriptures teach us that they are *corruptible*, Psal. cii. 26, *They shall perish, but Thou shalt endure; yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt Thou change them, and they shall be changed.* And from thence the Apostle to the *Hebrews*, ch. i. ver. 10-12, and our Apostle in his other Epistle, ch. iii. ver. 11, use the same expression. But it is needless to fetch too great a compass, to evince the corruptibleness of all inheritances. Besides what they are in themselves, it is a shorter way to prove them corruptible in relation to us and our possessing them, by our own corruptibleness and corruption, or perishing out of this life in which we enjoy them. We are here *inter peritura perituri*; the things are passing which we enjoy, and we are passing who enjoy them. ‡ An earthly inheritance is so called in regard of succession; but to everyone it is at the most but for term of life. As one of the kings of Spain replied to one of his courtiers, who, thinking to please his master, wished that kings were immortal; *If that had been*, said he, *I should never have been king.* When death comes, that removes a man out of all his possessions to give place to

* Melius scitur Deus nesciendo.—S. Aug. *De Ordine* ii. 16.

† Aristotle.

‡ Omnia mortalium opera mortalitate

Θνητὰ τὰ τῶν θνητῶν, καὶ πάντα παρέρχεται ἡμᾶς,
* Ἦν δὲ μὴ, ἀλλ' ἡμεῖς αὐτὰ παρερχόμεθα.

Transeunt omnia, et tu cum eis pariter. cum illis transiturum.—Ib. l. 3. c. 27.
—*De Imit.* l. 2. c. 1. s. 4. Da mihi omnia s. 4.
inspicere sicut transeuntia, et me pariter

damnata sunt: inter peritura vivimus.—Sen. *Ep.* 91. Cf. an epigram of Lucilius, sometimes ascribed to Lucian:

another; therefore are these inheritances decaying and dying in relation to us, because we decay and die; and when a man dies, his inheritances and honours, and all things here, are at an end, in respect of him: yea, we may say the world ends to him.*

Thus Solomon reasons, that a man's happiness cannot be upon this earth; because it must be some durable, abiding thing that must make him happy, abiding, to wit, in his enjoyment. Now, though the earth abide, yet, because man abides not on the earth to possess it, but one age drives out another, one generation passeth and another cometh, *velut unda impellitur unda*,† therefore, his rest and his happiness cannot be here.

Undefiled.] All possessions here are defiled and stained with many other defects and failings; still somewhat wanting, some damp on them or crack in them; fair houses, but sad cares flying about the gilded and ceiled roofs;‡ stately and soft beds, and a full table, but a sickly body and queasy stomach; the fairest face has some mole or wart in it. All possessions are stained with sin, either in acquiring or in using them, and therefore they are called, *mammon of unrighteousness*, Luke xvi. 9. Iniquity is so involved in the notion of riches, that it can very hardly be separated from them. St. Jerome says, *Verum mihi videtur illud, dives aut iniquus est, aut iniqui hæres*§ [That seems to me a true proverb, a rich man is either a rogue himself, or the heir of one]. Foul hands pollute all they touch; it is our sin that defiles what we possess; it is sin that burdens the whole creation, and presses groans out of the very frame of the world, Rom. viii. 22, *For*

* 'As our birth is the beginning of all things to us, so our death is the end of all.'—Cicero, *Tusc.* i. 38.

† Nihil est toto quod perstet in orbe :
Cuncta fluunt, omnisque vagans formatur imago.
Ipsa quoque assiduo labuntur tempora motu,
Non secus ac flumen. Neque enim consistere flumen,
Nec levis hora potest : sed ut unda impellitur unda,
Urgeturque prior veniente, urgetque priorem ;
Tempora sic fugiunt pariter, pariterque sequuntur.

Ovid, *Met.* 15, 176.

‡ Et curas laqueata circum
Tecta volantes.—Hor. *Od.* 2, 16, 11.

§ S. Hieron. *in Algas. Ep.* 84. S. philosopher, whether is the rich man Jerome refers to the dilemma proposed by the philosopher Alypius to Jamblichus, A.D. 300: 'Tell me, O un-just, or the heir of an unjust man? For there is no alternative.'—Eunapius, *De Vitis Philosophorum*.

we know, that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. This our leprosy defiles our houses, the very walls and floors, our meat and drink and all we touch, polluted when alone, and polluted in society, our meetings and conversations together being for the greatest part nothing but a commerce and interchange of sin and vanity.

We breathe up and down in an infected air, and are very receptive of the infection by our own corruption within us. We readily turn the things we possess here, to occasions and instruments of sin, and think there is no liberty nor delight in their use without abusing them. How *few* are they who *can carry* (as they say) *a full cup even*; who can have digestion strong enough for the right use of great places and estates; who can bear preferment without pride, and riches without covetousness, and ease without wantonness!

Then, as these earthly inheritances are stained with sin in their use, so, what grief, and strife, and contentions about obtaining or retaining them! Doth not the matter of possession, this same *meum* and *tuum*, divide many times the affections of those who are knit together in nature, or other strict ties, and prove the very apple of strife betwixt nearest friends?

If we trace great estates to their first original, how few will be found that owe not their beginning either to fraud, or rapine, or oppression! and the greatest empires and kingdoms in the world have had their foundations laid in blood. Are not these defiled inheritances?

That withereth not.] A borrowed phrase, alluding to the decaying of plants and flowers, which bud and flourish at a certain time of the year, and then fade and wither, and in winter are as if they were dead.

And this is the third disadvantage of possessions and all things worldly, that they abide not in one estate, but are in a more uncertain and irregular inconstancy than either the flowers and plants of the field, or the moon, from which they are called *sublunary*; like Nebuchadnezzar's image, degenerating by degrees into baser metals, and, in the end, into a mixture of iron and clay.

The excellency, then, of this Inheritance is, that it is free from all those evils. It falls not under the stroke of time,

comes not within the compass of its scythe, which hath so large a compass, and cuts down all other things.

There is nothing in it weighing it towards corruption. It is immortal, everlasting; for it is the fruition of the immortal, everlasting GOD, by immortal souls, and the body rejoined with each soul shall likewise be immortal, having *put on incorruption*, as the Apostle speaks, 1 Cor. xv. 54.*

That fadeth not away.] No spot of sin nor sorrow there; all pollution wiped away, and all tears with it; no envy nor strife; not as here among men, one supplanting another, one pleading and fighting against another, dividing this point of earth with fire and sword:—no, this Inheritance is not the less by division, by being parted amongst so many brethren; everyone hath it all, each his crown, and all agreeing in casting them down before His throne from whom they have received them, and in the harmony of His praises.

This Inheritance is often called a kingdom, and a crown of glory. This last word may allude to those garlands of the ancients, and this is its property, that the flowers in it are all *Amaranths* (as a certain plant is named), and so it is called (1 Pet. v. 4) *a crown of glory that fadeth not away.* †

No change at all there, no winter and summer: not like the

* 'Here they live in endless being:
Passingness hath passed away:
Here they bloom, they spring, they flourish;
For decayed is all decay:
The immortal spirit's vigour
Triumphs o'er mortality.'

S. Petri Damiani *Hymnus de Gloria Paradisi*, which Leighton elsewhere quotes.

† 'Ἀμαράντινον τῆς δόξης στέφανον, an *Amaranthine crown of glory*. Thus in *Paradise Lost* iii. 349, it is said of the angels:—

'Lowly reverent
Towards GOD's throne they bow, and to the ground
With solemn adoration down they cast
Their crowns inwove with amarant and gold:
Immortal AMARANT, a flower which once
In Paradise fast by the Tree of Life
Began to bloom, but soon for man's offence
To heaven removed, where first it grew, there grows
And flowers aloft, shading the fount of life,
And where the river of bliss through midst of Heaven
Rolls o'er Elysian flowers her amber stream:
With these that never fade the Spirits elect
Bind their resplendent locks inwreathed with beams:
Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright
Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,
Impurpled with celestial roses smiled.'

poor comforts here, but a bliss always flourishing. The grief of the saints here is not so much for the changes of outward things as of their inward comforts. *Suavis hora, sed brevis mora.** Sweet presences of GOD they sometimes have, but they are short, and often interrupted; but *there*, no cloud shall come betwixt them and their SUN; they shall behold Him in His full brightness for ever. As there shall be no change in their beholding, so no weariness nor abatement of their delight in beholding. They sing a new song, always the same, and yet always new. The sweetest of our music, if it were to be heard but for one whole day, would weary them who are most delighted with it. What we have here cloy, but satisfies not; the joys above never cloy, and yet always satisfy.

We should here consider the last property of this Inheritance, namely, the *certainty* of it—*Reserved in Heaven for you*; but that is connected with the following verse, and so will be fitly joined with it. Now for some use of all this.

If these things were believed, they would persuade for themselves; we needed not add any entreaties to move you to seek after this Inheritance. Have we not experience enough of the vanity and misery of things corruptible? and are not a great part of our days already spent amongst them? Is it not time to consider whether we be provided with anything surer and better than what we have here; whether we have any inheritance to go home to after our wandering? or can say with the Apostle (2 Cor. v. 1), *We know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of GOD, an house not made with hands, eternal in the Heavens.*

If these things gain our assent while we hear them, yet it dies soon. None, almost, retire themselves after, to follow forth those thoughts and to make a work indeed of them; but busy their heads rather another way, building castles in the air, and spinning out their thoughts in vain contrivances.—

* Hic est ille radius suavissimus contemplationis quo anima per cinnamum capitis elevatur; cum, meditatione exardesciente et oratione scintillante, nascitur in corde jubilus quidam, scilicet mellifluus cordis risus, quem nemo scit nisi qui sentit; nec etiam ipse qui sentit,

quia cito pertransit. Felix hora, sed brevis mora.—*Feria 2 Pasch. Sermo de duobus discipulis euntibus in Emmaus.* § 3. Inter Op. S. Bern. ed Ben. Milan, 1852, vol. iii. col. 1034. Cf. Leighton, vol. ii. pp. 279, 370.

Happy are they whose hearts the Spirit of God sets and fixes upon this Inheritance: they may join in with the Apostle, and say, as here, *Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath begotten us again unto this lively hope, to this Inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away.*

Ver. 4, 5. Reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of GOD, through faith, unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time.

IT is doubtless a great contentment to the children of GOD, to hear of the excellencies of the life to come; they do not readily weary of that subject; yet there is one doubt, which, if it be not removed, may damp their delight in hearing and considering of all the rest. The richer the estate is, it will the more kindle the malice and diligence of their enemies to deprive them of it, and to cut them short of possessing it. And this they know, that those spiritual powers who seek to ruin them do overmatch them far, both in craft and force.

Against the fears of this the Apostle comforts the heirs of salvation, assuring them that, as the estate they look for is excellent, so it is certain and safe, laid up where it is out of the reach of all adverse powers, *reserved in Heaven for you.* Besides that this is a further evidence of the worth and excellency of this Inheritance, it makes it sure. It confirms what was said of its excellency; for it must be a thing of greatest worth that is laid up in the highest and best place of the world, namely, in Heaven for you, where nothing that is impure once enters, much less is laid up and kept. Thus, the land where this Inheritance lies, makes good all that hath been spoken of the dignity and riches of it.

But further, as it is a rich and pleasant country where it lieth, it hath also this privilege, to be the only land of rest and peace, free from all possibility of invasion. There is no spoiling of it, and laying it waste, and defacing its beauty, by leading armies into it and making it the seat of war; no noise of drums or trumpets, no inundations of one people driving out another and sitting down in their possessions. In a word, as there is nothing there subject to decay of itself, so neither is it in danger of fraud or violence. When our Saviour speaks of this same happiness, in a like term. Matt. vi. 20, what is

here called an *inheritance*, is there called a *treasure*. He expresses the permanency of it by these two instances, that it *hath neither moth nor rust* in itself to *corrupt* it, nor can *thieves break through and steal* it. There is a worm at the root of all our enjoyments here, corrupting causes within themselves; and besides that, they are exposed to injury from without, which may deprive us of them. How many stately palaces, that have been possibly divers years in building, hath fire upon a very small beginning destroyed in a few hours! What great hopes of gain by traffic hath one tempest mocked and disappointed! How many who have thought their possessions very sure, yet have lost them by some trick of law, and others (as in time of war) been driven from them by the sword! Nothing free from all danger but this *Inheritance*, which is laid up in the hands of GOD, and kept in Heaven for us. The highest stations in the world, namely the estate of kings, they are but mountains of prey,* one robbing and spoiling another: but in that Holy Mountain above, there is none to hurt, or spoil, or offer violence. What the prophet speaks of the Church here, is more perfectly and eminently true of it above, Isa. lxxv. 25.

This is, indeed, a necessary condition of our joy in the thoughts of this happy estate, that we have some persuasion of our propriety, that it is *ours*; that we do not speak and hear of it, as travellers passing by a pleasant place do behold and discourse of its fair structure, the sweetness of the seat, the planting, the gardens, the meadows that are about it, and so pass on; having no further interest in it. But when we hear of this glorious inheritance, this treasure, this kingdom that is pure, and rich, and lasting, we may add, It is mine, it is reserved in Heaven, and reserved for me; I have received the evidences, and the earnest of it; and, as it is kept safe for me, so I shall likewise be preserved to it, and that is the other part of the certainty that completes the comforts of it. See Eph. i. 14.

The salvation that Christ hath purchased is, indeed, laid up in Heaven, but we who seek after it are on earth, compassed about with dangers and temptations. What avails it us, that our salvation is in Heaven, in the place of safety and quietness,

* *Mountains of prey, or hills of the robbers.* Psal. lxxvi. 4.

while we ourselves are tossed upon the stormy seas of this world, amidst rocks and shelves, every hour in danger of shipwreck? Our inheritance is in a sure hand indeed, our enemies cannot come at *it*; but they may over-run and destroy *us* at their pleasure, for we are in the midst of them. Thus might we think and complain, and lose the sweetness of all our other thoughts concerning Heaven, if there were not as firm a promise for our own safety in the midst of our dangers, as there is of the safety of our inheritance that is out of danger.

The assurance is full, thus; it is *kept* for us in Heaven, and we kept on earth for it: as it is *reserved* for us, we are no less surely *preserved* to it. There is here: 1. The estate itself, *salvation*. 2. The preservation, or securing, of those that expect it, *kept*. 3. The time of full possession, *in the last time*.

1. The estate—*Unto salvation*. Before, it is called an *Inheritance*; here, more particularly what is meant by that, namely, SALVATION. This is more expressly sure, being a deliverance from misery, and it imports, withal, the possession of perfect happiness. The first part of our Salvation is, to be freed from those miseries to which we are subject by our guiltiness;—to be set free, 1. From the curse of the law, and the wrath of GOD, from everlasting death. 2. From all kind of mortality and decaying. 3. From all power and stain of sin. 4. From all temptation. 5. From all the griefs and afflictions of this life. The second part of our Salvation is, to have the perfection of grace—to be full of holiness—and the perfection of bliss—full of joy in the continual VISION OF GOD. But how little are we able to say of this! Our Apostle here teaches us that it is veiled to us; only so much shines through as we are capable of here; but the revealed knowledge of it is only in the possession; it is *to be revealed in the last time*.

2. Their preservation, with the causes of it. *Kept by the power of GOD through faith*. The inheritance is kept not only in safety, but in quietness. The children of God, for whom it is kept, while they are here are kept safe indeed, but not unmolested and unassaulted; they have enemies, and such as are stirring, and cunning, and powerful; but, in the midst of them, they are guarded and defended; they perish not, according to the prayer of our Saviour poured out for them, John xvii. 16,

I pray not that Thou shouldest take them out of the world: but that Thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

They have the prince of the power of the air, and all his armies, all the forces he can make, against them. Though his power is nothing but tyranny and usurpation, yet because once they were under his yoke, he bestirs himself to pursue them, when they are led forth from their captivity, as Pharaoh, with all his chariots and horses and horsemen, pursues after the Israelites going out of Egypt.

The word in the original (*φρουρούμενοι*) here translated *kept*, is a military term, used for those who are *kept* as in a fort or garrison-town besieged. So Satan is still raising batteries against this fort, using all ways to take it, by strength or stratagem, unwearied in his assaults, and very skilful to know his advantages, and where we are weakest, there to set on. And besides all this, he hath intelligence with a party within us, ready to betray us to him; so that it were impossible for us to hold out were there not another watch and guard than our own, and other walls and bulwarks than any that our skill and industry can raise for our own defence. In this, then, is our safety—that there is a power above our own, yea, and above all our enemies, that guards us; *Salvation* itself forms *our walls and bulwarks*. We ought to watch, but we do so in obedience to our commander, the Captain of our salvation, yet it is His own watching, who *sleeps* not, nor so much as *slumbers*, it is *that* preserves us, and makes ours not to be in vain. Psal. cxxvi. 1; Isa. xxvii. 3. And therefore those two are jointly commanded, *Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation*. *Watch*, there is the necessity of our diligence; *Pray*, there is the insufficiency of it, and the necessity of His watching, by whose power we are effectually preserved, and that power is our fort. Isa. xvii. 1, *Salvation hath GOD appointed for walls and bulwarks*. What more safe than to be walled with *salvation* itself? So, Prov. xviii. 10, *The name of the Lord is a strong tower; the righteous fly into it and are safe*.

Now the causes of our preservation are two: 1. Supreme, *the power of GOD*; 2. Subordinate, *faith*. The supreme *power of GOD* is that on which depend our stability and perseverance. When we consider how weak we are in ourselves, yea, the very strongest among us, and how assaulted, we wonder, and justly we may, that any can continue one day in the state

of grace: but when we look on the strength by which we are guarded, the power of GOD, then we see the reason of our stability to the end; for Omnipotency supports us, and the everlasting arms are under us.

Then *faith* is the second cause of our preservation; because it applies the first cause, the *power of GOD*. Our faith lays hold upon this power, and this power strengthens faith, and so we are preserved; it puts us within those walls, sets the soul within the guard of the power of GOD, which, by self-confidence and vain presuming in its own strength, is exposed to all kind of danger. Faith is an humble, self-denying grace; it makes the Christian nothing in himself and all in GOD.

The weakest persons that are within a strong place, women and children, though they were not able to resist the enemy, if they were alone, yet so long as the place wherein they are is of sufficient strength, and well manned, and every way prepared* to hold out, they are in safety; thus the weakest believer is safe, because, by believing, he is within the strongest of all defences. Faith is the victory,† and Christ sets His strength against Satan's; and when the Christian is hard beset with some temptation too strong for himself, then he looks up to Him who is the great conqueror of the powers of darkness, and calls to Him, 'Now, LORD, assist Thy servant in this encounter, and put to Thy strength, that the glory may be Thine.' Thus, faith is such an engine as draws in the power of GOD and His Son Jesus, into the works and conflicts that it hath in hand. *This is our victory, even our faith*, 1 John v. 4.

It is the property of a *good Christian* to magnify the power of GOD, and to have high thoughts of it, and therefore it is his privilege to find safety in that power. David cannot satisfy himself with one or two expressions of it, but delights in multiplying them, Psal. xviii. 1: *The Lord is my rock, and my fortress, and my deliverer; my GOD, my strength, in whom I will trust; my buckler, and the horn of my salvation, and my high tower*. Faith looks above all, both that which the soul hath, and that which it wants, and answers all doubts and fears with this almighty power upon which it rests.

3. The time of full possession—*Ready to be revealed in*

* *Accommodate* in first edition.

† 'Faith is the victory.' *Νίκη* here signifies *the means or instrument of victory*.

the last time. This SALVATION is that great work wherein GOD intended to manifest the glory of His grace, contrived before time, and in the several ages of the world brought forward, after the decreed manner; and the full accomplishment of it reserved for the end of time.

The souls of the faithful do enter into the possession of it, when they remove from their houses of clay; yet is not their happiness complete till that great day of the appearing of Jesus Christ. They are naturally imperfect till their bodies be raised and rejoined to their souls, to partake together of their bliss; and they are mystically imperfect, till all the rest of the members of Jesus Christ be added to them.

But then shall their joy be absolutely full, when both their own bodies and the mystical body of Christ shall be glorified; when all the children of that glorious family shall meet, and sit down to that great marriage supper at their Father's table. Then shall the music of that new song be full, when there is not one wanting of those that are appointed to sing it for eternity. In that day shall our Lord Jesus *be glorified in His saints, and admired in all them that believe*, 2 Thess. i. 10.

You see what it is that the GOSPEL offers you, and you may gather how great both your folly and your guiltiness will be, if you neglect and slight so great SALVATION when it is brought to you, and you are entreated to receive it. This is all that the preaching of the word aims at, and yet, who hearkens to it? How few lay hold on this eternal life, this inheritance, this crown that is held forth to all that hear of it!

Oh! that you could be persuaded to be saved, that you would be willing to embrace SALVATION! You think you would; but if it be so, then I may say, though you would be saved, yet your custom of sin, your love to sin, and love to the world, will not suffer you; and these will still hinder you, unless you put on holy resolutions to break through them, and trample them under foot, and take this kingdom by a hand of violence, which God is so well pleased with. He is willingly overcome by that force, and gives this kingdom most willingly, where it is so taken; it is not attained by slothfulness, and sitting still with folded hands; it must be invaded with strength of faith, with armies of prayers and tears; and they who set upon it thus are sure to take it.

Consider what we are doing, how we misplace our diligence on things that abide not, or we abide not to enjoy them. *We have no abiding city here*, saith the Apostle, but he adds that which comforts the citizens of the New Jerusalem, *We look for one to come, whose builder and maker is GOD*. Hear not these things idly, as if they concerned you not, but let them move you to resolution and action. Say, as they said of Canaan, *It is a good land, let us go up and possess it*. Learn to use what you have here as travellers, and let your home, your inheritance, your treasure, be on high, which is by far the richest and the safest; and if it be so with you, then, *Where your treasure is, there will your hearts be also*.

Ver. 6. Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations.

THE same motives cannot beget contrary passions in the soul; therefore, the Apostle reduces the mixture of sorrowing and rejoicing that is usual in the heart of a Christian to the different causes of both, and shows which of the two hath the stronger cause, and is therefore always predominant in him who entertains and considers it aright.

His scope is, to stir up and strengthen spiritual Joy in his afflicted brethren; and therefore, having set the matter of it before them in the preceding verses, he now applies it, and expressly opposes it to their distresses.

Some read these words exhortatively, *In which rejoice ye*. It is so intended, but I conceive it serves that end better indicatively, as we now read it, *In which ye rejoice*. It exhorts in a more insinuating and persuasive manner that it may be so, to urge it on them that it is so. Thus St. Paul, Acts xxvi. 27, *King Agrippa, believest thou the prophets? I know that thou believest*. And straight he answered, *Thou almost persuadest me to be a Christian*. This implies how just and how reasonable it is, that the things spoken of should make them glad; in these they will rejoice, yea, do rejoice. Certainly, if you know and consider what the causes of your joy are, ye cannot choose but find it within you, and in such a measure as to swallow up all your temporary sorrows, how great and how many soever their causes be.

We are then to consider severally these bitter waters and sweet, this sorrow and this joy: 1. In their springs; 2. In their streams.

And first, the bitter waters of sorrow.—They are called *Temptations*, and *manifold temptations*. The habits of Divine supernatural Grace are not acquirable by human study, or by industry, or by exercise; they are of immediate infusion from Heaven; yet are they infused to the end that they may act and exercise themselves in the several conditions and occurrences of a Christian's life, and by that they grow stronger. Whatsoever oppositions or difficulties Grace meets with in its acting, go under this general name of *TEMPTATIONS*. It is not necessary to reckon up the variety of senses of this word, in its full latitude; how GOD is said to tempt man and how it is said that He tempts him not; how man tempts GOD, and how it is said that GOD is not tempted; how Satan tempts men and men one another, and a man himself: all these are several acceptations of this word; but the *temptations* here meant are the things by which men are tempted, and particularly the saints of GOD. And though there is nothing in the words that may not agree to all sorts of *Temptations* which the godly are subject to, yet I conceive it is particularly meant of their afflictions and distresses, as the Apostle James likewise uses it, chap. i. ver. 2.

And they are so called, because they give particular and notable proof of the temper of a Christian's spirit, and draw forth evidence both of the truth and the measure of the grace that is in him. If Christians fail and are foiled, as sometimes they are, this convinces them of that human frailty and weakness which are in them, and so humbles them, and drives them out of themselves to depend upon Another for more strength and better success in after-encounters. If they acquit themselves like Christians indeed (the Lord managing and assisting that grace which He hath given them), then all their valour, and strength, and victories turn to His praise, from whom they have received all.

A man is not only unknown to others but to himself, that hath never met with such difficulties as require faith, and Christian fortitude, and patience to surmount them. How shall a man know whether his meekness and calmness of spirit be real or not, while he meets with no provocation, nothing

that contradicts or crosses him?*" But when somewhat sets upon him that is in itself very unpleasant and grievous to him, and yet if in that case he retains his moderation of spirit, and flies not out into impatience, either against GOD or men, this gives experiment of the truth and soundness of that grace within him; whereas standing water which is clear at top while it is untouched, yet if it have mud at the bottom, stir it a little, and it rises presently.

It is not altogether unprofitable; yea, it is great wisdom in Christians to be arming themselves against such temptations as may befall them hereafter, though they have not as yet met with them; to labour to overcome them beforehand, to suppose the hardest things that may be incident to them, and to put on the strongest resolutions they can attain unto. Yet all that is but an imaginary effort; and therefore there is no assurance that the victory is any more than imaginary too, till it come to action, and then they that have spoken and thought very confidently may prove but (as one said of the Athenians) *fortes in tabula*, patient and courageous in picture or fancy; and, notwithstanding all their arms and dexterity in handling them by way of exercise, may be foully defeated when they are to fight in earnest. The children of Ephraim being armed, and carrying bows (says the Psalmist, Psal. lxxviii. 9), *yet turned back in the day of battle*. It is the battle that tries the soldier, and the storm the pilot.† How would it appear that Christians can be themselves, not only patient but cheerful in poverty, in disgrace, and temptations, and persecutions, if it were not often their lot to meet with them? He who framed the heart *knows* it to be but deceitful, and He who gives grace *knows* the weakness and strength of it exactly; yet He is pleased to *speak* thus, that by afflictions and hard tasks He *tries* what is in the hearts of His children. For the word of GOD speaks to men, and therefore it speaks the language of the children of men:‡ thus, Gen. xxii. 12, GOD declares unto Abraham, *Now I know that thou fearest GOD, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son, from me.*

* In this and some of the following paragraphs, the author has in mind, and occasionally quotes, Seneca *de Prov.* cap. 4.

† Gubernatorem in tempestate, in acie militem intelligas.— Sen. *de Prov.* 4.

‡ *Lex Dei loquitur linguam filiorum hominum.* J. Smith, in his *Discourse of*

GOD delights to call forth His champions to meet with great temptations, to make them bear crosses of more than ordinary weight; as commanders in war put men of most valour and skill, upon the hardest services.* GOD sets some strong furious trial upon a strong Christian, made strong by His own grace, and by his victory makes it appear to the world, that though there is a great deal of the counterfeit coin of profession in religion, yet some there are who have the power, the reality of it, and that it is not an invention, but there is truth in it; that the invincible grace, the very Spirit of GOD, dwells in the hearts of true believers; that He hath a number who do not only speak big, but do indeed and in good earnest despise the world, and overcome it by His strength. Some men take delight to see some kind of beasts fight together; but to see a Christian mind encountering some great affliction, and conquering it, to see his valour in not sinking at the hardest distresses of this life, nor the most frightful end of it, the cruellest kinds of death, for His

Prophecy, observes: 'DIVINE TRUTH becomes many times incarnate, debasing itself to assume our rude conceptions, that so it might converse more freely with us, and infuse its own divinity into us. *Nos non habemus aures, sicut Deus habet linguam.* If He should speak in the language of Eternity, who could understand Him, or interpret His meaning? Truth is content, when it comes into the world, to wear our mantles, to learn our language, to conform itself to our dress and fashions; it becomes all things to all men, as every son of truth should do, for their good. This was well observed in that old cabalistical axiom among the Jews—*Lumen supernum nunquam descendit sine indumento.* And therefore, it may be, the best way to understand the true sense and meaning of the SCRIPTURE is, not rigidly to examine it upon philosophical interrogatories, or to bring it under the scrutiny of school definitions and distinctions. It speaks not to us so much in the tongue of the learned philosophers of the world as in the plainest and most vulgar dialect that may be. This the Jews constantly observed and took notice of; and therefore it was one common rule among them for a true understanding of the Scripture, *Lex loquitur lingua filiorum hominum.*'—*Select Disc.* 4th ed. pp. 173-4. Cf. 174-7.

See also Dr. H. More's *Second Reply to Vaughan*, Cambridge, 1651, pp. 108-120; and *Conjectura Cabbalistica*, Lond. 1653, pp. 100-104; where he shows that 'the Scripture speaks not according to the exact curiosity of truth, describing things καθ' ὑπόστασιν, according to the very nature and essence of them; but καθ' ἔμφασιν, according to their appearance in sense and the vulgar opinion of men. Nor are such expressions false, for there is also a truth of appearance.' Cf. Coleridge's comment on the text, in which he says: 'On moral subjects, the Scriptures speak in the language of the affections which they excite in us; on sensible objects, not as they are known by superior intelligences, but as they are represented by our human senses in our present relative position.'—*Aids*, p. 63.

* Hos itaque Deus, quos probat, quos amat, indurat, recognoscit, exerceat. Quare Deus optimum quemque aut mala valetudine aut aliis incommodis afficit? Quare in castris quoque periculosa fortissimis imperantur? Dux lectissimos mittit. . . . Nemo eorum qui exeunt, dicit, *Male de me imperator meruit*; sed, *Bene judicavit.* Idem dicant quicumque jubentur pati timidis ignavisque flebilis: *Digni visi sumus Deo, in quibus experiretur, quantum humana natura posset pati.*—*Sen. de Prov.* 4. Cf. vol. ii. p. 389.

sake,—this is (as one said) *dignum Deo spectaculum*;* this is a combat that God delights to look upon, and He is not a mere beholder in it, for it is the power of His own grace that enables and supports the Christian in all those conflicts and temptations.

Through manifold temptations.] This expresses a multitude of temptations, and those too of divers kinds, many and manifold. It were no hard condition to have a trial now and then, with long ease and prosperity betwixt; but to be plied with one affliction at the heels of another, to have them come thronging in by multitudes and of different kinds, uncouth, unaccustomed evils, such as a man hath not been acquainted with before, this is that which is often the portion of those who are the beloved of God, Psal. xlii. 7, *Deep calleth unto deep, at the noise of Thy water-spouts; all Thy waves and Thy billows are gone over me.*

Though now for a season, if need be, ye are in heaviness.] This the Apostle blames not, but aims at the moderating of it. Seek not altogether to dry up this stream, but to bound it, and keep it within its banks. Grace doth not destroy the life of nature, but adds to it a life more excellent; yea, Grace doth not only permit, but requires some *feeling* of afflictions. There is an affected pride of spirit in some men, instead of patience, suitable only to the doctrine of the Stoics, as it is usually taken; they strive not to feel at all the afflictions that are on them; but this is to *despise the correction of the Lord*, which is alike forbidden with *fainting under it*, Heb. xii. 5. We should not stop our ears, but *hear the rod and Him that hath appointed it*, as the Prophet speaks, Mic. vi. 9. Where there is no *feeling* at all, there can be no patience. † Consider

* *Ecce spectaculum dignum ad quod respiciat intentus operi suo Deus! Ecce par Deo dignum, vir fortis cum mala fortuna compositus, utique si et provocavit.*—Sen. *de Prov.* 2.

† Seneca endeavours to show that 'the doctrine of the Stoics as it is usually taken' is misapprehended. Thus, with regard to their famous paradox, he declares: 'Hæc non nego sentire sapientem, nec enim lapidis illi duritiam ferrive asserimus. Nulla virtus est quæ non sentias perpeti.'—*De Const. Sup.* 10. Again: 'Non sentire mala sua, non est hominis; et non ferre non est viri.'—

De Consol. ad Pol. 36. And in another place: '(Sapiens) est omnibus externis potentior: non hoc dico, non sentit illa, sed vincit; et alioquin quietus placidusque contra incurrentia attollitur. Omnia adversa, exercitationes putat. . . . Marcet sine adversario virtus: tunc apparet quanta sit, quantum valeat polleatque, cum quid possit patientia ostendit.'—*De Prov.* 2. Lipsius appends this note: 'Nec enim apathia Stoicorum est (errant qui attribuunt) sed Stilponis scholæ, id est, Megaricorum;' and refers to his *Manuductio ad Philos. Stoicam*, 3, 7.

it as the hand of GOD, and thence argue the soul into submission, Psal. xxxix. 9, *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth, because Thou didst it.* But this heaviness is mitigated, and set, as it were, within its banks, betwixt these two considerations: 1. The *utility*, or the *profitableness* of it. 2. The *brevity*, or the *shortness* of it.

1. The *utility* of affliction.—To a worldly man, great gain sweetens the hardest labour; and to a Christian, spiritual profit and advantage may do much to move him to take those afflictions well which are otherwise very unpleasant. Though *they are not joyous for the present*, yet this allays the sorrow of them, the fruit that grows out of them, *that peaceable fruit of righteousness*, Heb. xii. 11.

A bundle of folly is in the heart of a child, but the rod of correction shall beat it out, saith Solomon. Though the children of GOD are truly (as our Saviour calls them) the children of wisdom, yet, being renewed only in part, they are not altogether free from those follies that call for this rod to beat them out, and sometimes have such a bundle of follies as require a bundle of rods to be spent upon it—*many and manifold afflictions*.

It is not an easy matter to be drawn from, nor to be beaten from, the love of this world, and this is what GOD mainly requires of His children, that they be not in love with the world, nor the things of it; for that is contrary to the love of GOD, and so far as that is entertained, this is wanting. And if in the midst of afflictions they are sometimes subject to this disease, how would it grow upon them with ease and prosperity! When they are beaten from one worldly folly or delight, they are ready, through nature's corruption, to lay hold upon some other,—being thrust out from it at one door, to enter at some other; as children unwilling to be weaned, if one breast be embittered, they seek to the other; and therefore there must be somewhat to drive them from that too. Thus it is clear there is need, great need of afflictions, yea, of many afflictions, that the saints be *chastened by the Lord, that they may not be condemned with the world.* 1 Cor. xi. 32.

Many resemblances there are for illustration of this truth, in things both of nature and of art, some common, and others choicer; but these are not needful. The experience of Chris-

tians tells them how easily they grow proud, and secure, and carnal, with a little ease and when outward things go smoothly with them; and therefore what unhappiness were it for them to be very happy that way!

Let us learn, then, that in regard of our present frailty there is need of afflictions, and so not promise ourselves exemption, how calm soever our seas are for the present; and then for the number, and measure, and weight of them, to resign that wholly into the hands of our wise Father and Physician, who perfectly knows our mould and our maladies, and what kind and quantity of chastisement is needful for our cure.

2. The other consideration which moderates this heaviness, is its *shortness*. Because we willingly forget Eternity, therefore *this moment* seems much in our eyes; but if we could look upon it aright, of how little concernment is it what be our condition here! If it were as prosperous as we could wish or imagine, it is but for a *little season*. The rich man in the Gospel talked of *many years*, but *Thou fool, this night shall thy soul be required of thee*, was the longest period. The *many years* quickly draw to a very great abatement, and if full of pains and griefs, these do help to put an end to themselves, and hasten to it. Well then might St. Austin say, *Hic ure, cæde, modò ibi parcas*,* Use me here as pleaseth Thee, so as that hereafter it may be well with me.

Wherein ye greatly rejoice.] We come next to consider the sweet waters of joy. This word *wherein*, though it cannot fall amiss, being referred to any particular to which interpreters have appropriated it, yet it is rather to be taken as relative to the whole complex sense of the preceding verses, concerning the Hope of Glory. In this thing ye rejoice, that ye are begotten again,—that there is such an Inheritance, and that you are made heirs of it,—that it is kept for you, and you for it,—that nothing can come betwixt you and it, to disappoint you of possessing and enjoying it,—that though there be many deserts, and mountains, and seas in the way, yet you are ascertained that you shall come safe thither.

* This oft-quoted sentence seems to be a summary of S. Austin's paraphrase of Job vii. 20. The whole passage is given in Luis of Granada's *Memorial*, l. ii. c. 10.

This is but *one* thing, while the cause of your grief is, *temptations*, and *manifold temptations*, yet this *one* thing weighs down all that multitude. The heart, being grieved in one thing, naturally looks out for its ease to some other; and there is usually somewhat that is a man's great comfort, that he turns his thoughts to, when he is crossed and afflicted in other things: but herein lies the folly of the world, that the things they choose for their refuge and comfort are such as may change themselves, and turn into discomfort and sorrow; but the godly man, who is the fool in the natural man's eyes, goes beyond all the rest in his wise choice in this. He rises above all that is subject to change, casts his anchor within the veil. That in which he rejoiceth is still matter of joy unmovable and unalterable; although not only his estate, but the whole world were turned upside down, yet this is the same, or rather in the Psalmist's words, *Though the earth were removed, and the greatest mountains cast into the sea, yet will not we fear.* Psal. xlv. 2. When we shall receive that rich and pure and abiding inheritance, that salvation which shall be revealed in the last time, and when time itself shall cease to be, then there shall be no more reckoning of our joys by days and hours, but they shall run parallel with eternity. Then all our love that is now scattered and parcelled out upon the vanities amongst which we are here, shall be united and gathered into one, and fixed upon GOD, and the soul filled with the delight of HIS PRESENCE.

The sorrow was limited and bounded by the considerations we spoke of; but this joy, this exultation, and *leaping for joy* (for so the word *ἀγαλλιᾶσθε* signifies), is not bounded, it cannot be too much; its measure is to know no measure. The afflictions, the matter of *heaviness*, are but a transient touch of pain; but that whereon this joy is built is most permanent, the measure of it cannot exceed, for the matter of it is infinite and eternal, beyond all hyperbole. There is no expression we have which can reach it, much less go beyond it; itself is the hyperbole, still surpassing all that can be said of it.* Even in the midst of heaviness itself, such is this joy that it can maintain itself in the depth of sorrow; this oil of gladness still swims above, and cannot be drowned by all the floods of afflic-

* 2 Cor. iv. 17.

tion, yea, it is often most sweet in the greatest distress. Then the soul relishes spiritual joy best, when it is not glutted with worldly delights, but finds them turned into bitterness.

For application. In that we profess ourselves Christians, we all pretend to be the sons of GOD, and so heirs of this glory; and if each man were individually asked, he would say, he hoped to attain it: but were there nothing else, this might abundantly convince us, that the greatest part of us delude ourselves, and are deceived in this; for how few are there who do really find this height of joy, of gladness and exultation, in their thoughts and hopes of it, who do daily refresh and glad themselves with the consideration of that which is laid up for them above, more than with all their enjoyments here below!

Consider how the news of some small outward advantage that is to come to us raises our light vain hearts, and makes them leap within us; and yet this news of a kingdom prepared for us (if we be indeed believers), stirs us not; our hearts are as little affected with it as if it concerned us not at all: and this is too clear an evidence against us, that indeed it concerns us not, that our portion as yet is not in it.

In what a fool's paradise will men be with the thoughts of worthless things, and such things too as they shall never obtain, nor ever shall have any further being than what they have in their fancy! And how will men frequently roll over in their minds the thoughts of any pleasing good they hope for! And yet we, who say we have hopes of the glory to come, can pass many days without one hour spent in the rejoicing thoughts of the happiness we look for! If any person of a mean condition for the present, were made sure to become very rich and be advanced to great honour within a week, and after that to live to a great age in that high estate, enjoying health and all imaginable pleasures; judge ye, whether in the few days betwixt the knowledge of those news and the enjoying of them, the thoughts of what he were to attain to would not be frequent with him, and be always welcome. There is no comparison betwixt all we can imagine this way, and the hopes we speak of, and yet how seldom are our thoughts upon those things, and how faint and slender is our rejoicing in them! Can we deny that it is unbelief of these things, that causeth this neglect and forgetting of them? The discourse, the tongue of men and angels

cannot beget Divine belief of THE HAPPINESS TO COME; only He who gives it gives faith likewise to apprehend it, and lay hold upon it, and, upon our believing, to be filled with joy in the hopes of it.

Ver. 7. That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ.

THE way of the just (saith Solomon) *is as the shining light, that shineth more and more to the perfect day.* Still making forward, and ascending towards perfection, moving as fast when they are clouded with affliction as at any time else; yea, all that seems to work against them furthers them. Those graces that would possibly grow heavy and unwieldy by too much ease, are held in breath, and increase their activity and strength by conflict. DIVINE GRACE, even in the heart of weak and sinful man, is an invincible thing. Drown it in the waters of adversity, it rises more beautiful,* as not being drowned indeed, but only washed: throw it into the furnace of fiery trials, it comes out purer, and loses nothing but the dross which our corrupt nature mixes with it. Thus the Apostle here expounds the *if need be* of the former verse, and so justifies the joy in afflictions, which there he speaks of, by their utility and the advantage faith derives from them: it is so tried that it shall appear in its full brightness at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

The peculiar treasure of a Christian being the grace which he receives from Heaven, and particularly that sovereign grace of *Faith*, whatsoever he can be assured will better him any way in this, he will not only bear patiently, but gladly embrace it. See Rom. v. 3. Therefore the Apostle sets this before his brethren in the words of this verse; in which we have: 1. The worth and excellency of FAITH; 2. The usefulness of Temptations in relation to it.

1. The worth and excellency of FAITH. The trial of faith is called *more precious*, a work of more worth than the trial of gold, because faith itself is of more value than gold. The Apostle chooses this comparison, as fitting his purpose for the illustration of both,—the worth of faith, and likewise the use

* *Merses profundo, pulchrior evenit.*—Hor. *Od.* 4, 4, 65.

of temptations, representing the one by gold, and the other by the trying of gold in the fire.*

The worth of gold is: 1. Real, the purest and most precious of all metals, having many excellent properties beyond them, as they who write of the nature of gold observe. 2. Far greater in the esteem and opinion of men. See how men hurry up and down, over sea and land, unwearied in their pursuit, with hazard of life, and often with the loss of uprightness and a good conscience; and not only thus esteem it in itself, but make it the rule of their esteem one of another, valuing men less or more as they are more or less furnished with it. And we see at what a height this is; for things we would commend much, we borrow its name to describe them, e.g., *Golden mediocrity*; and that age which they would call the best of all, they name it the *Golden Age*; and as Seneca observes, † describing heavenly things, (as *Ovid*, the sun's palace and chariot, ‡) still *Gold* is the word for all.

And the Holy Scriptures, descending to our reach, do set forth the riches of the new Jerusalem by it, Rev. xxi., and the excellency of Christ, Cant. v. 11, 14. And here the preciousness of faith, whereof Christ is the object, is said to be *more precious than gold*.

I will not insist in the parallel of faith with gold, on the other qualities of it, as that it is pure and solid as gold, and that it is most ductile and malleable as gold, beyond all other metals, and plies any way with the will of God. But then faith truly enriches the soul; and as gold answers all things, so faith gives the soul propriety in all the rich consolations of the Gospel, in all the promises of life and salvation, in all needful

* The same comparison is found in heathen writers; thus Isocrates in his exhortation to Demonicus, cap. 12, τὸ μὲν γὰρ χρυσίον ἐν τῷ πυρὶ δοκιμάζομεν, τοὺς δὲ φίλους ἐν ταῖς ἀτυχίαις διαγιγνώσκουμεν—'For we try gold in the fire, and distinguish our friends in adversity.' Ovid also expresses the same thought, *Trist.* lib. I. eleg. v. 25, 26:—

Scilicet ut fulvum spectatur in ignibus aurum,
Tempore sic duro est inspicienda fides.

And Seneca: Ignis aurum probat, miseria fortes viros.—*De Prov.* 5.

† *Ep.* 115.

‡ Regia solis erat sublimibus alta columnis,
Clara micante auro.—*Met.* ii. 1.

Aureus axis erat, temo aureus, aurea summæ
Curvatura rotæ.—*Ib.* 107.

blessings; it draws virtue from Christ to strengthen itself, and all other graces.

And thus it is not only precious as gold, but goes far above the comparison; it is *more precious*, yea, *much more precious*:
 1. In its original; the other is digged out of the bowels of the earth; but the mine of this gold is above, it comes from Heaven.
 2. In its nature, answerable to its original, it is immaterial, spiritual, and pure. We refine gold and make it purer, but when we receive faith pure in itself, we mix dross with it, and make it impure by the alloy of unbelief.
 3. In its endurance, flowing from the former; it perisheth not. Gold is a thing in itself corruptible and perishing, and to particular owners it perisheth in their loss of it, they being deprived of it in any way.

Other graces are likewise tried in the same furnace; but Faith is named as the root of all the rest. Sharp afflictions give a Christian a trial of his love to GOD, whether it be single, and for himself or not; for then it will be the same when He strikes as when He embraces, and in the fire of affliction will rather grow the hotter, and be more taken off from the world, and set upon Him. Again, the grace of patience is put particularly upon trial in distresses. But both these spring from faith; for Love rises from a right and strong belief of the goodness of GOD, and Patience from a persuasion of the wisdom and love of GOD, and the truth of His promises. He hath said, *I will not fail thee*, and that we shall not be tempted above our strength, and He will give the issue, Joshua i. 5, and 1 Cor. x. 13. Now the belief of these things causes patience. *The trial of faith worketh patience*, James i. 3. For therefore doth the Christian resign up himself, and all that concerns him, his trials, the measure and length of them all, unto GOD'S disposal, because he knows that he is in the hands of a wise and loving Father. Thus the trial of these and other particular graces, doth still resolve into this, and is comprised under it, the trial of faith. This brings us,

2. To the usefulness of Temptations in relation to it.

This trial (as that of gold) may be for a twofold end:
 1. For experiment of the truth and pureness of a Christian's faith.
 2. To refine it yet more, and to raise it to a higher pitch or degree of pureness.

I. The furnace of affliction shows upright real Faith to be such indeed, remaining still the same even in the fire, the same that it was, undiminished, as good gold loses none of its quantity in the fire. Doubtless many are deceived, in time of ease and prosperity, with imaginary faith and fortitude: so that there may be still some doubt, while a man is underset with outward helps, as riches, friends, esteem, &c., whether he leans upon these, or upon GOD, who is an invisible support, though stronger than all that are visible, and is the peculiar and alone stay of faith in all conditions. But when all these outward props are plucked away from a man, then it will be manifest, whether something else upholds him or not; for if there be nothing else, then he falls; but if his mind stands firm and unmoved as before, then it is evident he laid not his weight upon these things which he had then about him, but was built upon a foundation, though not seen, which is able alone to stay him, although he be not only frustrated of all other supports, but beaten upon with storms and tempests; as our Saviour says, *the house fell not, because it was founded on a rock.* Matt. vii. 25.

This testified the truth of David's faith, who found it staying him upon GOD, when there was nothing else near that could do it: *I had fainted, unless I had believed,* Psal. xxvii. 13. So in his strait, 1 Sam. xxx. 6, where it is said that *David was greatly distressed; but he encouraged himself in the Lord his GOD.* Thus, Psal. lxxxiii. 26, *My flesh and my heart faileth; but GOD is the strength of my heart and my portion for ever.* The heart's natural strength of spirit and resolution may bear up under outward weakness, or the failing of the flesh; but when the heart itself fails, which is the strength of the flesh, what shall strengthen it? nothing but GOD, *who is the strength of the heart and its portion for ever.* Thus faith worketh alone, when the case suits that of the Prophet's, Hab. iii. 17, *Although the fig-tree shall not blossom, neither shall fruit be in the vine, &c., yet I will rejoice in the LORD, I will joy in the GOD of my salvation.*

In spiritual trials, which are the sharpest and most fiery of all, when the furnace is within a man, when GOD doth not only shut up His loving-kindness from his feeling, but seems to shut it up in hot displeasure, when He writes bitter things

against him, yet then to depend upon Him, and wait for His salvation, and the more He smites the more to cleave to Him, —this is not only a true, but a strong and very refined faith indeed. Well might *he* say, *When I am tried I shall come forth as gold*, who could say that word, *Though He slay me, yet will I trust in Him*: though I saw, as it were, His hand lifted up to destroy me, yet from that same hand would I expect salvation. Job xiii. 15; xxiii. 10.*

2. As the furnace shows faith to be what it is, so also it betters it, and makes it more precious and purer than it was.

The graces of the Spirit, as they come from the hand of GOD who infuses them, are nothing but pureness; but being put into a heart where sin dwells (which till the body be dissolved and taken to pieces, cannot be fully purged out), there they are mixed with corruption and dross: and particularly faith is mixed with unbelief, and love of earthly things, and dependence upon the creature, if not more than GOD, yet together with Him; and for this is the furnace needful, that the soul may be purified from this dross, and made more sublime and spiritual in believing. It is a hard task, and many times comes but slowly forward, to teach the heart, by discourse and speculation, to sit loose from the world at all sides, not to cleave to the best things in it, though we be compassed about with them, *though riches do increase, yet not to set our hearts on them*, Psal. lxii. 10; not to trust in such *uncertain* things as they are, as the Apostle speaks, 1 Tim. vi. 17. Therefore GOD is pleased to choose the more effectual way to teach His own the right and pure exercise of faith, either by withholding or withdrawing those things from them. He makes them relish the sweetness of spiritual comfort, by depriving them of those outward comforts wherein they were in most danger of excess in doating on them, and so forgetting themselves and Him. When they are necessitate, and experimentally trained up easily to let go their hold of anything earthly, and to stay themselves only upon their Rock, this is the very refining of their faith, by those losses and afflictions wherewith they are exercised. They who learn bodily exercises, as fencing, &c., are not taught by sitting still, and hearing rules,

* 'The souls of the righteous are in the hand of God: as gold in the furnace hath He tried them.'—*Wisd.* iii. 1, 6.

or seeing others practise, but they learn by exercising themselves. The way to profit in the art of believing, or of coming to this spiritual activity of faith, is, to be often put to that work in the most difficult way, to make up all wants and losses in GOD, and to sweeten the bitterest griefs with His loving-kindness.

Might be found unto praise, and honour, and glory.] This is the end that is intended, and shall be certainly obtained by all these hot trials. Faith shall come through them all, and *shall be found unto praise, &c.* An unskilful beholder may think it strange to see gold thrown into the fire, and left there for a time; but he that puts it there would be loth to lose it; his purpose is to make some costly piece of work of it. Every believer gives himself to Christ, and He undertakes to present them blameless to the Father; not one of them shall be lost, nor one drachm of their faith; they shall be found, and their faith shall be found, when He appears. That faith which is here in the furnace, shall be then made up into a crown of pure gold; *it shall be found unto praise, and honour, and glory.*

This praise, and honour, and glory may be referred, either to believers themselves, according to the Apostle St. Paul's expression, Rom. ii. 7, or to Christ who appears: but the two will agree well together, that it be both to their praise and to the praise of Christ; for certainly, all their praise and glory shall terminate in the glory of their head—Christ, who is GOD, blessed for ever. They have each their crown, but their honour is, to cast them all down before His throne. *He shall be glorified in His saints, and admired in them that believe.* They shall be glorious in Him; and therefore in all their glory He shall be glorified; for as they have derived their glory from Him, it shall all return back to Him again.

At the appearance of Jesus Christ.] This denotes the time when this shall come to pass; for Christ is faithful and true; He hath promised to come again, and to judge the world in righteousness, and He will come and will not tarry. He shall judge righteously in that day, who was Himself unrighteously judged here on earth.* It is called the *Revelation*; all other things shall be revealed in that day, the most hidden

* *Juste judicabit, qui injuste judicatus est.*—S. Aug. *Med. c. 16.*

things, good and evil, shall be unveiled; but it is eminently the day of *His Revelation*; it shall be by His light, by the brightness of His coming, that all other things shall be revealed: but He Himself shall be the worthiest sight of all. All eyes shall behold Him. He shall then gloriously appear before all men and angels, and shall by all be acknowledged to be the Son of GOD, and Judge of the world; some shall with joy know Him, and acknowledge Him to be so, others to their horror and amazement. How beautiful shall He be to those who love Him, when He as the glorious head shall appear with His whole body mystical together with Him!

Then, the glory and praise which all the saints shall be honoured with shall recompense fully all the scorns, and ignominies, and distresses they have met with here. And they shall shine the brighter for them. Oh! if we considered often that solemn day, how light should we set by the opinions of men, and all outward hardships that can befall us! How easily should we digest dispraise and dishonour here, and pass through all cheerfully, provided we may be then found in Him, and so partakers of *praise, and glory, and honour in that day of His appearing!*

Ver. 8. Whom having not seen, ye love: in Whom, though now ye see Him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory.*

9. Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls.

IT is a paradox to the world which the Apostle hath asserted, that there is a joy which can subsist in the midst of sorrow; therefore he insists in confirmation of it, and in all these words proves it to the full, yea with advantage, that the saints have not only some measure of joy in the griefs that abound upon them here, but excellent and eminent joy, such as makes good all that can be said of it, such as cannot be spoken too much of, for it is *unspeakable*, nor too much magnified, for it is *glorious*.

To evidence the truth of this, and to confirm his brethren in the experienced knowledge of it, he expresses here more particularly and distinctly the causes of this their joy, which are—

1. The *object* or *matter* of it; 2. The *apprehension* and *ap-*

* See a striking sermon on this verse by Andrew Gray, entitled 'The Believer's Love to an unseen Christ.'—Serm. xvi.

appropriation of that *object*: which two conjoined are the entire cause of all rejoicing.

1. The *object* is Jesus Christ, ver. 8, and the salvation purchased by Him, ver. 9. For these two cannot be severed, and these two verses which speak of them, require (as is evident by their connection) to be considered together.

2. The apprehension of these is set forth, first, negatively, not by bodily sight; secondly, positively: whereas it might seem to abate the certainty and liveliness of their rejoicing, that it is of things they had not seen, nor do yet see, this is abundantly made up by three for one, each of them more excellent than the mere bodily sight of Christ in the flesh, which many had who were never the better by it: the three things are those three prime Christian graces, *faith*, *love*, and *hope*; the two former in ver. 8; the third in ver. 9. Faith in Christ begetting love to Him, and both these giving assured hope of salvation by Him, making it as certain to them as if it were already in their hands and they in possession of it. And from all these together results this exultation, or leaping for joy, *joy unspeakable, and full of glory*.

This is that ONE THING that so much concerns us; and therefore we mistake very far, and forget our own highest interest too much, when we either speak or hear of it slightly, and apply not our hearts to it. What is it that all our thoughts and endeavours drive at? What means all that we are doing in the world? Though we take several ways to it, and wrong ways for the most part, yea, such ways as lead not to it, but set us further off from it; yet what we all seek after by all our labour under the sun, is something that may be matter of contentment and rejoicing to us when we have attained it. Now *here* it is, and in vain is it sought for elsewhere. And for this end it is represented to you, that it may be yours, if ye will entertain it; not only that you may know this to be a truth, that in Jesus Christ is laid up true consolation and rejoicing, that He is the magazine and treasury of it, but that you may know how to bring Him home into your hearts, and lodge Him there, and so to have the spring of joy within you.

That which gives full joy to the soul must be something that is higher and better than itself. In a word, HE who made it can alone make it glad after this manner, with *unspeakable*

and glorious joy. But the soul, while remaining guilty of rebellion against Him, and unreconciled, cannot behold Him but as an enemy; any belief that it can have of Him while it is in that posture is not such as can fetch *love* and *hope*, and so *rejoicing*, but such as the faith of devils produceth, only begetting terror and trembling. But the light of His countenance shining in the face of His Son the Mediator, gladdens the heart; and it is *the looking upon Him so*, that causeth the soul to *believe*, and *love*, and *hope*, and *rejoice*. Therefore the Apostle, in his description of the state of the Gentiles before Christ was preached to them, Eph. ii. 12, joins these together: *Without Christ*, who was the cause of all the rest, therefore, *without comfort in the promises, without hope and without GOD in the world.* As He is here by our Apostle expressed as the *object*, so in all these, therefore, He is the *matter* of our joy, because our *faith*, and *love*, and *hope of salvation* do centre in Him.

The Apostle writing to the dispersed Jews, many of whom had not known or seen Christ in the flesh, commends their love and faith, for this reason, that it did not depend upon bodily sight, but was pure, and spiritual, and made them of the number of those whom our Saviour Himself pronounces *blessed, who have not seen and yet believe.* You saw Him not when He dwelt amongst men, and walked to and fro, preaching and working miracles. Many of those who did then hear and see Him, believed not; yea they scoffed, and hated, and persecuted Him, and in the end crucified Him; you have seen none of all those things, yet having heard the Gospel which declares Him, *you have believed.*

Thus, *observe*, the working or not working of faith doth not depend upon the difference of the external ministry and gifts of men; for what greater difference can there be that way, than betwixt the master and the servants, betwixt the great Prophet Himself and His weak sinful messengers? and yet many of those who saw and heard Him in person were not converted, believed not in Him; and thousands who never saw Him were converted by His Apostles, and as it seems, even some of those who were some way accessory to His death, yet were brought to repentance by this same Apostle's sermon. See Acts ii.

Learn, then, to look above the outward ministry, and any

difference that in GOD'S dispensation can be there; and know, that if Jesus Christ Himself were on earth, and now preaching amongst us, yet might His incomparable words be unprofitable to us, *not being mixed with faith in the hearers*. But where that is, the meanest and the most despicable conveyance of His message, received with humility and affection, will work blessed effects.

Whom not seeing yet believing.] Faith elevates the soul not only above sense, and sensible things, but above reason itself. As reason corrects the errors which sense might occasion, so supernatural faith corrects the errors of natural reason, judging according to sense.*

The sun seems less than the wheel of a chariot, but reason teaches the philosopher, that it is much bigger than the whole earth, and the cause why it seems so little is its great distance.† The naturally wise man is as far deceived by this carnal reason, in his estimate of Jesus Christ *the Sun of Righteousness*, and the cause is the same, his great distance from Him; as the Psalmist speaks of the wicked, Psal. x. 5, *Thy judgments are far above out of his sight*. He accounts Christ and His glory a smaller matter than his own gain, honour, or pleasure; for these are near him, and he sees their quantity to the full, and counts them bigger, yea far more worth than they are indeed. But the Apostle St. Paul, and all who are enlightened by the same Spirit, they know by faith, which is divine reason, that the excellency of Jesus Christ far surpasses the worth of the whole earth, and all things earthly. Phil. iii. 7, 8.

To give a right assent to the Gospel of Christ is impossible, without divine and saving faith infused in the soul. To believe that the Eternal Son of GOD clothed Himself with human flesh, and dwelt amongst men in a tabernacle like theirs, and suffered death in the flesh; that He who was Lord of life hath freed us from the sentence of eternal death; that

* Coleridge observes: 'By *reason* "the faculty judging according to sense." Leighton means the human *understanding*, the explanation annexed to it being, by a noticeable coincidence, word for word, the very definition which Kant gives of the understanding—namely, "the sun is no bigger than it seems:—

† Lucretius, following Epicurus, made the senses the criteria of all truth, and accordingly persisted that
Nec nimio solis major rota, nec minor ardor
Esse potest, nostris quam sensibus esse videtur.—v. 565.

Cf. J. Smith's *Select Discourses*, pp. 77-82.

He broke the bars and chains of death and rose again ; that He went up into Heaven, and there at the Father's right hand sits in our flesh, and that glorified above the Angels ; this is the *great mystery of godliness*. And a part of this mystery is, that *He is believed on in the world*, 1 Tim. iii. 16. This natural men may discourse of, and that very knowingly, and give a kind of natural credit to it, as to a history that may be true ; but firmly to believe that there is *divine truth* in all these things, and to have a persuasion of it stronger than of the very things we see with our eyes,—such an assent as this is the peculiar work of the Spirit of GOD, and is certainly saving faith.

The soul that so believes cannot choose but love. It is commonly true, that the eye is the ordinary door by which love enters into the soul, and it is true in respect of this love ; though it is denied of the eye of sense, yet (you see) it is ascribed to the eye of faith, *though you have not seen Him, you love Him, because you believe* : which is to see Him spiritually. Faith, indeed, is distinguished from that vision which shall be in glory ; but it is the vision of the kingdom of grace, it is the eye of the *new creature*, that quick-sighted eye which pierces all the visible heavens, and sees above them, which *looks to things that are not seen*, 2 Cor. iv. 18, *and is the evidence of things not seen*, Heb. xi. 1, and *sees Him who is invisible*, ver. 27. It is possible that one may be much loved upon the report of his worth and virtues, and upon a picture of him lively drawn, before sight of the person so commended and represented ; but certainly when he is seen, and found answerable to the former, it raises the affection already begun to a far greater height. We have the report of the perfections of Jesus Christ in the Gospel ; yea, so clear a description of Him, that it gives a picture of Him, and that, together with the sacraments, is the only lawful and the only lively picture of our Saviour. Gal. iii. 1. Now faith believes this report, and beholds this picture, and so lets in the love of Christ to the soul. But further, it gives a particular experimental knowledge of Christ and acquaintance with Him ; it causes the soul to find all that is spoken of Him in the word, and His beauty there represented, to be abundantly true : makes it really taste of His sweetness, and, by that, possesses the heart more strongly with His love, persuading it of the truth of

those things, not by reasons and arguments, but by an inexpressible kind of evidence, which they only know that have it. Faith persuades a Christian of these two things which the philosopher gives as the causes of all love, *beauty* and *propriety*, the loveliness of Christ in Himself, and our interest in Him.

The former it effectuates not only by the first apprehending and believing of those His excellencies and beauty but by frequent beholding of Him, and eying Him in whom all perfection dwells, and it looks so oft on Him, till it sets the very impression of His image (as it were) upon the soul, so that it can never be blotted out and forgotten. The latter it doth by that particular *uniting* act which makes Him our GOD and our Saviour.

Ye love.] The distinctions which some make in *love* need not be taken as of differing kinds, but different actings of the same love, by which we may try our so much pretended love of Christ, which in truth is so rarely found. There will then be in this love, if it be genuine, these three qualities—*good-will*, *delight*, and *desire*.

1. *Good-will*, earnest wishing, and (as we can) promoting GOD's glory, and stirring up others so to do. They that *seek more their own things than the things of Jesus Christ*, more their own praise and esteem than His, are strangers to this divine love; for *she seeks not her own things*. The bitter root of self-love is most hard to pluck up; this strongest and sweetest love of Christ alone doth it actually, though gradually. This love makes the soul like the lower heaven, slow in its own motion, most swift in the motion of that first which wheels it about; * so, the higher degree of love, the more swift. It loves the hardest tasks and greatest difficulties, where it may perform GOD service, either in doing or in suffering for Him.

* As may be seen in the index, Leighton makes frequent allusions to the cosmical system of Aristotle and the old astronomers. According to it, God is the *Prime Mover* of all things, remaining Himself immovable. The first or highest heaven is the *Primum Mobile*, or the first sphere which receives motion. Its motion is eternal, circular, and swift.

It carries with it the spheres under it, the nearer more swiftly than the more remote. For the nearer the planets are to the *Primum Mobile*, so much the slower is their proper motion, which is contrary to the *Primum Mobile*. Heaven has nothing to retard its motion, but is serene, perfect, and divine. In Milton's words:—

Volvitur hinc lapsu mundi rota prima diurno;
Raptat et ambitos sociâ vertigine cœlos.

It is strong as death, and many waters cannot quench it. Eccles. viii. 6, 7. The greater the task is, the more real is the testimony and expression of love, and therefore the more acceptable to GOD.

2. There is in true love a complacency and *delight* in GOD; a conformity to His will; a loving what He loves; it is studious of His will, ever seeking to know more clearly what it is that is most pleasing to Him, contracting a likeness to GOD in all His actions, by conversing with Him, by frequent contemplation of GOD, and looking on His beauty. As the eye lets in this affection, so it serves it constantly, and readily looks that way which love directs it. Thus the soul that is possessed with this love of Jesus Christ, that hath its eye much upon Him, that often thinks on His former sufferings and present glory, the more it looks upon Christ, the more it loves; and still the more it loves, the more it delights to look upon Him.

3. There is in true love a *desire*; for it is but small beginnings and tastes of His goodness which the soul hath here; therefore it is still looking out and longing for the day of marriage. The time is sad and wearisome, and seems much longer than it is, while it is detained here. *I desire to be dissolved* (saith St. Paul) *and to be with Christ*, Phil. i. 23.

GOD is the sum of all things lovely. Thus excellently Gregory Nazianzen expresseth himself, Orat. 1: 'If I have any possessions, health, credit, learning, this is all the contentment I have of them, that I have somewhat I may despise for CHRIST, who is *totus desiderabilis, et totum desiderabile.*' And this love is the sum of all He requires of us; it is that which makes all our meanest services acceptable, and without which, all we offer to Him is distasteful. GOD doth deserve our love not only by His matchless excellency and beauty, but by His matchless love to us, and that is the strongest loadstone of love. *He hath loved me*, saith the Apostle, Gal. ii. 20. How appears that? In no less than this, *He hath given himself for me.* Certainly, then, there is no clearer character of our love than this, to give ourselves to Him who hath so loved us, and given Himself for us.

This affection must be bestowed somewhere: there is no man but hath some prime choice, somewhat that is the predominant delight of his soul; will it not then be our wisdom to make the

worthiest choice? seeing it is offered us, it is extreme folly to reject it.

Grace doth not pluck up by the roots and wholly destroy the natural passions of the mind, because they are distempered by sin: that were an extreme remedy to cure by killing, and heal by cutting off; no, but it corrects the distemper in them; it dries not up this main stream of love, but purifies it from the mud which it is full of in its wrong course, or calls it into its right channel, by which it may run into happiness, and empty itself into the ocean of goodness. The Holy Spirit turns the love of the soul towards GOD in Christ, for in that way only can it apprehend His love; so then Jesus Christ is the *first object* of this Divine love; He is *medium unionis*, through whom GOD conveys the sense of His love to the soul, and receives back its love to Himself.

And if we will consider His incomparable beauty, we may look on it in the Holy Scriptures, particularly in that Divine Song of loves, wherein Solomon borrows all the beauties of the creatures, dips his pencil in all their several excellencies, to set HIM forth unto us, who is the *Chief of ten thousands*. There is an inseparable intermixture of love with belief and a pious affection in receiving Divine truth; so that in effect, as we distinguish them, they are mutually strengthened, the one by the other, and so, though it seem a circle, it is a divine one, and falls not under censure of the Schools' pedantry. If you ask, How shall I do to *love*? I answer, *Believe*. If you ask, How shall I *believe*? I answer, *Love*.^{*} Although the expressions to a carnal mind are altogether unsavoury, by grossly mistaking them, yet, to a soul taught to read and hear them, by any

* 'Faith rests not on reasoning or proof, although it uses them; it sees the unseen, the invisible. It sees, because it believes; it believes, because it loves. It goes a directer way. It lives in heaven. It sees where it lives and loves. Earth-born clouds hide not its Object from it. It lives above the mists of worldly passions, cares, distractions, in the serene light of love. . . . Love, then, is the life of faith; obedience the life of love. Yea rather, Christ Himself is the life of the soul. "I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me." Christ liveth in our hearts by faith, and that presence

He promiseth to those that love Him and keep His commandments. Wouldest thou have faith and love? Wouldest thou that they should revive, grow, and be perfected? Obey. For to obedience Christ has promised His presence; and His presence is "comfort, life, and fire of love;" the fountain of holiness; the death of sin and self-love; wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption; for it is the fulness of Him in whom dwelt all the fulness of the Godhead bodily.'—Dr. Pusey's *Parochial Sermons*, 2nd ed. vol. ii. p. 301.

measure of that same Spirit of Love wherewith they were penned, they are full of heavenly and unutterable sweetness.

Many directions as to the means of begetting and increasing this love of Christ may be here offered, and they who delight in number may multiply them; but surely this one will comprehend the greatest and best part, if not all of them: *Believe, and you shall love; believe much, and you shall love much;* labour for strong and deep persuasions of the glorious things which are spoken of Christ, and this will command love. Certainly, did men indeed believe His worth, they would accordingly love Him; for the reasonable creature cannot but affect that most which it firmly believes to be worthiest of affection. Oh! this mischief of unbelief is that which makes the heart cold and dead towards GOD. Seek then to believe Christ's excellency in Himself, and His love to us, and our interest in Him, and this will kindle such a fire in the heart, as will make it ascend in a sacrifice of love to Him.

The signs likewise of this love may be multiplied, according to the many fruits and workings of it; but in them all, itself is its own most infallible evidence. When the soul finds that all its obedience and endeavour to keep the commands of Jesus Christ, which Himself makes its character, do flow from love, then it is true and sincere; for do or suffer what you will, without love, all passes for nothing; all are ciphers without it, they signify nothing, 1 Cor. xiii.

This is the message of the Gospel, and that which the ministry aims at; and therefore the ministers ought to be suitors, not for themselves, but for Christ, to espouse souls to Him, and to bring in many hearts to love Him. And certainly this is the most compendious way to persuade to all other Christian duties, for this is to converse with Jesus Christ, and where His love is, no other incentive will be needful; for love delights in the presence and converse of the person loved. If we are to persuade to duties of the second table, the sum of those is love to our brethren, resulting from the love of Christ, which diffuseth such a sweetness into the soul, that it is all love, and meekness, and gentleness, and long-suffering.

If times be for suffering, love will make the soul not only bear, but welcome the bitterest afflictions of life, and the hardest kinds of death for His sake. In a word, there is in

love a sweet constraint, or tying of the heart to all obedience and duty.

The love of GOD is requisite in ministers for their preaching of the word; so our Saviour to St. Peter, John xxi. 15, *Peter, lovest thou me? then feed my lambs.* It is requisite for the people that they *receive the truth in the love of it*,* and that Christ preached may be entertained in the soul, and embraced by faith and love.

You that have made choice of Christ for your love, let not your hearts slip out, to renew your wonted base familiarity with sin; for that will bring new bitterness to your souls, and at least for some time will deprive you of the sensible favour of your beloved Jesus. Delight always in GOD, and give Him your whole heart; for He deserves it all, and is a satisfying good to it. The largest heart is all of it too strait for the riches of consolation which He brings with Him. Seek to increase in this love; and though it is at first weak, yet labour to find it daily rise higher and higher, and burn hotter and clearer, and consume the dross of earthly desires.

Receiving the end of your faith.] Although the soul that believes and loves, is put in present possession of GOD, as far as it is capable in its sojourning here, yet it desires a full enjoyment, which it cannot attain to without removing hence. *While we are present in the body, we are absent from the Lord,* saith the Apostle. And because they are assured of that happy exchange, that being untied and freed of this body, they shall be present with the Lord, having His own word for it, that *where He is, they shall be also*; this begets such an assured hope, as bears the name of *possession*. Therefore it is said here, *Receiving the end of your faith.*

This *receiving* likewise flows from faith. Faith apprehends the present truth of the divine promises, and so makes the things to come, present: and Hope looks out to their after-accomplishment, which, if the promises be true, as faith avers, then hope hath good reason firmly to expect. This desire and hope are the very wheels of the soul which carry it on, and faith is the common axis on which they rest.

In these words there are two things: 1. The good hoped for in Christ, so believed on and loved; 2. The assuredness of

* Cf. 2 Thess. ii. 10; Eph. iv. 15, 16.

the hope itself: yea, it is as sure as if it were already accomplished.

I. As for the good hoped for, it consists: 1. In the nature of it, viz., the *salvation of their soul*; 2. In a relative property of it, *the end of their faith*.

1. The nature of it is, *salvation, and salvation of the soul*: it imports full deliverance from all kinds of misery, and the safe possession of perfect happiness, when the soul shall be out of the reach of all adversaries, and adverse accidents, no more subjected to those evils which are properly its own, namely, the conscience of sin, and fear of wrath, and sad defections; nor yet subject to those other evils which it endured by society with the body,—outward distresses and afflictions, persecutions, poverty, diseases, &c.

It is called *salvation of the soul*: not excluding the body from the society of that glory, when it shall be raised and reunited to the soul; but because the soul is of itself an immortal substance, and both the more noble part of man, and the prime subject both of grace and glory, and because it arrives first at that blessedness, and for a time leaves the body in the dust to do homage to its Original; therefore it is alone named here. But Jesus is the Saviour of the body too, and He shall, at His coming, *change our vile bodies, and make them like His glorious body*.

2. We have the relative property of this Hope,—*The end of your faith, the end or reward*; for it is both. It is the *end*, either at which faith aims, or wherein it ceaseth. It is the *reward*, not of their works, nor of faith, as a work deserving it, but as the condition of the new covenant which GOD, according to the tenor of that covenant, first works in His own, and then rewards as if it were their work. And this salvation, or fruition of Christ, is the proper reward of faith, which believes in Him unseen, and so obtains that happy sight. ‘It is the proper work of faith to believe what thou seest not, and the reward of faith to see what thou hast believed.’*

II. This is the certainty of their Hope, that it is as if they had already received it. If the promise of GOD and the merit of Christ hold good, then they who believe in Him, and love Him, are made sure of salvation. The promises of GOD in

* Fides est credere quod non vides; cujus merces est videre quod credis.—S. Aug. in S. Joh. tr. 40, § 9, et tr. 79, § 1.

Christ are not yea and nay; but they are in Him yea and in Him amen. Sooner may the rivers run backward, and the course of the heavens change, and the frame of nature be dissolved, than any one soul that is united to Christ Jesus by faith and love can be severed from Him, and so fall short of the salvation hoped for in Him; and this is the matter of their rejoicing.

Ye rejoice with joy unspeakable.] The natural man, says the Apostle, *receiveth not the things of GOD, for they are foolishness unto him; and he adds the reason why he cannot know them, for they are spiritually discerned.* He hath none of that faculty by which they are discerned. There is a vast disproportion betwixt those things and nature's highest capacity; it cannot work beyond its sphere. Speak to the natural man, of the matter of spiritual grief, the sense of guiltiness, and the apprehension of GOD'S displeasure, or the hiding of His favour and the light of His countenance from the soul; these things stir not him, he knows not what they mean. Speak to him again of the peace of conscience, and sense of GOD'S love, and the joy that arises hence; he is no less a stranger to that. *Mourn to him, and he laments not; pipe to him, and he dances not,* as our Saviour speaks, Matt. xi. 17. But as it there follows, ver. 19, there is a wisdom in these things, though they seem folly and nonsense to the foolish world, and this *wisdom is justified of her own children.*

Having said somewhat already of the causes of this spiritual joy, which the Apostle here speaks of, it remains now that we consider these two things: 1. How joy ariseth from these causes; 2. The excellency of this joy, as it is here expressed.

There is here a solid sufficient good, and the heart made sure of it, being partly put in present possession of it, and in a most certain hope of all the rest. And what more can be required to make it joyful? JESUS CHRIST, the treasure of all blessings, received and united to the soul, by faith, and love, and hope!

Is not CHRIST the Light and Joy of the nations? such a light as Abraham, at the distance of many ages, of more than two thousand years, yet saw by faith, and seeing, rejoiced. Besides this brightness, which makes light a joyful object, light is often in Scripture put for joy. CHRIST, who is this light, brings salvation with Him: He is the *Sun of Righteousness,*

and there is *healing under His wings. I bring you*, said the Angel, *good tidings of great joy, that shall be to all people.* And the Angels' song hath in it the matter of that joy, *Glory to GOD in the highest, peace on earth, and good-will toward men,* Luke ii. 10, 14.

But to the end we may rejoice in Christ, we must find Him ours; otherwise, the more excellent He is, the more cause hath the heart to be sad while it hath no portion in Him. *My spirit hath rejoiced* (said the Blessed Virgin) *in GOD my Saviour.* Luke i. 47.

Thus, having spoken of our communion with Christ, the Apostle adds, 1 John i. 4, *These things I write, that your joy may be full.* Faith worketh this joy, by uniting the soul to Christ, and applying His merits, and from that application arises the pardon of sin; and so that load of misery, which was the great cause of sorrow, is removed; and so soon as the soul finds itself lightened and unloaded of that burden which was sinking it to hell, it cannot choose but leap for joy, in the ease and refreshment it finds. Therefore that Psalm which David begins with the doctrine of the pardon of sin, he ends with an exhortation to *rejoicing: Blessed is the man whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered,* Psal. xxxii. 1: thus he begins, but he ends, *Be glad in the Lord, and rejoice, ye righteous, and shout for joy, all ye that are upright in heart.* St. Peter speaks to his hearers, of the remission of sins, Acts ii. 38, and at ver. 41 it is added, *They received his words gladly.* And our Saviour joins these two together, *Be of good comfort, thy sins are forgiven thee.* Thus, Isa. lxi. 1, good tidings of liberty to captives are proclaimed, and a notable change there is of their estate *who mourn in Zion, giving them beauty for ashes, the oil of joy for mourning, and the garment of praise for the spirit of heaviness.* Think with what joy the long imprisoned debtor, drowned in debt, receives a full discharge, and his liberty: or a condemned malefactor the news of his pardon, and this will somewhat resemble it, but yet fall far short of the joy which faith brings, by bringing Christ to the soul, and so forgiveness of sins in Him.

But this is not all. This believing soul is not only a debtor acquitted and set free, but enriched besides with a new and great estate; not only a pardoned malefactor, but withal highly

preferred and advanced to honour, having a right, by the promises, to *the unsearchable riches of Christ*, as the Apostle speaks, and is received into favour with GOD, and unto the dignity of sonship, taken *from the dunghill, and set with princes*. Psal. cxiii. 7, 8.

As there is joy from Faith, so also from Love. Though this is in itself the most sweet and delightful passion of the soul, yet, as we foolishly misplace it, it proveth often full of bitterness; but being set upon Jesus Christ, the only right and worthy object, it causeth this unspeakable delight and rejoicing.

First, It is matter of joy to have bestowed our love so worthily. When our Saviour seems to withdraw Himself, and sometimes saddens the soul that loves Him with *absences*, in regard of sense, yet even in those sad times the soul delights to love Him, and there is a pleasure in the very pains it hath in seeking after Him. And this it knows, that His mercies are everlasting and that He cannot be long unkind, but will return and speak comfortably unto it.

Secondly, Our love to Christ gives us assurance of His to us, so that we have not only chosen worthily, but shall not be frustrated and disappointed; and it assures of His, not as following, but as preceding and causing ours; for our love to Jesus Christ is no other than the reflex of His on us. *Wine maketh glad the heart*, but *Thy love is better than wine*, saith the spouse. And, having this persuasion, that He *hath loved us, and washed us in His blood*, and forgets us not in our conflicts, that though He Himself is in His glory, yet that He intercedes for us there and will bring us thither; what condition can befall us so hard but we may rejoice in it, so far as we are sure to arrive at that full salvation and the fruition of Him who hath purchased it?

Then there is the third cause of our rejoicing, viz., our *Hope*. Now hope is our *anchor fixed within the vail*, which stays us against all the storms that beat upon us in this troublesome sea that we are tossed upon. The soul that strongly believes and loves may confidently hope to see what it believes, and to enjoy what it loves, and in that it may rejoice. It may say, Whatsoever hazards, whether outward or inward, whatsoever afflictions and temptations I endure, yet this one thing

puts me out of hazard, and in that I will rejoice, that the salvation of my soul depends not upon my own strength, but is in my Saviour's hand: *My life is hid with Christ in GOD; and when He who is my life shall appear, I likewise shall appear with Him in glory.* The childish world are hunting shadows, and gaping and hoping after they know not what; but the believer can say, *I know whom I have trusted, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed to Him against that day.* Now we not only must have a right to these things, but withal there must be frequent consideration of them to produce joy. The soul must often view them, and so rejoice. *My meditation of Him shall be sweet,* saith David. *I will be glad in the Lord.* Psal. civ. 34. The godly, failing in this, deprive themselves of much of that joy they might have; and they that are most in these sublime thoughts have the highest and truest joy.

The excellency of this joy the Apostle here expresseth by these two words, *unspeakable*, and *full of glory*.

That it is *unspeakable* no wonder, seeing the matter of it is inconceivable; it is an infinite good. GOD reconciled in Jesus Christ, and testifying and sealing His love unto the soul, and giving assured hope of that BLESSED VISION of Eternity,—what more unspeakable than this? And for the same reason it is *glorious*, or glorified joy, having the highest and most glorious object; for it derives all its excellency from thence.

Unspeakable.] The best worldly joys are easily speakable; they may be expressed to the utmost, yea, usually more is spoken of them than they are indeed. Their name is beyond their worth; they are very seldom found, upon experience, equal to the opinion and expectation that men have of them. But this spiritual joy is above the report any can make of it: say what they can of it who are of happiest expression, yet when a man comes to know it in his own breast, he will say (as that queen said of Solomon's wisdom), *the half was not told me of it.*

Again, earthly joys are inglorious; many of which men are ashamed of, and those that seem most plausible yet are below the excellency of the soul, and cannot fill it: but the joys which arise from union with Christ, as they are most avowable, a man needs not blush to own them,—so they are truly contenting

and satisfying, and that is their glory and the cause why we may glory in them. *My soul shall make her boast in GOD,* says David. Psal. xxxiv. 2.

For *application* of all this. If these things were believed, we should hearken no more to the foolish prejudice which the world hath taken up against religion, and wherewith Satan endeavours to possess men's hearts, that they may be scared from the ways of holiness: they think it a sour, melancholy life, which hath nothing but sadness and mourning in it. But, to remove this prejudice,

Consider, 1. Religion bars not the lawful delights that are taken in natural things, but teaches the moderate and regular use of them, which is far the sweeter; for things lawful in themselves are in their excess sinful, and so prove bitterness in the end. And if in some cases it requires the forsaking of lawful enjoyments, as of pleasure, or profits, or honour, for God and for His glory, it is generous and truly more delightful to deny them for this reason than to enjoy them. Men have done much this way for the love of their country, and by a principle of moral virtue; but to lose any delight, or to suffer any hardship for that highest end—the glory of GOD, and by the strength of love to Him, is far more excellent and truly pleasant.

2. The delights and pleasures of sin religion indeed banishes, but it is to change them for this joy that is unspeakably beyond them. It calls men from sordid and base delights to those that are pure delights indeed: it calls to men, Drink ye no longer of the puddle, here are the crystal streams of a living fountain. There is a delight in the very despising of impure delights; as St. Augustine exclaims,* *Quàm suave est istis suavitatibus carere!* *How pleasant is it to want these pleasures!* But for such a change, to have in their stead such delights as that in comparison the other deserve not the name; to have such spiritual joy as shall end in eternal joy; it is a wonder we hasten not all to choose this joy, but it is indeed because we believe it not.

3. It is true, the godly are subject to great distresses and afflictions; but their joy is not extinguished by them, no, nor

* *Confess. ix. 2.*

diminished either, but often sensibly increased. When they have least of the world's joy, they abound most in spiritual consolations, and then relish them best. They find them sweetest when their taste is not depraved by earthly enjoyments. *We rejoice in tribulation*, says St. Paul: and here our Apostle insists on that, to verify the subsistence of this joy in the midst of the greatest afflictions.

4. Spiritual grief, which seems most opposite to this spiritual joy, prejudgeth it not, for there is a secret delight and sweetness in the tears of repentance, a balm in them that refreshes the soul; and even their saddest kind of mourning, viz., the dark times of desertion, hath this in it, which is someway sweet, that those mournings after their Beloved, who absents Himself, are a mark of their love to Him and a true evidence of it. And then all these spiritual sorrows, of what nature soever, are turned into spiritual joy; that is the proper end of them; they have a natural tendency that way.

5. But *the natural man* still doubts of this joy we speak of; because he sees and hears so little of it from them that profess to have it, and seem to have the best right to it. If we consider the wretchedness of this life, and especially the abundance of sin that is in the world, what wonder though this their joy retire much inward, and appear little abroad, where all things are so contrary to it, and so few are capable of it, to whom it were pertinent to vent it? Again, we see here, it is *unspeakable*; it were a poor thing if he that hath it could tell it all out. *Pauperis est numerare pecus.** And when the soul hath most of it, then it remains most within itself, and is so inwardly taken up with it, that possibly it can then least of all express it. It is with joys, as they say of cares and griefs, *Leves loquuntur, ingentes stupent.†* The deepest waters run stillest. *Res severa est verum gaudium,* says Seneca.‡ True joy is a solid grave thing, dwells more in the heart than in the countenance: whereas, on the contrary, base and false joys are but superficial, skin-deep (as we say); they are all in the face.

* A proverb quoted by Seneca, *Ep.* 33. Cf. Martial, xi. 41, *ult.* Theocritus mentions a covetous man first wishing that he had a thousand sheep, *mille meis essent in montibus agni*; and then, when

he has them, he would have cattle without number, *pauperis est numerare pecus.*—Spencer's *Similies*, &c. p. 317.

† Sen. *Hippol.* ii. 3, 607.

‡ *Ep.* 23.

Think not that it is with the godly, as the Prophet says of the wicked, that *there is no peace* to them.* The *Septuagint* reads it, *no joy*; certainly it is true; there is no true joy to the wicked: they may revel and make a noise, but they rejoice not; *The laughter of the fool is as the crackling of thorns under the pot*, a great noise but little heat, and soon at an end. There is no continuing feast, but that of *a good conscience*. Wickedness and real joy cannot dwell together, as the very moralist† Seneca hath it often, and at large. But he that can say, The righteousness of Jesus Christ is mine, and in Him the favour of GOD, and the hope of eternal happiness, hath such a light as can shine in the darkest dungeon, yea, in the *dark valley of the shadow of death itself*.

Say not thou, If I betake myself to the way of godliness, I must bid farewell to gladness, never a merry day more; no, on the contrary, never a truly joyful day till then, yea, no days at all, but night to the soul, till it entertain Jesus Christ, and His kingdom, which consists in *righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost*. Thou dost not sacrifice Isaac, which signifies laughter (as St. Bernard‡ has it), but a ram; not your joy, but filthy sinful delights which end in sorrow.

Oh! seek to know in your experience what those joys mean; for all describing and commending them to you will not make you understand them; but ‘taste and see that the Lord is good;’ *Lauda mellis dulcedinem quantum potes, qui non gustaverit non intelliget*, says Augustine; ‘Praise the sweetness of honey to the utmost, he who has never tasted it cannot understand it.’ You cannot see and know this goodness, but by tasting it; and

* Isa. xlvi. 22; lvii. 21.

† ‘The very moralist,’ i.e. the *true* or *sound* moralist; or it may mean—‘as even the heathen moralist.’ See Sen. *Ep.* 59, and *Ep.* 23.

‡ Oblatus siquidem Isaac sanctificatus est, non mactatus. Et tu igitur si vocem Domini audieris intus in animo, et dicatur tibi ut offeras tuum Isaac, tuum quodcumque est gaudium, immoles Deo (interpretatur enim Isaac *gaudium* seu *risus*); fideliter et constanter obedi. Ne timeas: quicquid affectio propria iudicet, securus esto: non Isaac sed aries morietur; non peribit tibi lætitia, sed contumacia, cujus utique cornua vepribus hærent, et sine punctionibus anxietatis esse non potest.

Tentat enim te Dominus Deus tuus, nec mactabitur Isaac, ut opinaris: vivens vivet, sed elevatus utique super ligna, ut sublime gaudeas; nec in carne propriâ, sed in cruce Domini glorieris, per quem nimirum crucifixus et ipse es, sed crucifixus mundo, nam ei vivis.—Hæc sanctorum vita, *tamquam tristes, semper autem gaudentes; tamquam morientes, et ecce vivimus*.—Gaufridi Abb. *Declamationes ex S. Bernardi Sermonibus collectæ*, c. 47 (*S. Bern. Opera*, Milan, 1852, vol. iii. p. 489). This seems to be a larger extract from *De Div. Serm.* 79, than the fragment so entitled. Cf. Jones of Nayland *On the Offering up of Isaac*, § 24.

having tasted it, all those poor joys you thought sweet before will then be bitter and distasteful to you.

And you that have Christ yours by believing, know your happiness, and rejoice, and glory in it. Whatsoever is your outward condition, *rejoice always, and again I say rejoice, for light is sown for the righteous, and gladness for the upright in heart.* Phil. iv. 4; Psal. xcvi. 11.

Ver. 10. Of which salvation the prophets have inquired, and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you.

11. Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when he testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven, which things the angels desire to look into.

It is the ignorance, or at least the inconsiderance of DIVINE things, that makes earthly things, whether good or evil, appear great in our eyes; therefore the Apostle's great aim is, by representing the certainty and excellency of the belief and hope of Christians to his afflicted brethren, to strengthen their minds against all discouragements and oppositions; that they may account nothing too hard to do or suffer, for so high a cause and so happy an end. It is the low and mean thoughts and the shallow persuasion we have of things that are spiritual, that is the cause of all our remissness and coldness in them. The doctrine of salvation, mentioned in the former verse as the end of our Christian faith, is illustrated in these words, from its antiquity, dignity, and infallible truth.

It is no modern invention; for the prophets inquired after it, and foretold it in former ages from the beginning. Thus the prejudice of novelty is removed, which usually meets the most ancient truth in its new discoveries.

Again, it is no mean thing that such men as were of unquestioned eminency in wisdom and holiness, did so much study and search after, and having found it out, were careful not only to publish it in their own times but to record it to posterity; and this not by the private motion of their own spirits but by the acting and guidance of the Spirit of GOD; which likewise sets the truth of their testimony above all doubtfulness and uncertainty.

But taking the three verses entirely together, we have in them these three things, testifying how excellent the doctrine of the Gospel is: 1. We have the principal author of it. 2. The matter of it. 3. The worth of those who are exercised about it, viz., the best of men, the prophets and apostles, in administering it, and the best of all the creatures, the angels, in admiring it.

I. The first author is the absolutely *first*, the Spirit of GOD in the prophets, ver. 11; in the apostles, ver. 12. *The Spirit of Christ*, in ver. 11, is the same *Spirit*, spoken of in ver. 12, that He *sent down* on His disciples after His ascending to glory, and which spoke in His prophets before His descending to the earth. It is the Spirit of Christ, proceeding jointly from Him with the Father, as He is the Son of GOD, and dwelling most richly and fully in Him as the Son of Man.

The Holy Ghost is in Himself HOLINESS, and the source and worker of holiness, and author of this holy doctrine which breathes nothing but holiness, and urges it most pressingly upon all that receive it.

This is the very life of Divine faith, touching the mysteries of salvation, firmly to believe their *revelation* by the Spirit of GOD. This the Word itself testifies, as we see; and it is really manifest in it; it carries the lively stamp of Divine inspiration, but there must be a spiritual eye to discern it. He that is blind knows not that the sun shines at noon but by the report of others; but they that see are assured they see it, and assured by no other thing but its own light. To ask one who is a true believer, How know you the Scriptures to be Divine? is the same as to ask him, How know you light to be light?

The soul is nothing but darkness and blindness within, till that same Spirit that shines without in the Word, shine likewise within it, and effectually make it light; but that once done, then is the Word read with some measure of the same Spirit by which it was written, and the soul is ascertained that it is Divine; as in bodily sight, there must be a meeting of inward light, viz., the visual spirits with the outward object.

The Spirit of GOD within brings evidence with it, and makes itself discernible in the Word; this, all arguments, all books and study cannot attain unto. *It is given to believe*, Phil. i. 29.

No man knows the things of a man but the spirit of man,

1 Cor. ii. 11. But how holds that here? For if a man speak out the things that are in his spirit, then others may know them: but the Apostle's aim there is, to conclude that the things of GOD, even such as were revealed in His word, could not be known but by His own Spirit; so that, though revealed, yet they remain still unrevealed till the Spirit teach within as well as without; because they are intelligible by none but by those who are the private scholars and hearers of the Holy Ghost, the author of them; and because there are so few of these, therefore there is so little real believing amidst all the noise and profession that we make of it. Who is there (if you will believe them) that believes not? And yet truly there is too much cause to continue the Prophet's regret, Isa. liii. 1, *Who hath believed our report.*

Learn then to suspect yourselves, and to find out your own unbelief, that you may desire this Spirit to teach you inwardly those great mysteries which He outwardly reveals and teaches by His word. Make use of that promise, and press the Lord with it, *They shall be all taught of GOD*, Isa. liv. 13, and John vi. 45.

II. There is here the *matter* of this doctrine, which we have in three several expressions: 1. That which is repeated from the foregoing verse; it is the *doctrine of salvation*, that is the end of it. 2. The *doctrine of the sufferings and glory of Christ*, as the means. And 3. The *doctrine of grace*, the spring of both.

1. It is the doctrine of *Salvation*, the only true doctrine of true Happiness, which the wisest of natural men have groped and sought after with much earnestness, but with no success; they had no other than the dark moonlight of nature, and that is not sufficient to find it out; only the Sun of Righteousness shining in the sphere of the Gospel *brings life and immortality to light*, 2 Tim. i. 10. No wonder that natural wisdom, the deepest of it, is far from finding out the true method and way of cure, seeing it cannot discover the disease of miserable mankind, viz., the sinful and wretched condition of nature by the first disobedience.

Salvation expresses not only that which is negative, but implies likewise positive and perfect Happiness; thus forgiveness of sins is put for the whole nature of justification frequently in

Scripture. It is more easy to say of this unspeakable Happiness what it is not, than what it is. There is in it a full and final freedom from all annoyance; all tears are wiped away, and their fountain is dried up; all feeling and fear, or danger, of any the least evil, either of sin or punishment, is banished for ever; there are no invasions of enemies, no robbing or destroying in all this Holy Mountain, no voice of complaining in the streets of the New Jerusalem. Here it is at the best but interchanges of mornings of joy, with sad evenings of weeping; but there, there shall be no light, no need of sun nor moon, *for the Glory of the Lord shall lighten it, and the Lamb shall be the light thereof*, Rev. xxi. 23.

Well may the Apostle (as he doth here throughout this chapter) lay this salvation to counterbalance all sorrows and persecutions, and whatsoever hardships can be in the way to it. The soul that is persuaded of this, in the midst of storms and tempests enjoys a calm, triumphs in disgraces, grows richer by all its losses, and by death itself attains this immortal life.

Happy are they who have their eye fixed upon this salvation, and are longing and waiting for it; who see so much of that brightness and glory as darkens all the lustre of earthly things to them, and makes them trample upon those things which formerly they admired and doted on with the rest of the foolish world. Those things we account so much of are but as rotten wood, or glow-worms that shine only in the night of our ignorance and vanity: so soon as the light-beam of this salvation enters into the soul, it cannot much esteem or affect anything below it; and if those glances of it which shine in the Word and in the soul of a Christian be so bright and powerful, what then shall the full sight and real possession of it be?

2. The Gospel is represented as the *doctrine of the sufferings and glory of Christ, as the means of salvation*. The worker of this salvation, whom the Prophets and Apostles make the sum of all their doctrine, is Jesus Christ, and the sum of that work of redemption (as we have it here) is His humiliation and exaltation; His sufferings, and the glory that followed thereupon. Now, though this serve as an encouragement to Christians in their sufferings, that this is the way by which their Lord went into His glory, and is true also of Christ mystical, the head with the members, as the Scriptures often teach

us ; yet I conceive it is here mainly intended as a summary of the work of our redemption by Jesus Christ, relating to the salvation mentioned, ver. 10, and as the cause for the effect, so it is put for it here. The Prophets inquired, and prophesied of that salvation. How? By searching out and foretelling the sufferings and glory of Christ. His sufferings, then, and His after glories are our salvation. His suffering is the purchase of our salvation, and His glory is our assurance of it ; He as our head having triumphed, and being crowned, makes us likewise sure of victory and triumph. His having entered on the possession of glory, makes our hope certain. This is His prayer, *That where He is there we may be also*, and this His own assertion, *The glory which Thou gavest me I have given them*, John xvii. 22, 24. This is His promise, *Because I live ye shall live also*, John xiv. 19. Christ and the believer are one ; this is that great mystery the Apostle speaks of, Eph. v. 30. Though it is a common known truth, the words and outside of it obvious to all, yet none can understand it but they who indeed partake of it. By virtue of that union, their sins were accounted His, and Christ's sufferings are accounted theirs, and by consequence, His glory, the consequent of His sufferings, is likewise theirs. There is an indissoluble connexion betwixt the life of Christ and of a believer. *Our life is hid with Christ in GOD* ; and therefore while we remain there our life is there, though hid, *and when He who is our life shall appear, we likewise shall appear with Him in glory*, Col. iii. 3, 4. Seeing the sufferings and glory of our Redeemer are the main subject of the Gospel, and the causes of our salvation, and of our comfortable persuasion of it, it is a wonder that they are not more the matter of our thoughts. Ought we not daily to consider the bitterness of that cup of wrath He drank for us, and be wrought to repentance and hatred of sin, to have sin embittered to us by that consideration, and find the sweetness of His love in that He did drink it, and by that be deeply possessed with love to Him? These things we now and then speak of, but they sink not into our minds, as our Saviour exhorts, where He is speaking of those same sufferings, Luke ix. 44. Oh ! that they were engraven on our hearts, and that sin were crucified in us, and *the world crucified to us, and we unto the world*, by the cross of Christ ! Gal. vi. 14.

And ought we not also to consider the glory wherein He is, and have our eye often upon that, and our hearts solacing and refreshing themselves frequently with the thoughts of that place and condition wherein Christ is, and where our hopes are ere long to behold Him; both to see His glory and to be glorified with Him? Is it not reasonable? Yea, it is necessary, it cannot be otherwise, if our treasure and head be there, that our hearts be there likewise, Matt. vi. 21; Col. iii. 1, 2.

3. The third expression here of the Gospel is, That *it is the doctrine of grace*. The work of redemption itself and the several parts of it, and the doctrine revealing it, have all the name of grace, because they all flow from free grace; that is their spring and first cause.

And it is this wherein the doctrine of salvation is mainly comfortable, that it is free: *Ye are saved by grace*, Eph. ii. 8. It is true, GOD requires faith, it is *through faith*; but He that requires that gives it too: *That is not of yourselves, it is the gift of GOD*, Eph. ii. 8. It is wonderful grace to save upon believing; believe in Jesus for salvation, and live accordingly, and it is done; there is no more required to thy pardon, but that thou receive it by faith. But truly nature cannot do this; it is as impossible for us of ourselves to believe as to do. This, then, is that which makes it all grace from beginning to end, that GOD not only saves upon believing, but gives believing itself. Christ is called not only the *Author and Finisher* of our salvation, but even *of our faith*, Heb. xii. 2.

Free grace being rightly apprehended, is that which stays the heart in all estates, and keeps it from fainting, even in its saddest times. What though there is nothing in myself but matter of sorrow and discomfort, it cannot be otherwise: it is not from myself that I look for comfort at any time, but from my GOD and His free grace. Here is comfort enough for all times: when I am at the best, I ought not, I dare not, rely upon myself; when I am at the worst, I may, and should rely upon Christ, and His sufficient grace. Though I be the vilest sinner that ever came to Him, yet I know He is more gracious than I am sinful; yea, the more my sin is, the more glory will it be to His grace to pardon it; it will appear the richer. Doth not David argue thus, Psal. xxv. 11, *For Thy name's sake, O Lord, pardon mine iniquity, for it is great*. But it is an empty

fruitless notion of grace, to consider it only in the general, and in a wandering way: we are to look upon it particularly, as addressed to us; and it is not enough that it comes to us in the message of him that brings it only to our ear, but, that we may know what it is, it must come into us; then it is ours indeed. But if it come to us in the message only and we send it away again, if it shall so depart, we had better never have heard of it: it will leave a guiltiness behind it, that shall make all our sins weigh much heavier than before.

Inquire whether you have entertained this grace or not; whether it be come to you, and into you, or not; whether *the kingdom of GOD is within you*, as our Saviour speaks, Luke xvii. 21. It is the most woeful condition that can be, to be *not far from the kingdom of GOD*, and yet to fall short and miss of it. The grace of GOD revealed in the Gospel is entreating you daily to receive it, is willing to become yours, if you reject it not. Were your eyes open to behold the beauty and excellency of this grace, there would need no deliberation; yea, you would endure none. Desire your eyes to be opened, and enlightened from above, that you may know it, and your hearts opened, that you may be happy by receiving it.

The Apostle, speaking of Jesus Christ as the foundation of our faith, calls Him *The same, yesterday, and to-day, and for ever*, Heb. xiii. 8. *Yesterday*, under the Law; *to-day*, in those primitive times, nearest His incarnation; and *for ever*, in all succeeding ages. And the resemblance holds good between the two Cherubim over the mercy-seat and the two Testaments: *those* had their faces toward one another, and both toward the mercy-seat; and *these* look to one another in their doctrine, agreeing perfectly, and both look to CHRIST, the true mercy-seat, and the great subject of the Scriptures. Thus we see here: the things which the Prophets foretold as to come, and the Apostles reported were accomplished, were the same, and from the same Spirit; they were the *sufferings of Christ* and *His after glory*, and in them our salvation by free grace. The prophecies look forward to the times of the Gospel; and the things then fulfilled look back to the prophecies; and each confirms the other, meeting all in CHRIST, who is their truth and centre.

III. We have spoken already of the Author and Subject of

this salvation. Now we come to say something of those who are employed about it, as well in administering to it as in admiring it. And these are, the Prophets, the Apostles, and the Angels: the first foretold what was to come, the second preached them when they came to pass, and the third admire these things and delight to look upon them.

In the Prophets, there are three things here remarked: 1. Their diligence. 2. The success of it. 3. The extent of its usefulness.

1. This their diligence disparages not their extraordinary visions and revelations, nor that which is added, that the Spirit of Christ was in them, and did foretell the things to come.

It was their constant duty, and they being sensible of their duty, made it their constant exercise, to search into Divine mysteries by meditation and prayer; yea, and by reading such holy writers as were already extant in their times, as was Daniel's practice (ch. ix. ver. 2, 3). For which cause some, taking the word actively, conceive Daniel to be called *a man of desires* (ch. ix. ver. 23; ch. x. ver. 11), because of his great desire and diligent search after the knowledge of those high things. And in this diligent way they constantly waited for those revelations, which sometimes, when it seemed good unto the Spirit of God, were imparted unto them.

'Prophecy resideth not (say the Hebrew doctors) but in a man who is great in wisdom and virtue, whose affections overcome him not in any worldly things, but by his knowledge he overcometh his affections continually: on such a man the Holy Spirit cometh down, and his soul is associated to the angels, and he is changed to another man.' Thus Maimonides.*

It was the way of the Prince of Darkness amongst the idolatrous Gentiles, to speak either through senseless statues, or where he uttered his oracles by such profane prophets as he had, to cause them in a fury† to mumble forth words which they understood not, and knew not what they said. But the Spirit of GOD, being *Light*, and the holy prophets inspired with it, they being diligent attendants on its motions, and

* Cf. J. Smith, *Disc. of Prophecy*, c. 8, p. 253.

† Thus Lucan, of the Pythian prophets: 'Instinctam sacro mentem tes-

tata furore.—*Phars.* v. 150, cf. 190; and Heraclitus describes the Sibyl as 'speaking with ecstatic mouth,' *μαινομένη στόματι*.

searchers of the mysteries of salvation, understood well what their business was, and to what purpose those things of the kingdom of Christ tended, which they by inspiration did foretell; * and therefore bended their thoughts this way, praying, and searching, and waiting for answers, studying to keep the passage, as it were, open, for the beams of those Divine revelations to come in at; not to have their spirits clogged and stopped with earthly and sinful affections, endeavouring for that calm and quiet composure of spirit, in which the voice of GOD'S Spirit might be the better heard. See Psal. lxxxv. 8, and Hab. ii. 1; in both which places follows an excellent prophecy concerning Christ and that salvation which He wrought for His people.

Were the Prophets not exempted from the pains of search and inquiry, who had the Spirit of GOD not only in a high measure, but after a singular manner? How unbeseeming, then, are slothfulness and idleness in us! Whether is it, that we judge ourselves advantaged with more of the Spirit than those holy men, or that we esteem the doctrine and mysteries of salvation, on which they bestowed so much of their labour, unworthy of ours? These are both so gross, that we shall be loth to own either of them; and yet, our laziness and negligence in searching after these things seem to charge us with some such thought as one of those.

You will say, this concerns those who succeed to the work of the Prophets and Apostles in ordinary,—the ministers of the Gospel. And it doth indeed fall first upon them. It is their task indeed to be diligent, and, as the Apostle exhorts his Timothy, to *give attendance to reading*, 1 Tim. iv. 13; but, above all, to study to have much experimental knowledge of GOD, and His Son Jesus Christ, and for this end, to disentangle and free themselves, as much as is possible, from lower things, in order to the search of heavenly mysteries. Prov. xviii. 1. As they are called *angels*,† so ought they to be, as much as

* Leighton evidently has in mind a remark of S. Chrysostom in 1 Epist. Cor. Hom. 29. Cf. also J. Smith's *Select Discourses*, p. 200. This writer, however, allows with Philo that there must be some kind of *μανία* and ecstasy in all prophecy.—c. xiii. p. 291.

† In Rev. ii., where the bishops of the

Seven Churches are called *angels*, a term equivalent to *apostles*, both words meaning *messengers* or *commissioned ministers*. Thus Hammond here observes: 'They are like *angels ascending and descending* between GOD and His people, in ruling them, in delivering messages to them, and also returning their mes-

they can attain to it, in a constant nearness unto GOD, and attendance on Him, like unto the angels, and to look much into these things as the angels here are said to do; to endeavour to have their souls purified from the affections of sin, that the light of Divine truth may shine clear in them, and not be fogged, and misted with filthy vapours: to have the impressions of GOD clearly written in their breasts, not mixed and blurred with earthly characters; seasoning all their readings and common studies with much prayer, and divine meditation. They who converse most with the king, and are inward with him, know most of the affairs of state, and even the secrets of them, which are hid from others: and certainly those of GOD's messengers who are oftenest with Himself, cannot but understand their business best, and know most of His meaning, and the affairs of His kingdom; and to that end it is confessed, that singular diligence is required in them. But seeing the Lord hath said without exception, that *His secret is with them that fear Him*, Psal. xxv. 14, and that He will reveal Himself and His saving truths to those that humbly seek them; do not, any of you, yourselves so much injury, as to debar yourselves from sharing in your measure of the search of these same things, which were the study of the prophets, and which by their study and publishing them, are made the more accessible and easy to us. Consider that they do concern us universally, if we would be saved; for it is salvation here that they studied. *Search the Scriptures*, says our Saviour, John v. 39, and that is the motive, if there can be any that may be thought in reason pressing enough, or if we do indeed think so, *for in them ye think ye have eternal life.** And it is there to be found: Christ is this

sages or prayers to God.' And Bishop Andrews: 'Priests are *angeli Domini exercituum*. If angels, then they must not only *descend* to the people to teach them the will of God; but *ascend* to

the presence of God to make intercession for the people.'—*Serm.* vol. v. p. 355. See also Hooker, *E. P.* vii. 24. 15; and the well-known lines in the *Christian Year*:—

'But chiefly ye should lift your gaze
Above the world's uncertain haze,
And look with calm unwavering eye
On the bright fields beyond the sky;
Ye, who your Lord's commission bear,
His way of mercy to prepare:
Angels He calls ye: be your strife
To lead on earth an angel's life.'

* This would be a strange motive to attach to such a command, *search because ye think*, &c. The word in the original, *Ἐπειὶ ἵνα*, is indicative as well

salvation and this *eternal life*. And He adds further, *it is they* (these Scriptures) *that testify of me*. These are the golden mines in which alone the abiding treasures of eternity are to be found, and therefore worthy all the digging and pains we can bestow on them.

Besides their *industry* in this inquiry and search, there are here expressed their ardent affection to the thing they prophesied of, and their longings and wishes for its accomplishment, viz., the coming of Jesus Christ, the promised Messiah, the top of all their desires, the great hope and the light of Israel. No wonder they *desired His day*, who had so much joy in the seeing it so far off, as over the head almost of two thousand years. Faith overlooking them, and foreseeing it so in Abraham, his heart danced for joy.* John viii. 56, *Abraham saw my day and rejoiced*.

And this is conceived to be the meaning of those expressions in that mystical Song of Solomon, as they suit those times of the Jewish church, breathing out her longings for the coming of her beloved. His speaking by the Prophets was His voice as afar off; but His INCARNATION was His coming near, and kissing His church *with the kisses of His mouth*. Cant. i. 2, ii. 8. And to omit other expressions throughout the Song, the last chapter, ver. 1, is tender and pathetic, † *O! that Thou wert as my brother, &c.*; and the last words of it, *make haste, my beloved, and be thou like a young roe or a young hart upon the mountains of spices*. And when this salvation came in the fulness of time, we see how joyfully good old Simeon embraces it, and thought he had seen enough, and therefore upon the sight desired to have his eyes closed: *Now let Thy servant depart in peace, for mine eyes have seen Thy salvation*, Luke ii. 29. Therefore our Saviour says to His Apostles, Matt. xiii. 16, *Blessed are your eyes for they see, for many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them*. This is He whom we disesteem and make so small account of, being now so clearly revealed,

as imperative, and ought to be translated *ye search*. The construction with the indicative *δοκείτε*, and the whole sense and scope of the passage, show that the imperative mood is not here intended.

* This alludes to the force of the

word *ἠγαλλιάσατο*. *Abraham*, says our Lord, *was transported with desire to see my day*,—he leaped up in the joyful eagerness of faith to get a glimpse of it, *and he saw it and rejoiced*.

† i.e. passionate or impassioned.

whom they studied, and sought, and wished so much for, so many ages before.

2. The *success* of their search is remarked; in seeking they found the certainty and the time of His coming; they sought out till they found, and then they prophesied of that salvation and grace; *they searched what, and what manner of time*, and the Spirit did manifestly foretell it them.

They sought to know *what manner of time* it should come to pass, viz., in a time of great distress, and bad estate of the people, as all the Prophets testify; and particularly that place, Gen. xlix. 10, gives an express character of the time; though there be some diversity of exposition of the particular words, yet the main sense is agreed on by all sound interpreters, and the Chaldee paraphrase hath it expressly, that that Shiloh is the Messiah.

And of His sufferings and after glories they prophesied very clearly, as Psal. xxii., Isa. liii., &c. And our Saviour Himself makes use of their testimony in both these points, Luke xxiv. 25-27.

3. There is the benefit of their search and finding, in the *extent* of it, verse 12, to the believers in the Apostles' times, and to the succeeding Christian Church, and so to us in these days; but in some peculiar sense the Prophets ministered to the people of those times wherein Christ did suffer and enter into glory, inasmuch as they were the first who enjoyed the accomplishment of those prophecies, they being fulfilled in their own days.

The Prophets knew well that the things they prophesied were not to be fulfilled in their own times, and therefore in their prophesying concerning them, though both themselves and the people of GOD who were contemporary with them did reap the comfort of that doctrine, and were by faith partakers of the same salvation, and so it was to themselves as well as *to us* they did minister; yet in regard of the accomplishment, they knew it was *not to themselves*, it was not to be brought to pass in their days; and therefore, speaking of the glory of Christ's kingdom, they often foretell it for *the latter days*, as their phrase is. And as we have the things they prophesied of, so we have this peculiar benefit of their prophecies, that

their suiting so perfectly with the event and performance serves much to confirm our Christian faith.

There is a foolish and miserable way of verifying this expression,—men ministering the doctrine of salvation to others and *not to themselves*; carrying it all in their heads and tongues, and none of it in their hearts; not hearing it even while they preach it; extending the bread of life to others, and eating none of it themselves.* And this the Apostle says that he was most careful to avoid, and therefore dealt severely with his body, that it might not in this way endanger his soul: *I beat down my body, says he, and keep it in subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a cast-away,* 1 Cor. ix. 27. It is not in this sense that the Prophets ministered to others, and *not to themselves*. No, they had joy and comfort in the very hopes of the Redeemer to come, and in the belief of the things which any others had spoken, and which themselves spake concerning Him. And thus the true preachers of the Gospel, though their ministerial gifts are for the use of others, yet that salvation which they preach they lay hold on and partake of themselves; as your boxes, wherein perfumes are kept for garments and other uses, are themselves perfumed by keeping them.

We see how the Prophets ministered it as the great and never-failing consolation of the Church in those days, in all their distresses. It is wonderful, when they are foretelling either the sorrows and afflictions, or the temporal restoration and deliverances of that people of the Jews, what sudden out-leaps they will make, to speak of the kingdom of Jesus Christ and the days of the Gospel, insomuch that he who considers not the Spirit they were moved by, would think it were incoherence and impertinency; but they knew well what they meant, that those news were never unseasonable, nor beside the purpose, that the sweetness of those thoughts, viz., the consideration of the Messiah, was able (to such as believed) to allay the bitterest distresses, and that the great deliverance He was to work was the top and sum of all deliverances. Thus their prophecies of Him were present comfort to themselves and other believers then: and further, were to serve for a clear

* Cf. Expository Lecture on Isaiah vi. 9, and Ecclus. xxxvii. 19. 'There is one that is wise, and teacheth many, and yet is unprofitable to himself.'

evidence of the Divine truth of those mysteries in the days of the Gospel, in and after their fulfilment.

This sweet stream of their doctrine did, as a river, make its own banks fertile and pleasant as it ran by, and flowed still forward to after ages, and by the confluence of more such prophecies, grew greater as it went, till it fell in with the main current of the Gospel in the New Testament, both acted and preached by the Great Prophet Himself whom they foretold to come, and recorded by His apostles and evangelists, and thus united into one river, clear as crystal. This doctrine of salvation in the Scriptures hath still refreshed the city of GOD, His Church under the Gospel, and still shall do so, till it empty itself into the ocean of eternity.*

The first discovery we have of this stream nearest its source, the eternal purpose of Divine mercy, is in that promise which the LORD Himself preached in few words to our first parents, who had newly made themselves and their race miserable: *The seed of the woman shall break the head of the serpent*, Gen. iii. 15.

The agreement of the predictions of the Prophets with the things themselves, and the preaching of the Apostles following, (the other kind of men employed in this salvation), make up one organ, or great instrument, tuned by the same hand, and sounding by the same breath of the Spirit of GOD; and that is expressed here, as the common authority of the doctrine in both, and the cause of their harmony and agreement in it. And all these extraordinary *gifts of the Holy Ghost*, the calling of prophets, and apostles, and evangelists, and the ordinary ministry of the Gospel by *pastors and teachers*, tend to that great design which GOD hath in *building His church*, viz., of

* 'In the whole course of my studies,' says Coleridge, 'I do not remember to have read so beautiful an allegory as this; so various and detailed, and yet so just and natural.'

Leighton alludes to that river we read of in Genesis, which 'went out of Eden to water the Garden, and from thence was parted and became into four heads;' and which we again read of in the Revelation, as one river, restored to the unity which is in God, and making glad the City of God,—'a river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of

the throne of God and of the Lamb.' The early Church understood this river to mean the Gospel of Christ sent into the four corners of the world and contained in the writings of the four Evangelists. Thus S. Jerome: 'Quemadmodum unus Fluvius erat Paradisi, qui in quatuor capita dividitur; ita unica Christi evangelica doctrina per quatuor ministros ad irrigandum et fœcundandum ecclesiæ hortum est distributa.—*Ep. ad Euseb.* Cf. S. Aug. *De Civ. Dei*, l. xiii. c. 21, and Durandus, *Rationale*, vii. 46.

making up that great assembly of all the elect, to enjoy and praise Him for all eternity, Eph. iv. 11. For this end He sent His Son out of His bosom, and for this end He sends forth His messengers to divulge that salvation which His Son hath wrought, and sends down His Spirit upon them, that they may be fitted for so high a service.

We next come to consider the Angels who are employed about this salvation, not only in administering to it, but also in admiring it. The cherubim wonder how guilty man escapes their flaming swords, and re-enters paradise. The angels see that their companions who fell are not restored, but behold their room filled up with the spirits of just men, and they envy it not: *Which mystery the Angels desire to look into*; and this is added in the close of these words for the extolling of it.

The angels look upon what they have seen already fulfilled with delight and admiration, and what remains, namely, the full accomplishment of this great work in the end of time, they look upon with desire to see it finished; it is not a slight glance they take of it, but they fix their eyes and looks steadfastly on it, viz., that *mystery of godliness, GOD manifested in the flesh*; and it is added, *seen of angels*, 1 Tim. iii. 16.

The Word made flesh, draws the eyes of those glorious spirits, and possesses them with wonder to see the ALMIGHTY GODHEAD joined with the weakness of a man, yea, of an infant. He that stretcheth forth the heavens bound up in swaddling clothes! and to surpass all the wonders of His life, this is beyond all admiration, that the Lord of life was subject to death, and that His love to rebellious mankind moved Him both to take on and lay down that life.

It is no wonder the Angels admire these things, and delight to look upon them; but it is strange that we do not so. They view them steadfastly, and we neglect them: either we consider them not at all, or give them but a transient look, half an eye. That which was the great business of the Prophets and Apostles, both for their own times, and to convey them to us, we regard not; and turn our eyes to foolish wandering thoughts, which Angels are ashamed at. They are not so concerned in this great mystery as we are; they are but mere beholders, in comparison of us, yea, they seem rather to be losers some way,

in that our nature, in itself inferior to theirs, is in Jesus Christ exalted above theirs, Heb. ii. 16. They look up upon the DEITY in itself with continual admiration; but then they look down into this mystery as another wonder. We bow down to the earth, and study, and grovel in it, rake into the very bowels of it, and content ourselves with the outside of *the unsearchable riches of Christ*, and look not within it; but they, having no will nor desire but for the glory of GOD, being pure flames of fire burning only in love to Him, are no less delighted than amazed with the bottomless wonders of His wisdom and goodness shining in the work of our redemption.

It is our shame and our folly, that we lose ourselves and our thoughts in poor childish things, and trifle away our days we know not how, and let these rich mysteries lie unregarded. We give them an ear in public, and in a cold formal way stop conscience's mouth with some religious performances in private, and no more; but to have deep and frequent thoughts and to be ravished in the meditation of our Lord Jesus, once on the cross and now in glory,—how few of us are acquainted with this!

We see here excellent company, and examples not only of the best of men that have been,—we have them for fellow-servants and fellow-students,—but, if that can persuade us, we may all study the same lesson with the very Angels, and have the same thoughts with them. This the soul doth, which often entertains itself with the delightful admiration of Jesus Christ and the redemption He hath wrought for us.

Ver. 13. Wherefore, gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ.

THE great error of man's mind, and the cause of all his errors of life, is the diverting of the soul from GOD, and turning downward to inferior confidences and comforts; and this mis-choice is the very root of all our miseries; therefore the main end of the holy Word of GOD is to untie the hearts of men from the world, and reduce them to GOD as their only rest and solid comfort; and this is here the Apostle's mark at which all the preceding discourse aims; it all meets and

terminates in this exhortation, *Wherefore, gird up the loins of your mind, &c.*

In the words are these *three* things: 1. The great stay and comfort of the soul, which the Apostle repeats and represents to his afflicted brethren. 2. His exciting them to the right apprehension and confident expectation of it. 3. The inference of that exhortation.

I. The great matter of their comfort is, *The grace which is to be brought to them at the revelation of Jesus Christ.* Some for *grace* read *joy*, having as it seems, for $\chi\acute{\alpha}\rho\iota\varsigma$ read $\chi\alpha\rho\acute{\alpha}\nu$; the words are not more near one to another than the things they signify, *grace* and *joy*; but it is most commonly thus read.

The estate of Grace and that of Glory are not only so inseparably connected, but so like one to the other, yea, so essentially the same, that the same expressions in Scripture do often fit both of them; and so fit them, that it is doubtful for which of the two to understand them: but the hazard is not great, seeing they are so near, and so one, grace being glory begun, and glory grace completed, and both are often called *the kingdom of GOD.* So the *grace* here said to be *brought to them*, is either the *doctrine of grace* in the Gospel, wherein Jesus Christ is revealed, and that grace in Him; (for the whole tenor of the covenant of grace, every clause of it, holds in Him; His precious name runs through it all;) or, it is the *grace of salvation* which is to be fully perfected at the last and clearest revelation of Jesus Christ. And for this rather I take it here, inasmuch as the Apostle's nearest foregoing words were concerning it, and it is set up here as the object of hope, which, though often put for faith, yet, in its proper notion, looks out to that which is to come.

This is the last act of Grace, and yet still it is called by its own name, and not turned into the name of *Merit*, notwithstanding all the obedience and all the sufferings of the saints that have gone before it; yea, even *the salvation to be revealed* to them is called grace. But it is needless to insist on this, for certainly none who partake of grace will be of another mind, or ever admit the mixture of the least notion of self-deserving.

Though much dispute hath been bestowed on this, and ques-

tions have been multiplying in the disputants' hands, (as is usual in controversies,) one growing out of another, yet truly I think the debate in this matter to be but waste; it is not only against the voice of the Scriptures and of Grace itself in the soul, but even against sound reason, to imagine any *meriting*, properly taken, in any mere creature at his Creator's hands, who hath given him his being; of which gift all his services and obedience fall short, so that he can never come to be upon even disengaged terms, much less to oblige anew, and deserve somewhat further. Besides, that same grace by which anyone serves and obeys GOD is likewise His own gift, as it is said, 1 Chron. xxix. 14, *All things come of Thee, and of Thine own have I given Thee.* Both the ability and the will of giving to Him, are from Him; so that in these respects, not angels, nor man in innocency, could properly merit at the hands of GOD, much less man lost, redeemed again, and so coming under the new obligation of infinite mercy. And this is so evident a truth, that the most learned and most ingenuous Jesuits and Schoolmen have in divers passages of their writings acknowledged it, that there cannot be any compensation, and much less merit from the creature to GOD, but only in relation to His own free purpose, and the tenor of His word and covenant, which is inviolable, because He is unchangeable and truth itself.

His first grace He gives freely, and no less freely the increases of it, and with the same gracious hand sets the crown of glory upon all the grace that He hath given before. It is but the following forth of His own work, and fulfilling His own thoughts of free love, which love hath no cause but in Himself, and finds none worthy, but gives them all the worthiness they have, and accepts of their love, not as worthy in itself to be accepted, but because He Himself hath wrought it in them. Not only the first tastes, but the full draught of the waters of life is freely given, Rev. xxii. 17; nothing is brought with them but *thirst*.

That is to be brought.] Not *that is brought*, or *that shall be brought*, but, if we will render it strictly, it is, *that is a bringing to you.* That blessedness, that consummation of grace the saints are hastening forward to, walking on in their way wheresoever it lies, indifferently *through honour and dishonour*,

through evil report and good report, 2 Cor. vi. 8. And as they are hastening to it, it is hastening to them in the course of time; every day brings it nearer to them than before; and notwithstanding all difficulties and dangers in the way, they who have their eye and hopes upon it shall arrive at it, and it shall be brought safe to their hand; all the malice of men and devils shall not be able to cut them short of this grace that is a bringing to them against the day of the *revelation of Jesus Christ.*

At the revelation of Jesus Christ.] This is repeated from the 7th verse. And it is termed *a day of revelation, a revelation of the just judgment of GOD, Rom. ii. 5.* And thus it would be to all, were it not that it is withal the *revelation of Jesus Christ*; therefore it is a day of grace, all light and blessedness to them who are in Him, because they shall appear in Him, and if He be glorious, they shall not be inglorious and ashamed. Indeed, were our secret sins then to be set before our own eyes in their most affrightful visage, and to be set open to the view of angels and men, and to the eye of Divine justice, and we left alone so revealed, who is there that could gather any comfort, and would not rather have their thoughts filled with horror at the remembrance and expectation of that day? And thus indeed all unbelieving and ungodly men may look upon it, and find it terrible; but to those who are shadowed under the robe of righteous Jesus, yea, who are made one with Him and shall partake of His glory in His appearing, it is the sweetest, the most comfortable thought that their souls can be entertained and possessed withal, to remember this glorious revelation of their Redeemer.

It is their great grief here, not that themselves are hated and vilified, but that their Lord Jesus is so little known, and therefore so much despised in the world. He is veiled and hid from the world. Many nations acknowledge Him not at all; and many of those that do in word confess, yet in deed deny Him. Many that have *a form of godliness*, do not only want, but mock and scoff at *the power of it*; and to such Christ is not known, His excellencies are hid from their eyes. Now this glory of their Lord being precious to them that love Him, they rejoice much in the consideration of this, that there is a day at hand, wherein He shall appear in His bright and full

glory to all nations, and all shall be forced to acknowledge Him; it shall be without doubt and unquestioned to all, that He is *the Messiah, the Redeemer, the Judge of the World.*

And as it is the day of His revelation, it is also the revelation of all the adopted sons of GOD in Him. See Rom. viii. 9. They are now accounted the refuse of the world, exposed to all kinds of contempt; but then the beams of Christ's glory shall beautify them, and they shall be known for His. See I John iii. 2; Col. iii. 4.

II. Next, there is the exhortation itself, by which the Apostle excites them to the right appreciation and confident expectation of this grace—*Hope to the end.* The difference of these two graces, *faith* and *hope*, is so small, that the one is often taken for the other in Scripture; it is but a different aspect of the same confidence, *faith* apprehending the infallible truth of those Divine promises of which *hope* doth assuredly expect the accomplishment, and that is their truth; so that this immediately results from the other. This is the *anchor fixed within the vail*, which keeps the soul firm against all the tossings on these swelling seas, and the winds and tempests that arise upon them. The firmest thing in this inferior world is a believing soul.

Faith establishes the heart on Jesus Christ, and Hope lifts it up, being on that rock, over the head of all intervenient dangers, crosses, and temptations, and sees the glory and happiness that follow after them.

To the end.] Or *perfectly* (τελειως): and therefore the Christian seeks most earnestly, and yet waits most patiently, Psal. cxxx. 6. Indeed, this hope is perfect in continuance, it is a *hope unto the end*, because it is perfect in its nature, although imperfect in degree. Sometimes doubtings are intermixed with it in the souls of Christians, *yet this is their infirmity*, as the Psalmist speaks (Psal. lxxvii. 10), not the infirmity and insufficiency of the object of their hope. Worldly hopes are in their own nature imperfect; they do imply in their very being doubtfulness and wavering, because the things whereon they are built are inconstant and uncertain, and full of deceit and disappointments. How can that hope be immovable which is built upon moving sands or quagmire? That which is itself unfixed cannot give stability to any other thing resting upon

it; but because the truth and goodness of the immutable GOD are the foundation of spiritual hope, therefore it is assured, and like *Mount Zion that cannot be removed* (Psal. cxxv. 1): and this is its perfection.

Now the Apostle exhorts his brethren to endeavour to have their hearts possessed with as high a measure and degree of this hope as may be; seeing in itself it is so perfect and firm, so assured an hope, he would have them aspire to all the assurance and perfection of it they can attain.

This exercise of Hope, as I conceive, is not only to have the habit of it strong in the soul, but to act it often, to be often turning that way, to view that approaching day of liberty: *Lift up your heads, for the day of your redemption draweth nigh*, Luke xxi. 28. Where this hope is often acted it will grow strong, as all habits do, and where it is strong it will work much and delight to act often, and will control both the doubtings and the other many impertinent thoughts of the mind, and force them to yield the place to it. Certainly, they who long much for that coming of Christ will often look out for it. We are usually hoping after other things, which do but offer themselves to draw us after them, and to scorn us. What are the breasts of most of us but so many nests of foolish hopes and fears intermixed, which entertain us day and night, and steal away our precious hours from us, that might be laid out so gainfully upon the wise and sweet thoughts of eternity, and upon the blessed and assured hope of the coming of our beloved Saviour!

Gird up the loins of your mind and be sober, or watch.] The other words of exhortation here used are subservient to this end, that this Hope may be the more perfect and firm; a similar exhortation is much after the same manner joined by our Saviour (Luke xii. 35) with the expectance and waiting for His coming; and in this posture the Israelites, eating the passover, were expecting their deliverance, Exod. xii. 11; so we our full and final freedom.

If you would have much of this Hope, call off your affections from other things, that they may be capable of much of it. The same eye cannot both look up to Heaven and down to earth at the same time. The more your affections are trussed up, and disentangled from the world, the more expedite and

active will they be in this hope: the more sober they are, the less will they fill themselves with the coarse delights of earth, the more room will there be in them, and the more they shall be filled with this hope. It is great folly in our spiritual warfare to charge ourselves superfluously. The fulness of one thing hinders the receiving and admittance of any other, especially of things so opposite as these fulnesses are. *Be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess, but be ye filled with the Holy Ghost*, saith the Apostle, Eph. v. 18. That is a brutish fulness, which makes a man no man; *this* Divine fulness makes him more than a man; it were happy to be so filled with this, as that it might be called a kind of drunkenness, as it was with the Apostles, Acts ii.*

Be sober.] Or *watch*. The same word (*νήφοντες*) signifies both, and with good reason; for you know the unsobber cannot watch. Now though one main part of sobriety, and that which more properly and particularly bears this name, viz., *temperance* in meat and drink, is here intended; and though against the opposite to this not only the purity and spirituality of religion, but even moral virtue inveighs as its special enemy, yea, nature itself; and they that only naturally consider the body and its interest of life and health, find reason enough to cry down this base intemperance, which is so hateful by its own deformity, and withal carries its punishment along with it; although (I say) this sobriety is indeed most necessary for the preservation of grace and of the spiritual temper of the soul, and is here intended, yet, I conceive, it is not all that is here meant; the word is more general, comprehending the moderate and sober

* 'Drunken, but not with wine.'—Isa. li. 21. The nature of ecstasy, observes S. Francis de Sales, is to transport man out of himself, and the ancient philosophers distinguish two kinds of ecstasy, namely, *sensual* and *spiritual*. For man may be out of himself either by being above or below himself; and in their highest degree the outward resemblance may in each case be the same. Thus when *Hannah spake in her heart, and poured out her soul before the Lord, Eli thought she had been drunken*: to the world the Prophets and Apostles, and even our Lord Himself, seemed beside themselves: S. Paul in his rapture knew not *whether he were in the body or out of the body*. Holy

Scripture therefore contrasts, as having some points of resemblance, being *drunken with wine* and being *filled with the Spirit*. The one raises us above the condition of man to that of angels, the other degrades us to the level of the brute creatures. They who experience heavenly or spiritual ecstasy are like Elias, rapt on high in a chariot of fire amongst the angels; while the subjects of sensual ecstasy are like Nebuchadnezzar, embroiled and reduced to the condition of wild beasts. See *Traité de l'Amour de Dieu*, l. i. c. 10; and l. vii. c. 4. See also S. Macarius on 'Divine Love,' *Opusc.* vi. 15; G. Penn's ed. p. 158.

use of all things worldly. As the Apostle says, *Gird up the loins of your mind*, so it is to be understood; let your *minds* be sober, all your affections inwardly attempered to your spiritual condition, not glutting yourselves with fleshly and perishing delights of any kind; for the more you take in of these the less you shall have of spiritual comfort and of this perfect hope. They that pour out themselves upon present delights look not like *strangers* here,* and hopeful expectants of another life and better pleasures.

And certainly, the Captain of our salvation will not own them for His followers, who lie down to drink of these waters, but only such as in passing take of them with their hand.† As excessive eating or drinking both makes the body sickly and lazy, fit for nothing but sleep, and besots the mind, clogs up with filthy crudities the way through which the spirits should pass, bemires them, and makes them move heavily, as a coach in a deep way; thus doth all immoderate use of the world and its delights wrong the soul in its spiritual condition, makes it sickly and feeble, full of spiritual distempers and inactivity, benumbs the graces of the Spirit, and fills the soul with sleepy vapours, makes it grow secure and heavy in spiritual exercises, and obstructs the way and motion of the Spirit of GOD in the soul. Therefore, if you would be spiritual, healthful, and vigorous, and enjoy much of the consolations of Heaven, be sparing and sober in those of the earth, and what you abate of the one shall be certainly made up in the other. Health, with a good constitution of body, is more a constant, permanent pleasure than that of excess and a momentary pleasing of the palate: thus, the comfort of this hope is a more refined and more abiding contentment than any that is to be found in the passing enjoyments of this world; and it is a foolish bargain to exchange a drachm of the one for many pounds of the other. Consider how pressingly the Apostle St. Paul reasons, 1 Cor. ix. 25, *And every man that striveth for the mastery is temperate in all things*. And take withal our Saviour's exhortation: *Be sober and watch, for ye know not at what hour your Lord will come*, Matt. xxv. 13.

* It is to be borne in mind that the Epistle is addressed *To the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, &c.*

† An allusion to God's trial of Gideon's troops, Judges vii. 5-7.

The double-minded man (says St. James) *is unstable in all his ways*, Ep. i. 8. Although the word usually signifies deceitfulness and dissimulation of mind,—answering to the Hebrew phrase, *a heart and a heart*,—yet here I conceive it hath another sense, agreeable to the Apostle's present discourse and scope; it implies doubtfulness and unsettled wavering of mind.*

It is impossible that the course of life can be any other than uneven and uncomposed, if the spring of it, *the heart*, whence *are the issues of life*, be so. A man that is not agreed within, not of one mind with himself, although there were nothing to trouble or alter him from without, that inward commotion is a sufficient principle and cause of inconstancy. How much more then must he waver when he is assaulted and beat upon by outward oppositions! He is *like the waves of the sea*, of himself ever fluctuating to and fro, according to the natural instability of that element, and at the same time exposed to the tossings of all the waves that arise.

It is, therefore, in religion a main thing to have the heart established and fixed in the belief and hope of the great things we look for: this will beget strength of resolution, and constancy in action, and in suffering too. And this is here our Apostle's great intent, to ballast the souls of his brethren with this firm belief, that they might sail even and steady in those seas of trouble. Wherefore (says he), if these things we have spoken be thus, if there be indeed truth in them, and you believe it to be so, what remains then but to resolve for the enterprise upon any terms, to fit out for the journey, whatsoever be the difficulties, and amid them all to keep up the soul by that certain hope that will not disappoint us?

What he hath said before is, as it were, showing them some fruits, some clusters of grapes, of that promised land; and this exhortation is answerable to Caleb's words, Numb. xiii. 30, *Seeing it is so good a land, let us go up and possess it*. Though there be fleshly objects, *sons of Anak*, giants of temptations and afflictions, and sins to be overcome, ere it be ours, yet it is well worth all our labour, and our GOD hath ascertained us of the victory, and given us by His own word undoubted hope of possessing it.

* See *δίψυχος* in Parkhurst and Rose's Lexicon, where this opinion is confirmed.

That which he principally exhorts unto in this verse is the right placing and firm continuing of our hope. When we consider how much of our life is taken up this way, in hoping for things we have not, and that even they who have most of what others are desiring and pursuing, are still hoping for somewhat further, that when men have attained one thing, though it be something they promised themselves to rest contented withal, yet presently, upon obtaining it, Hope begins to find out some new matter for itself; I say, considering the incessant working of this passion throughout our life, it is of very much concernment for us to give it a right object, and not still to be living in vanity and uncertainty. Here is, then, that for our hope to apply itself to, after which it needs not change, nor can change without the greatest loss. *Hope for the grace that is coming at the revelation of Jesus Christ; bestow all your hope on this, and recall it not. Hope perfectly, and to the end.**

The other part of the exhortation relates to this as the main end, and in the original runs in this form: *Wherefore, girding up the loins of your mind, being sober, hope.* And to the end that hope may be the more *perfect* and *endure to the end*, and be more like itself, i.e., heavenly, your minds must be freed from the earth, that they may set for Heaven. And this is expressed in two several words, but both meaning much the same thing: that temper of *sobriety*, and that posture of being *girt*, are no other than the same removal of earthly-mindedness and incumbering cares and desires of earthly things.

Gird up the loins.] The custom of those countries was, that wearing long garments, they trussed them up for work or a journey. Chastity is indeed a Christian grace, and a great part of the soul's freedom and spiritualness, and fits it much for Divine things, yet I think it is not so particularly and entirely intended in this expression as St. Jerome and others take it; for though the girding of *the loins* seemed to them to favour that sense, it is only an allusion to the manner of girding up which was then used; and besides, the Apostle here makes it clear that he meant somewhat else; for he says, *The loins of your minds.* Gather up your affections that they hang not down to hinder you in your race, and so in your hopes of ob-

* The Greek is *τελείως ἐπίσταντε*, which, as may be seen in the margin of our version, may be translated *hope perfectly*, or *hope to the end*.

taining; and do not only gather them up, but tie them up, that they fall not down again, or, if they do, be sure to gird them straiter than before. Thus be still as men prepared for a journey, tending to another place. This is not our home, nor the place of our rest: therefore our loins must be still girt up, our affections kept from training* and dragging down upon the earth.

Men who are altogether earthly and profane, are so far from girding up the loins of their mind, that they set them wholly downwards. The very highest part of their soul is glued to the earth, and they are daily partakers of the serpent's curse, they go on their belly and eat the dust: *they mind earthly things*, Phil. iii. 19. Now this disposition is inconsistent with grace; but they that are in some measure truly godly, though they grovel not so, yet may be somewhat guilty of suffering their affections to fall too low, that is, to be too much conversant with vanity, and further engaged than is meet to some things that are worldly; and by this means they may abate of their heavenly hopes, and render them less perfect, less clear and sensible to their souls.

And because they are most subject to take this liberty in the fair and calm weather of prosperity, GOD doth often wisely and mercifully cause rough blasts of affliction to arise upon them, to make them gather their loose garments nearer to them, and gird them closer.

Let us then remember our way, and where we are, and keep our garments girt up, for we walk amidst thorns and briars which, if we let them down, will entangle and stop us, and possibly tear our garments. We walk through a world where there is much mire of sinful pollutions, and therefore it cannot but defile them; and the crowd we are among will be ready to tread on them, yea, our own feet may be entangled in them, and so make us stumble, and possibly fall. Our only safest way is to gird up our affections wholly.†

* *Training* = trailing.

† Bishop Hall says: '*Ungirt, unblest*, was the old word amongst our forefathers; as not ready till they were girded, so not till they had prayed: and how dare we rush into the affairs of God or the State; how dare we thrust ourselves into actions

either perilous or important without ever lifting up our eyes and hearts to the God of Heaven?'—*Christ Transfigured*. Sir T. Browne observes: 'Many conceive there is somewhat amiss, and that (as we usually say) they are *unblest, until they put on their girdle*. Wherein, although most know not what

III. The Apostle's exhortation is the inference which he draws from all the doctrine of his preceding discourse: *Wherefore, hope perfectly and to the end.* This perfect Hope is enforced by the whole strain of it: for well may we fix our hope on that Happiness to which we are appointed in the eternal election of GOD, ver. 2, and born to it by our new birth, ver. 3, 4, and preserved to it by His almighty power, ver. 5, and cannot be cut short of it by all the afflictions and oppositions in the way; no, nor so much as deprived by them of our present joy and comfort in the assurance of it, ver. 6, 7, 8, 9. And then, being taught the greatness and excellency of that blessed salvation by the doctrine of the Prophets and Apostles, and the admiration of Angels, all these conspire to confirm our hope, to make it perfect and persevering to the end.

And we may also learn by the foregoing doctrine, that this is the place of our trial and conflict, but the place of our rest is above. We must here have *our loins girt*, but when we come there, we may wear our long *white robes* at their full length without disturbance, for there is nothing there but peace, and without danger of defilement, for *no unclean thing is there*, yea, the streets of that new Jerusalem are paved with *pure gold*. To Him then, who hath prepared that city for us, let us ever give praise.

Ver. 14. As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts, in your ignorance.

15. But as He which hath called you is Holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation.

16. Because it is written, Be ye holy, for I am holy.

Thy word is a lamp unto my feet, says David, *and a light unto my paths*, Psal. cxix. 105: not only comfortable, as light

they say, there are involved unknown considerations. For by a *girdle* or *cincture* are symbolically implied truth, resolution, and readiness unto action, which are virtues required in the service of GOD. According whereto we find that the Israelites did eat the paschal lamb with their loins girded; so the High-priest was girt with the girdle of fine linen; and so it is said of our Saviour, "Righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins."—Vol. ii. p. 85. The symbolism of the girdle is fully

treated in Lee's learned work on the 'Temple of Solomon,' London: 1659. A devout writer, speaking of 'the arrows of the Almighty,' thus refers to the passage in S. Peter here commented on: 'Nothing can be more apparent than that a remiss, unwatchful, *uncinctured* frame of mind is entirely unsuited to a state in which pains and perils continually impend; and that indulgence in what is wrong or neglect of what is right, gives actual cause for these chastisements.'—Sheppard's *Thoughts on Private Devotion*, 4th ed. p. 211.

is to the eyes, but withal directive as a lamp to his feet. Thus here the Apostle doth not only furnish consolation against distress, but exhorts and directs his brethren to walk in the way of holiness, without which the apprehension and feeling of those comforts cannot subsist.

This is no other than a clearer and fuller expression and further pressing of that sobriety and spiritualness of mind and life, which he exhorted unto jointly with that grace of perfect hope, ver. 13, as inseparably connected with it. If you would enjoy this hope, be not conformed to the lusts of your former ignorance, but *be holy*.

There is no doctrine in the world either so pleasant or so pure as that of Christianity: it is matchless, both in sweetness and holiness. The faith and hope of a Christian have in them an abiding precious balm of comfort; but this is never to be so lavished away as to be poured into the puddle of an impure conscience: no, that were to lose it unworthily. *As many as have this hope purify themselves, even as He is pure*, 1 John iii. 3. Here they are commanded to *be holy as He is holy*. Faith first purifies the heart (Acts xv. 9), empties it of the love of sin, and then fills it with the consolation of Christ and the hope of glory.

It is a foolish misgrounded fear, and such as argues inexperience of the nature and workings of Divine grace, to imagine that the assured hope of salvation will beget unholiness and presumptuous boldness in sin, and that therefore the doctrine of that Assurance is a doctrine of licentiousness.* Our Apostle, we see, is not so sharp-sighted as these men think themselves; he apprehends no such matter, but indeed supposes the contrary as unquestionable; he takes not assured hope and holiness as enemies, but joins them as nearest friends: *hope perfectly and be holy*.

They are mutually strengthened and increased each by the other. The more assurance of salvation, the more holiness, the more delight in it, and study of it, as the only way to that

* Nevertheless, in Leighton's time there was no doctrine which was more abused and perverted to the service of fanaticism than this. He himself confesses, in his first sermon on *Fellowship with God*: 'Generally, indeed, we shall find that this Assurance is something of a disease among persons that are brought to see themselves in Jesus Christ; they press that point too ardently, as if it were all.' See below, p. 124.

end. And as labour is then most pleasant when we are made surest it shall not be lost, nothing doth make the soul so nimble and active in obedience as this *oil of gladness*, this assured hope of glory. Again, the more holiness there is in the soul, the clearer always is this assurance; as we see the face of the heavens best, when there are fewest clouds.* The greatest affliction doth not damp this hope so much as the smallest sin; yea, it may be the more lively and sensible to the soul by affliction; but by sin it always suffers loss, as the experience of all Christians does certainly teach them.

The Apostle exhorts to obedience, and enforceth it by a most persuasive reason. His exhortation is: 1. Negative, *Not fashioning yourselves, &c.* 2. Positive, *Be ye holy.*

I. For the negative part of the exhortation. That from which he would remove and separate them, is *Lusts*: this is in Scripture the usual name of all the irregular and sinful desires of the heart, both the polluted habits of them and their corrupt streams, both as they are within, and as they outwardly vent themselves in the lives of men. The Apostle St. John, (1 John ii. 17) calls it the *Lust of the world*, and (verse 15), *Love of the world*; and then (verse 16), branches it into those three, which are, indeed, the base anti-trinity that the world worships, *The lust of the eyes, the lust of the flesh, and the pride of life.*

The soul of man unconverted is no other than a den of impure lusts, wherein dwell pride, uncleanness, avarice, malice, &c., just as Babylon is described, Rev. xviii. 2; Isa. xiii. 21. Were a man's eye opened, he would as much abhor to remain with himself in that condition, as to dwell in a house full of snakes and serpents, as St. Austin says. And the first part of conversion is at once to rid the soul of these noisome inhabitants; for there is no one at all found naturally vacant and free from them. Thus the Apostle here expresses of the

* This seems hardly consistent with Leighton's usual judgment with regard to the doctrine of assurance. Thus, at the close of this Commentary, ch. v. ver. 10, he declares: 'This assurance, indeed, all the heirs of glory have not ordinarily within them, and scarcely any have at all times equally clear. Some travel on in a covert cloudy day, and get home

by it, having so much light as to know their way, and yet do not at all clearly see the bright and full sunshine of assurance; others have it breaking forth at times, and anon under a cloud; and some have it more constantly.' Moreover he declared that he himself had not this assurance, but 'only a good hope.' Cf. Index under 'Assurance.'

believers to whom he wrote, that these lusts were theirs before, *in their ignorance*.

There is a deep truth implied in this, viz., that all sin arises from some kind of ignorance, or, at least, from present inadvertence and inconsideration, turning away the mind from the light; which therefore, for the time, is as if it were not, and is all one with ignorance in the effect. And therefore the works of sin are all called *works of darkness*; for were the true visage of sin seen by a full light, undressed and unpainted, it were impossible, while it so appeared, that any one soul could be in love with it; it would rather fly it, as hideous and abominable. But because the soul unrenewed is all darkness, therefore it is all lust and love of sin; there is no order in it, because no light. As at the first in the world, confusion and darkness went together, and *darkness was upon the face of the deep*, it is so in the soul; the more ignorance, the more abundance of lusts.

That light which frees the soul, and rescues it from the very kingdom of darkness, must be somewhat beyond that which nature can attain to. All the light of Philosophy, natural and moral, is not sufficient, yea, the very knowledge of the law, severed from Christ, serves not so to enlighten and renew the soul as to free it from the darkness or ignorance here spoken of; for our Apostle writes to Jews who knew the law, and were instructed in it before their conversion, yet he calls those times wherein Christ was unknown to them, the *times of their ignorance*. Though the stars shine never so bright, and the moon with them in its full, yet they do not altogether make it day; still it is night till the sun appear.* Therefore the Hebrew doctors, upon that word of Solomon's, *Vanity of vanities, all is vanity*, say, *Vana etiam lex, donec venerit Messias*: Vain even the law, until Messiah come. Therefore of Him Zacharias says, *The Day-spring from on high hath visited us, to give light to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, and to guide our feet into the way of peace*, Luke i. 78, 79.

A natural man may attain to very much acquired knowledge of the doctrine of Christ, and may discourse excellently of it, and yet still his soul be in the *chains of darkness*, fast locked

* 'How beautiful, and yet how simple, and as it were unconscious of its own beauty!'—Coleridge.

up under the ignorance here mentioned, and so he may be still of a *carnal mind*, in subjection to these lusts of ignorance.

The saving light of faith is a beam of the *Sun of Righteousness* Himself, that He sends into the soul, by which He makes it discern His incomparable beauties, and by that sight alienates it from all those lusts and desires, which do then appear to be what indeed they are, vileness and filthiness itself, making the soul wonder at itself, how it could love such base trash so long, and fully resolve now on the choice of Jesus Christ, *the chief among ten thousands*, Cant. v. 10, yea, *the fairest of the children of men*, Psal. xlv. 2, for that He is withal *the only begotten Son of GOD, the brightness of his Father's glory, and the express image of His person*, Heb. i. 3.

The soul once acquainted with Him can, with disdain, turn off all the base solicitations and importunities of sin, and command them away that formerly had command over it, though they plead former familiarities and the interest they once had in the heart of the Christian before it was enlightened and renewed. He can well tell them, after his sight of Christ, that it is true, while he knew no better pleasures than they were, he thought them lovely and pleasing, but that one glance of the face of Jesus Christ hath turned them all extreme blackness and deformity; that so soon as ever Christ appeared to him they straightway lost all their credit and esteem in his heart, and have lost it for ever; they need never look to recover it any more.

And it is by this that the Apostle enforceth this dehoration:—It is true, that the lusts and vanities that are in request in the world were so with you, but it was when you were blind, they were the lusts of your ignorance; but now you know how ill they will suit with the light of that Gospel which you profess, and that inward light of faith which is in the souls of such as be really believers. Therefore, seeing you have renounced them, keep them still at that distance; not only never admit them more to lodge within you; that surely you cannot do; but do not so much as for custom sake and in compliance with the world about you, outwardly conform yourselves to any of them, or make semblance to partake of them: as St. Paul says, *Have no more fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them*, Eph. v. 11; reprove them

by your carriage, and let the light of your holy lives discover their foulness.

II. We have the positive part of the Apostle's exhortation, *Be ye holy*. This includes the former, the renouncing of the lusts and pollutions of the world, both in heart and life; and they being cast out, adds to it, further, the filling of their room with the beautifying graces of the Spirit of GOD, and the acting of those graces in their whole conversation both in private and abroad, in conversing with themselves and conversing with others, whether good or bad, in a constant even course, still like themselves, and like Him who hath called them; for it is a most unseemly and unpleasant thing to see a man's life full of ups and downs, one step like a Christian, and another like a worldling; it cannot choose but both pain himself and disedify others.

But as He which hath called you is holy.] Consider whose you are, and you cannot deny that it becomes you to be holy. Consider your near relation to the holy GOD; this is expressed two ways, namely, *as children*, and *as He which hath called you*; which is all one as if he had said, hath begotten you again. The very outward vocation of those who profess Christ presseth holiness upon them, but the inward vocation far more. You were running to destruction in the way of sin, and there was a voice together with the Gospel preached to your ear, which spake into your heart, and called you back from that path of death to the way of holiness, which is the only way of life. He hath severed you from the mass of the profane world, and picked you out to be jewels for Himself. He hath set you apart for this end, that you may be *holy to Him* (as the Hebrew word which signifies *Holiness*, imports *setting apart*, or fitting for a peculiar use); be not then untrue to His design. *He hath not called you to uncleanness, but unto holiness*, 1 Thess. iv. 7; therefore *be ye holy*. It is sacrilege for you to dispose of yourselves after the impure manner of the world, and to apply yourselves to any profane use, whom GOD hath consecrated to Himself.

As children.] This is, no doubt, relative to that which he spoke, verse 3, by way of thanksgiving; and that *wherefore* in the 13th verse draws it down hither by way of exhortation. Seeing you are, by a spiritual and new birth, the children of

so great and good a Father, who commands you holiness, be obedient children, in being holy; and seeing He Himself is most holy, be like Him as His children, *Be ye holy, as He is holy.*

As obedient children.] Opposed to that expression, Eph. ii. 2, *υἱὸς τῆς ἀπειθείας*, *sons of disobedience*, or *unbelief*, as the word may be rendered, and that is always the spring of disobedience; *sons of mispersuasibleness*, who will not be drawn and persuaded by the tenderest mercies of GOD. Now, though this Hebrew manner of speech, *sons of obedience*, or *disobedience*, signifies no more than obedient or disobedient persons, yet it doth signify this most emphatically, and means a high degree of obedience or disobedience: these *sons of disobedience* (verse 8) are likewise *sons of wrath* (verse 2).

Of all children, the children of GOD are the most obliged to obedience, for He is both the wisest and the most loving of Fathers. And the sum of all His commands is that which is their glory and happiness, that they endeavour to be like Him, to resemble their heavenly Father. *Be ye perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect*, says our Saviour, Matt. v. 48. And here the Apostle is citing out of the law: *Be ye holy, for I am holy*, Levit. xi. 44. Law and Gospel agree in this. Again: children who resemble their fathers, as they grow up in years they grow the more like to them; thus the children of GOD do increase in their resemblance, and are daily more and more renewed after His image. There is in them an innate likeness by reason of His image impressed on them in their first renovation, and His Spirit dwelling within them; and there is a continual increase of it by their pious imitation and study of conformity, which is here exhorted to.

The imitation of vicious men and the corrupt world is here forbidden. The imitation of men's indifferent customs is base and servile; the imitation of the virtues of good men is commendable; but the imitation of this highest pattern, this primitive goodness, the most holy GOD, is the top of excellency. It is well said, *Summa religionis est imitari quem colis*.* The essence of religion consists in the imitation of Him we worship. All of us offer Him some kind of worship, but few seriously study and endeavour this blessed conformity.

* A saying of Pythagoras, frequently quoted by our author.

There is unquestionably among those who profess themselves the people of GOD, a select number who are indeed His children, and bear His image both in their hearts and in their lives; this impression of holiness is on their souls and their conversation; but with the most, a name and a *form of godliness* are all they have for religion. Alas! we speak of Holiness, and we hear of it, and it may be we commend it, but we act it not; or, if we do, it is but an acting of it, in the sense in which the word is often taken for a personated acting, as on a stage in the sight of men: not as in the sight of our lovely GOD, lodging it in our hearts, and from thence diffusing it into all our actions. A child is truly like his father, when not only his visage resembles him, but still more so his mind and inward disposition; thus are the true children of GOD like their heavenly Father in their words and in their actions, but most of all in heart.

It is no matter though the profane world, (which so hates GOD that it cannot endure His image,) do mock and revile; it is thy honour to be, as David said (2 Sam. vi. 22), thus *more vile*, in growing still more like unto Him in holiness. And though the civil man * count thy fashion a little odd and too *precise*, it is because he knows nothing above that model of goodness which he hath set himself, and therefore approves of nothing beyond it: he knows not GOD, and therefore doth not discern and esteem what is most like Him. When courtiers come down into the country, the common homebred people possibly think their habit strange, but they care not for that, it is the fashion at court. What need, then, that the godly should be so tender-foreheaded, as to be put out of countenance because the world looks on holiness as a singularity; it is the only fashion in the highest court, yea, of the King of kings Himself.

For I am holy.] As it will raise our endeavour high to look on the highest pattern, so it will lay our thoughts low concerning ourselves. Men compare themselves with men, and readily with the worst, and flatter themselves with that comparative betterness. This is not the way to see our spots, to look into the muddy streams of profane men's lives; but look into the clear fountain of the Word, and there we may both

* i.e. the worldly man.

discern and wash them. Consider the infinite holiness of GOD, and this will humble us to the dust. When Isaiah saw the glory of the Lord, and heard the Seraphim cry, *Holy, holy, holy*, he cried out of his own and the people's unholiness, *Woe is me, for I am undone, for I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips; for mine eyes have seen the King, the Lord of Hosts*, ch. vi. ver. 3, 4.

Ver. 17. And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear.

THE Temptations which meet a Christian in the world, to turn him aside from the straight way of obedience and holiness, are either such as present the hope of some apparent good, to draw him from that way, or the fear of some evil, to drive and affright him from it: and therefore the word of GOD is frequent in strengthening the Christian mind against these two; and it doth it mainly by possessing it both with hopes and fears of a higher nature, that do by far weigh down the other.

The most frequent assaults of Temptation are upon these two passions of the mind; therefore they are mainly to be fortified and defended by a hope and fear opposite to those that do assault us, and sufficiently strong to resist and repel them.

These two, therefore, our Apostle here urges: First, the *Hope* of that Glory which the Gospel propounds, and so outbids all the proffers of the world, both in the greatness and the certainty of its promises. Secondly, the *Fear* of GOD, the greatest and justest judge, alone worthy to be feared and revered; the highest anger and enmity of all the world being less than nothing, in comparison of His smallest displeasure, ver. 17. We have here, in this last verse:

I. This fear. II. The reason enforcing it. III. The term or continuance of it.

I. The fear itself, *in fear*. But how suits this with the high discourse that went before, of perfect assured hope, of faith, and love, and joy, yea, joy unspeakable and glorious, arising out of these? How are all those excellencies fallen, as it were, into a dungeon, when fear is mentioned after them!

Doth not the Apostle St. John say, that *true love casteth out fear*? 1 John iv. 18. And is it not more clearly opposite to perfect or assured hope, and to faith and joy?

If ye understand it aright, this is such a fear as doth not prejudice but preserve those other graces, and the comfort and joy that arise from them: and they all agree so well with it that they are naturally helps to each other.

It were superfluous to insist on the defining of this passion of Fear, and the manifold distinctions of it, either with philosophers or divines. The fear here recommended is, out of question, a holy self-suspicion and fear of offending GOD, which may not only consist with assured hope of salvation, and with faith, and love, and spiritual joy, but is their inseparable companion; as all Divine graces are linked together (as the heathens said of their three Graces), and, as they dwell together, they grow or decrease together. The more a Christian believes, and loves, and rejoices in the love of GOD, the more unwilling surely to displease Him, and if in danger of displeasing Him, the more afraid of it; and, on the other side, this fear being the true principle of a wary and holy conversation, fleeing sin, and the occasions of sin and temptations to it, and resisting them when they make an assault, is as a watch or guard that keeps out the enemies and disturbers of the soul, and so preserves its inward peace, keeps the assurance of faith and hope unmolested, and that joy which they cause, and the intercourse and society of love betwixt the soul and her Beloved, uninterrupted; all which are most in danger when this fear abates and falls to slumbering; for then some notable sin or other readily breaks in and puts all into disorder, and for a time makes those graces, and the comfort of them to present feeling, as much to seek as if they were not there at all.

No wonder, then, that the Apostle, having stirred up his Christian brethren, whatsoever be their estate in the world, to seek to be rich in those jewels of faith, and hope, and love, and spiritual joy, and then, considering that they travel amongst a world of thieves and robbers,—no wonder, I say, that he adds this, advises them to give those their jewels in custody, under GOD, to this trusty and watchful grace of godly Fear; and having earnestly exhorted them to holiness, he is very fitly

particular in this fear, which makes up so great a part of that holiness, that it is often in Scripture named for it all.

Solomon calls it *the beginning or the top of wisdom*, Prov. ix. 10: the word signifies both, and it is both. The beginning of it is the beginning of wisdom, and the progress and increase of it is the increase of wisdom. That hardy rashness which many account valour, is the companion of ignorance; and of all rashness, boldness to sin is the most witless and foolish. There is in this, as in all fear, an apprehension of an evil whereof we are in danger. The evil is sin, and the displeasure of GOD and punishment following upon sin. The godly man judgeth wisely, as the truth is, that sin is the greatest of evils, and the cause of all other evils; it is a transgression of the just law of GOD, and so a provocation of His just anger, and the cause of those punishments, temporal, spiritual, and eternal, which He inflicts. And then, considering how mighty He is to punish, considering both the power and the reach of His hand, that it is both most heavy and unavoidable; all these things may and should concur to the working of this fear.

There is, no doubt, a great difference betwixt those two kinds of Fear that are usually differenced by the names of *servile* and *filial* fear; but certainly, the most genuine fear of the sons of GOD, who call Him *Father*, doth not exclude the consideration of His justice and of the punishment of sin which His justice inflicts. We see here, it is used as the great motive of this fear, that He *judgeth every man according to his works*. And David in that Psalm wherein he so much breathes forth those other sweet affections of love, and hope, and delight in GOD and in His word, yet expresseth this fear even of the justice of GOD: *My flesh trembleth for fear of Thee, and I am afraid of Thy judgments*, Psal. cxix. 120. The flesh is to be awed by Divine judgments, though the higher and purer part of the soul is strongly and freely tied with the cords of love. Temporal corrections, indeed, they fear not so much in themselves, as that impression of wrath that may be upon them for their sins. Psal. vi. 1. That is the main matter of their fear, because their happiness is in His love, and the light of His countenance that is their life. They regard not how the world looks upon them; they care not who frown, so He smile on them; because no other enemy nor evil in the world can

deprive them of this but their own sin, therefore that is what they fear most.

As the evil is great, so the Christian hath great reason to *fear* in regard of his danger of it, considering the multitude, strength, and craft of his enemies, and his own weakness and unskilfulness to resist them. And his sad experience in being often foiled teacheth him that it is thus; he cannot be ignorant of it; he finds how often his own resolves and purposes deceive him. Certainly, a godly man is sometimes driven to wonder at his own frailty and inconstancy. What strange differences will be betwixt him and himself: how high and how delightful at some times are his thoughts of GOD and the glory of the life to come; and yet how easily, at another time, base temptations will bemire him, or, at the least, molest and vex him! And this keeps him in a continual fear, and that fear in continual vigilancy and circumspectness. When he looks up to GOD, and considers the truth of His promises, and the sufficiency of His grace and protection, and the almighty strength of his Redeemer, these things fill his soul with confidence and assurance; but when he turns his eye downward again upon himself, and finds so much remaining corruption within, and so many temptations, and dangers, and adversaries without, this forces him not only to fear but to despair of himself; and it should do so, that his trust in GOD may be the purer and more entire. That confidence in GOD will not make him secure and presumptuous in himself, nor that fear of himself make him diffident of GOD. This fear is not opposite to faith, but high-mindedness and presumption are. See Rom. xi. 20. To a natural man, it would seem an odd kind of reasoning that of the Apostle, Phil. ii. 12, 13: *It is GOD that worketh in you to will and to do of His good-pleasure*: therefore, (would he think,) you may save labour, you may sit still, and not work; or, if you work, you may work fearlessly, being so sure of His help: but the Apostle is of another mind; his inference is, Therefore, *work out your own salvation, and work it with fear and trembling.*

But he that hath Assurance of salvation, why should he fear? If there is truth in his assurance, nothing can disappoint him, not sin itself. It is true; but it is no less true, that if he do not fear to sin, there is no truth in his assurance: it is not the

assurance of faith, but the mispersuasion of a secure and profane mind. Suppose it so, that the sins of a godly man cannot be such as to cut him short of that salvation whereof he is assured; yet they may be such as for a time will deprive him of that assurance, and not only remove the comfort he hath in that, but let in horrors and anguish of conscience in its stead. Though a believer is freed from hell, (and we may overstrain this Assurance, in our doctrine, beyond what the soberest and devoutest men in the world can ever find in themselves, though they will not trouble themselves to contest and dispute with them that say they have it,) so that his soul cannot come there: yet some sins may bring as it were a hell into his soul for a time, and this is reason enough for any Christian in his right wits to be afraid of sin. No man would willingly hazard himself upon a fall that may break his leg, or some other bone; though he could be made sure that he should not break his neck, or that his life were not at all in danger, and that he should be perfectly cured, yet the pain and trouble of such a hurt would scare him, and make him wary and fearful when he walks in danger. The broken bones that David complains of after his fall may work fear and wariness in those that hear him, though they were ascertained of a like recovery.

This fear is not cowardice; it doth not debase but elevates the mind; for it drowns all lower fears, and begets true fortitude and courage to encounter all dangers for the sake of a good conscience and the obeying of GOD. *The righteous is bold as a lion*, Prov. xxviii. 1. He dares do anything but offend GOD; and to dare that is the greatest folly, and weakness, and baseness, in the world. From this fear have sprung all the generous resolutions and patient sufferings of the saints and martyrs of GOD: because they durst not sin against Him, therefore they durst be imprisoned, and impoverished, and tortured, and die for Him. Thus the Prophet sets carnal and godly fear as opposite, and the one expelling the other. Isa. viii. 12, 13. And our Saviour, Luke xii. 4, *Fear not them that kill the body; but fear Him which, after He hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, fear Him.* Fear not, but fear; and therefore fear, that you may not fear. This fear is like the trembling that hath been observed in some of great courage before battles. Moses was bold and fearless

in dealing with a proud and wicked king, but when GOD appeared he said (as the Apostle informs us), *I exceedingly fear and quake*, Heb. xii. 21.

II. The reason we have here to persuade Christians to this fear is twofold: 1. Their relation to GOD. 2. Their relation to the world.

1. Their relation to GOD as their Father and as their judge: *If ye call on the Father, who judgeth, &c.* Because you do call Him Father, and profess yourselves His children, *begotten again* by Him (for this verse looks back to that expression), it becomes you, *as obedient children*, to stand in awe and fear to offend Him your Father, and a Father so full of goodness and tender love. But as He is the best Father, so consider that He is withal the greatest and justest judge: *He judges every man according to his work.*

GOD always sees and discerns men, and all their works, and *judgeth*, that is, accounteth of them, as they are, and sometimes in this life declares this His judgment of them to their own consciences, and in some to the view of others, in visible punishments and rewards; but the most solemn judgment of all is reserved to that great day which He hath appointed, *wherein He will judge the world in righteousness by his Son Jesus.* Acts xvii. 32.

Who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work.] There is here, the *sovereignty* of this Judge, the *universality* of His judgment, and the *equity* of it. All must answer at His great court; He is supreme judge of the world. He made it, and hath therefore unquestionable right to judge it. *He judgeth every man*; and His is a most righteous judgment, which hath these two particulars in it: 1. An exact and perfect knowledge of all men's works; 2. Impartial judgment of them so known. This second is expressed negatively, by removing the crooked rule which man's judgment often follows; it is without consideration of those personal differences which men eye so much, and is according to the work itself. Job xxxiv. 19, *He accepteth not the person of princes, nor regardeth the rich more than the poor*; and the reason is added there, *for they are all the work of His hands.* He made all the persons, and He makes all those differences Himself as it pleaseth Him; therefore He doth not admire

them as we do, no, nor at all regard them. We find very great odds betwixt stately palaces and poor cottages, betwixt a prince's robes and a beggar's cloak; but to GOD, they are all one; all these petty differences vanish in comparison of His own greatness. Men are great and small, compared one with another; but they all together amount to just nothing in respect of Him. We find high mountains and low valleys on this earth; but compared with the vast compass of the heavens, it is all but as a point, and hath no sensible greatness at all.

Nor regards He any other differences to bias His judgment, from the works of men to their persons. You profess the true religion, and call Him Father; but if you live devoid of His fear and be disobedient children, He will not spare you because of that relation, but rather punish you the more severely. Because you pretended to be His children, and yet obeyed Him not, therefore you shall find Him your judge, and an impartial judge of your works. Remember, therefore, that your Father is this judge, and fear to offend Him. But then, indeed, a believer may look back to the other for comfort, who abuses it not to a sinful security. He resolves thus willingly: 'I will not sin because my Father is this just judge: but for my frailties I will hope for mercy, because the judge is my Father.'

Who judgeth according to every man's work.] This comprehends all actions and words, yea, thoughts; and each work entirely, taken outside and inside together; for He sees all alike, and judgeth according to all together. He looks on the wheels and paces* within as well as on the handle without, and therefore ought we to fear the least crookedness of our intentions in the best works; for if we entertain any such, and study not *singleness of heart*, this will cast all, though we pray and hear the word, and preach it, and live outwardly unblamably. And in that great Judgment, all secret things shall be manifest; as they are always open to the eye of this judge, so He shall then open them before men and angels:

* 'Paces,' also spelt *payses*, *peyzes*, and *peises*, is an old word for weights, from the French *pesant*, as *poises* from *poids*. Until nearly the close of the seventeenth century clocks and watches had only one hand, or 'handle,' as it was called, viz.,

that which pointed to the hours. Until about twenty years ago there were several public clocks in London single-handed, and there still exists a clock of this kind in the north-west tower of Westminster Abbey.

therefore let the remembrance and frequent consideration of this all-seeing judge, and of that great Judgment, wean our hearts from sin, and beget in us this fear. 2 Cor. v. 10, 11. If you would have confidence in that day, and not fear it when it comes, fear it now, so as to avoid sin: for they that now tremble at it shall then, when it comes, lift up their faces with joy; and they that will not fear it now shall then be overwhelmed with fears and terror; they shall have such a burden of fear then, as that they shall account the hills and mountains lighter than it.

Pass the time of your sojourning here in fear.] In this I conceive is implied another persuasive to Christians of this fear, arising, 2. from their relation to this world. You are *sojourners* and *strangers* (as here the word signifies*), and a wary circumspect carriage becomes strangers, because they are most exposed to wrongs and hard accidents. You are encompassed with enemies and snares; how can you be secure in the midst of them? *This is not your rest*; watchful fear becomes this your sojourning. Perfect peace and security are reserved for you at home, and that is the last term of this fear; it continues all the time of this sojourning life, dies not before us; we and it shall expire together.

III. This, then, is the term or continuance of this fear.

Blessed is he that feareth always, says Solomon, Prov. xxviii. 14; in secret and in society, in his own house and in GOD'S. We must hear the word with fear, and preach it with fear, afraid to miscarry in our intentions and manners. *Serve the Lord with fear*, yea, in times of inward comfort and joy, yet *rejoice with trembling*, Psal. ii. 11. Not only when a man feels most his own weakness, but when he finds himself strongest. None are so high advanced in grace here below as to be out of need of this grace; but when their sojourning shall be done, and they are come home to their Father's house above, then no more fearing. No entrance for dangers there, and therefore no fear. A holy reverence of the majesty of GOD they shall indeed have then most of all, as the Angels still have, because they shall see Him most clearly, and because the more He is known the more He is revered; but this fear that

* *παροικίας* is the word here translated *sojourning*, and in ch. ii. ver. 11, *παροίκους* is rendered *strangers*.

relates to danger, shall then vanish, for there there is neither sin, nor sorrow for sin, nor temptation to sin; no more conflicts, but after a full and final victory, an eternal peace, an everlasting triumph. Not only fear, but faith and hope, do imply some imperfection not consistent with that blessed estate; and therefore all of them, having obtained their end, shall end; *Faith in sight, Hope in possession, and Fear in perfect safety*; and everlasting love and delight shall fill the whole soul in the VISION OF GOD.

Ver. 18. Forasmuch as ye know, that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers.

19. But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.

IT is impossible for a Christian to give himself to conform with the world's ungodliness, unless first he forget who he is, and by what means he attained to be what he is. Therefore the Apostle, persuading his brethren to Holiness, puts them in mind of this, as the strongest incentive: 'Not only have you the example of GOD set before you as your Father, to beget in you the love of holiness, as being your liveliest resemblance of Him; and the justice of GOD as your judge, to argue you into a pious fear of offending Him; but consider this, that He is your Redeemer; He hath bought out your liberty from sin and the world, to be altogether His; and think on the price laid down in this ransom; and these out of question will prevail with you.'

We have here: 1, the evil dissuaded from, viz., *A vain conversation*. 2. The dissuasion itself.

1. It is called *their vain conversation*. 2. *Received by tradition from their fathers*. By this I conceive is to be understood not only the superstitions and vain devices in religion, which abounded amongst the Jews by tradition, for which our Saviour often reprov'd them while He was conversant among them, as we find in the Gospel; (and all this was meant, ver. 14, by *the lusts of their former ignorance*;) but generally, all the corrupt and sinful customs of their lives; for it seems not so pertinent to his purpose when exhorting to holiness of life, to speak of their superstitious traditions as of their other sinful habitudes, which are no less hereditary, and, by the power of

example, traditional; which, by reason of their common root in man's sinful nature, do so easily pass from parents to children, nature making their example powerful, and the corruption of nature giving it most power in that which is evil. And this is the rather mentioned to take away the force of it, and cut off that influence which it might have had into their minds. There is a kind of conversation that the authority of your fathers pleads for; but remember, that it is that very thing from which you are delivered, and you are called to a new state and form of life, and have a new pattern set before you, instead of that corrupt example.

It is one great error, not only in religion and manners, but even in human science, that men are ready to take things upon trust, unexamined, from those that went before them, partly out of easiness and sparing the pains of trial, partly out of a superstitious over-estimate of their authority; but the chief reason why corruptions in religion, and in the practice of preceding ages, take so much with posterity, is that before mentioned, the universal sympathy and agreement which those evils have with the corrupt nature of man.

The prophet Ezekiel observes this particularly in the Jews, chap. xx. ver. 24, *That their eyes were after their fathers' idols*, contrary to GOD'S express forewarning, ver. 18. This was the great quarrel of the Heathens against the Christian religion in the primitive times, that it was new and unknown to their fathers; and the ancient writers of those times are frequent in shewing the vanity of this exception, particularly Lactantius, in his treatise *De Divinis Institutionibus*, lib. 2. c. 7, 8. The same prejudice doth the Church of Rome sing over continually against the reformed religion: Where was it before Luther? &c.* But this is a foolish and reasonless

* Bishop Taylor replies: 'It is much more easy for us to show our religion before Luther, than for them to show theirs before Trent. And although they can show too much practice of their religion in the degenerate ages of the Church, yet we can and do clearly show ours in the purest and first ages; and can and do draw lines pointing to the times and places when the several rooms and stories of their Babel was builded, and when polished, and when furnished. When the keepers of the

field slept and the enemy had sown tares, and they had choked the wheat and almost destroyed it; when the world complained of the infinite errors in the Church, and being oppressed by a violent power, durst not complain so much as they had cause; and when they who had cause to complain were yet themselves very much abused, and did not complain in all they might; when divers excellent persons—S. Bernard, Clemangis, Grostete, Ocham, Alvarus, Petrarch, Savonarola, Valla, Erasmus,

diversion from the search of truth, because error is more at hand; or from the entertaining it, being found, because falsehood is in possession.

As in religion, so in the course and practice of men's lives, the stream of sin runs from one age into another, and every age makes it greater, adding somewhat to what it receives, as rivers grow in their course by the accession of brooks that fall into them; and every man when he is born, falls like a drop into this main current of corruption, and so is carried down with it, and this by reason of its strength and his own nature, which willingly dissolves into it and runs along with it.* In this is manifest the power of Divine grace in a man's conversion, that it severs him so powerfully from the profane world, and gives him strength to run contrary to the great current of wickedness that is round about him, in his parents possibly, and in his kindred and friends, and in the most of men that he meets withal. The voice of GOD, that powerful word of effectual calling which He speaks in to the heart, makes a man break through all, and leave all to follow GOD, as Abraham did, being called out from his kindred and father's house to journey towards the land that GOD had promised him. And this is that which is spoken to the Church, and to each believing soul, by the Spirit of GOD, *Forget also thine own*

Gerson, Ferus, Cassander, Cardinal Zabarel, and Pope Adrian himself, with many others, and almost all Christian princes,—did complain heavily of the corrupt state of the Church and of religion, and no remedy could be had, but the very intended remedy made things much worse; then it was that divers Christian kingdoms, and particularly the Church of England, being ashamed of the errors, superstitious heresies and impieties which had deturpated the face of the Church, looked in the glass of Scripture and pure antiquity, and washed away those stains with which time and inadvertency and tyranny had besmeared her; and being thus cleansed and washed, is accused by the Roman parties of novelty, and condemned because she refuses to run into the same excess of riot and deordination. But we cannot deserve blame who return to our ancient and first health, by preferring a new cure before an old sore.—*Dissuasive from Popery*, pt. i., c. 1.

Bishop Hall declares: 'Be it known

to all the world, that our Church is only *reformed* or repaired, not *made new*; there is not one stone of a new foundation laid by us: yea, the old walls stand still; only the over-casting of those ancient stones with the untempered mortar of new inventions displeaseth us. Plainly, set aside the corruptions, and the Church is the same.—Well therefore may those mouths stop themselves which call for the names of the professors of our faith in all succession of times till Luther looked forth into the world.'—*The Old Religion*, c. 3.

* 'In this single period,' says Coleridge, 'we have religion the spirit, philosophy the soul, and poetry the body and drapery united; Plato glorified by S. Paul.' Cf. S. Aug. *Confess.* i. 16: *Væ tibi, flumen moris humani!* &c. 'Woe to thee, thou torrent of human custom! Who shall withstand thee? When shalt thou be dried up? How long wilt thou roll the sons of Eve into that huge and hideous ocean over which even they scarce pass who climb the cross?'

people and thy father's house, so shall the king greatly delight in thy beauty, Psal. xlv. 10, 11. Regard not what others think, though they be thy nearest friends, but study only to please Him, and then thou shalt please Him indeed. Do not deform thy face with looking out asquint to the custom of the world, but look straight forward on Him, and so thou shalt be beautiful in His eyes. When GOD calls a man in a remarkable manner, his profane friends are all in a tumult; what needs this to be more *precise* than we and all your neighbours? But all this is a confused noise, that works nothing on the heart which the Lord hath touched: it must follow Him, though by trampling upon friends and kindred, if they lie in the way. We see how powerfully a word from Christ drew His disciples to leave all and follow Him.

The *exhortation* is against all sinful and unholy conversation, by what authority and example soever recommended to us. The Apostle's reasons in these words are strong and pressing; there is one expressed in the very name he gives it; *it is vain conversation*.

The mind of man, the guide and source of his actions, while it is estranged from GOD, is nothing but a forge of vanities. The Apostle St. Paul speaks this of the Gentiles, that *they became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened*, Rom. i. 21, their great naturalists and philosophers not excepted; and the more they strove to play the wise men, the more they befooled themselves. Thus likewise, in Eph. iv. 17. And thus the Lord complains by His prophet Isaiah, of the extreme folly of His people, xlv. 20, and by Jeremy, that *their hearts are lodges of vain thoughts*, iv. 14: and these are the true cause of a *vain conversation*.

The whole course of a man's life out of Christ, is nothing but a continual trading in vanity, running a circle of toil and labour, and reaping no profit at all. This is the vanity of every natural man's conversation, that not only others are not benefited by it, but it is fruitless to himself; there arises to him no solid good out of it. That is most truly vain, which attains not its proper end; now, since all a man's endeavours aim at his satisfaction and contentment, that conversation which gives him nothing of that, but removes him further from it, is justly called *vain conversation*. *What fruit had ye,*

says the Apostle, *in those things whereof ye are now ashamed?* Rom. vi. 21. Either count that shame which at the best grows out of them, their fruit, or confess they have none; therefore they are called *the unfruitful works of darkness.* Eph. v. 11.

Let the voluptuous person say it out upon his death-bed, what pleasure or profit doth then abide with him of all his former sinful delights. Let him tell if there remain anything of them all but that which he would gladly not have to remain, the sting of an accusing conscience, which is as lasting as the delight of sin was short and evanishing. Let the covetous and ambitious declare freely, even those of them who have prospered most in their pursuit of riches and honour, what ease all their possessions or titles do then help them to; whether their pains are the less because their chests are full, or their houses stately, or a multitude of friends and servants waiting on them with hat and knee. And if all these things cannot ease the body, how much less can they quiet the mind! And therefore is it not true, that all pains in these things, and the uneven ways into which they sometimes stept aside to serve those ends, and generally, that all the ways of sin wherein they have wearied themselves, were vain rollings and tossings up and down, not tending to a certain haven of peace and happiness? It is a lamentable thing to be deluded all a lifetime with a false dream. See Isa. ii. 8.

You that are going on in the common road of sin, although many, and possibly your own parents, have trodden it before you, and the greatest part of those you now know are in it with you and keep you company in it, yet, be persuaded to stop a little, and ask yourselves what is it you seek, or expect in the end of it. Would it not grieve any labouring man, to work hard all the day and have no wages to look for at night? It is a greater loss to wear out our whole life, and in the evening of our days find nothing but anguish and vexation. Let us then think this, that so much of our life as is spent in the ways of sin is all lost, fruitless, and *vain conversation.*

And in so far as the Apostle says here, *You are redeemed from this conversation*, this imports it to be a servile, slavish condition, as the other word, *vain*, expresses it to be fruitless. And this is the madness of a sinner, that he fancies liberty in

that which is the basest thralldom ; as those poor frantic persons that are lying ragged and bound in chains, yet imagine that they are kings, that their irons are chains of gold, their rags robes, and their filthy lodge a palace. As it is misery to be liable to the sentence of death, so it is slavery to be subject to the dominion of sin ; and he that is delivered from the one is likewise set free from the other. There is one redemption from both. He that is redeemed from destruction by the blood of Christ, is likewise redeemed from that vain and unholy conversation that leads to it. So Tit. ii. 14. Our Redeemer was anointed for this purpose, not to free the captives from the sentence of death, and yet leave them still in prison, but to *proclaim liberty to them, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound*, Isa. lxi. 1.

You easily persuade yourselves that Christ hath died for you, and redeemed you from hell ; but you consider not, that if it be so, He hath likewise redeemed you from your vain conversation, and hath set you free from the service of sin. Certainly, while you find not that, you can have no assurance of the other : if the chains of sin continue still upon you, for anything you can know these chains do bind you over to the other *chains of darkness* the Apostle speaks of, 2 Pet. ii. 4. Let us not delude ourselves ; if we find the love of sin and of the world work stronger in our hearts than the love of Christ, we are not as yet partakers of His redemption.

But if we have indeed laid hold upon Him as our Redeemer, then are we redeemed from the service of sin ; not only from the grossest profaneness, but even from all kind of fruitless and *vain conversation*. And therefore ought we to *stand fast in that liberty, and not to entangle ourselves again with the yoke of bondage* to any of our former vanities, Gal. v. 1.

Not redeemed with corruptible things.] From the high price of our redemption, the Apostle doth mainly enforce our esteem of it, and urge the preservation of that liberty so dearly bought, and the avoiding all that unholiness and vain conversation, from which we are freed by that redemption. First, he expresseth it negatively, *not with corruptible things* ; (Oh ! foolish we, who hunt them as if they were incorruptible and everlasting treasures !) no, not the best of them, those that are in highest account with men, *not with silver and gold* ; these

are not of any value at all towards the ransom of souls; they cannot buy off the death of the body, nor purchase the continuance of temporal life, much less can they reach to the worth of spiritual and eternal life.

Secondly, he expresseth it positively:—

But with the precious Blood of Christ.] The precious soul could not be redeemed but by blood, and by no blood but that of this spotless Lamb, Jesus Christ, who is GOD equal with the Father; and therefore His blood is called, *the blood of GOD*, Acts xx. So that the Apostle may well call it here *precious*, exceeding the whole world and all things in it in value. Therefore frustrate not the sufferings of Christ: if He shed His blood to redeem you from sin, be not false to His purpose.

As a Lamb without blemish.] He is that great and everlasting Sacrifice which gave value and virtue to all the sacrifices under the Law: their blood was of no worth to the purging away of sin, but by relation to His blood; and the laws concerning the choice of the Paschal Lamb, or other lambs for sacrifice, were but obscure and imperfect shadows of His purity and perfections, who is the undefiled *Lamb of GOD that taketh away the sins of the world*, John i. 29. A lamb in meekness and silence, *He opened not His mouth*, Isa. liii. 7. And in purity here, *without spot or blemish*. *My well-beloved*, says the spouse, *is white and ruddy*, Cant. v. 10;—white in spotless innocency, and red in suffering a bloody death.

Forasmuch as ye know.] It is that must make all this effectual, the right knowledge and due consideration of it. Ye do know it already, but I would have you know it better, more deeply and practically: turn it often over, be more in the study and meditation of it. There is work enough in it still for the most discerning mind; it is a mystery so deep, that you shall never reach the bottom of it, and withal so useful, that you shall find always new profit by it. Our folly is, we gape after new things, and yet are in effect ignorant of the things we think we know best. That learned Apostle who knew so much, and spoke so many tongues, yet says, *I determined to know nothing among you, save Jesus Christ, and Him crucified*, 1 Cor. ii. 2. And again he expresses this as the top of his ambition, *that I may know Him, and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings, being made*

conformable unto His death, Phil. iii. 10. That conformity is this only knowledge. He that hath his lusts unmortified, and a heart unweaned from the world, though he know all the history of the death and sufferings of Jesus Christ, and can discourse well of them, yet indeed he knows them not.

If you would increase much in holiness, and be strong against the temptations to sin, this is the only art of it; view much, and so seek to know much of the death of Jesus Christ. Consider often at how high a rate we were redeemed from sin, and provide this answer for all the enticements of sin and the world: ‘Except you can offer my soul something beyond that price that was given for it on the cross, I cannot hearken to you.’—‘Far be it from me,’ will a Christian say who considers this redemption, ‘that ever I should prefer a base lust, or anything in this world, or it all, to Him who gave Himself to death for me, and paid my ransom with His blood. His matchless love hath freed me from the miserable captivity of sin, and hath for ever fastened me to the sweet yoke of His obedience. Let Him alone dwell and rule within me, and never let Him go forth from my heart, who for my sake refused to come down from the cross.’*

Ver. 20. Who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world; but was manifest in these last times for you.

OF all those considerations (and there are many) that may move men to obedience, there is none that persuades both more sweetly and strongly than the sense of GOD’S goodness and mercy towards men; and amongst all the evidences of that, there is none like the sending and giving of His Son for man’s redemption; therefore the Apostle, having mentioned that, insists further on it; and in these words expresses: 1. The purpose; 2. The performance; and 3. The application of it.

1. The purpose or *decree fore-known*; but it is well rendered, *fore-ordained*, for this knowing is decreeing, and there is little either solid truth or profit in the distinguishing them.

We say usually, that where there is little wisdom there is much chance; † and comparatively amongst men, some are far

* Nunquam recederet a corde meo qui pro me non recessit a cruce.—S. Aug. *Soliloq.* c. xiii. § 4. † Ubi plus est sapientiæ ibi minus est casus.

more foresighted, and of further reach than others; yet the wisest and most provident men, both wanting skill to design all things aright, and power to act as they contrive, meet with many unexpected casualties and frequent disappointments in their undertakings. But with GOD, where both wisdom and power are infinite, there can be neither any chance nor resistance from without, nor any imperfection at all in the contrivance of things within Himself, that can give cause to add, or abate, or alter anything in the frame of His purposes. The model of the whole world, and of all the course of time, was with Him one and the same from all eternity, and whatsoever is brought to pass is exactly answerable to that pattern, for with Him *there is no change nor shadow of turning*, Jam. i. 17. There is nothing dark to *the Father of Lights*: He sees at one view through all things and all ages, from the beginning of time to the end of it, yea, from eternity to eternity. And this incomprehensible wisdom is too wonderful for us; we do but childishly stammer when we offer to speak of it.

It is no wonder that men beat their own brains, and knock their heads one against another, in the contest of their opinions, to little purpose, in their several mouldings of GOD's decrees. Is not this to cut and square GOD's thoughts to ours, and examine His sovereign purposes by the low principles of human wisdom? How much more learned than all such knowledge is the Apostle's ignorance, when he cries out, *O! the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and knowledge of GOD! how unsearchable are His judgments, and His ways past finding out!* Rom. xi. 33. Why then should any man debate what place, in the series of GOD's decrees, is to be assigned to this purpose of sending His Son in the flesh! Let us rather (seeing it is manifest that it was for the redemption of lost mankind) admire that same love of GOD to mankind, which appears in that purpose of our recovery by the *Word made flesh*; that before man had made himself miserable, yea, before either he or the world was made, this thought of boundless love was in the bosom of GOD; to send His Son forth from thence, to bring fallen man out of misery, and restore him to happiness; and to do this, not only by taking on his nature but the curse; to shift it off from us that were sunk under it, and to bear it Himself, and by bearing to take it away. *He laid on him the*

iniquity of us all. And to this He was appointed, says the Apostle, Heb. iii. 8.

Before the foundation of the world.] This we understand by faith, that the world was framed by the word of GOD. Heb. xi. 3. Although the learned probably think it evincible by human reason, yet some of those who have gloried most in that, and are reputed generally masters of reason, have not seen it by that light. Therefore, that we may have a divine belief of it, we must learn it from the word of GOD, and be persuaded of its truth by the Spirit of GOD, that the whole world, and all things in it, were drawn out of nothing by His Almighty power who is the only eternal and increated BEING, and therefore the fountain and source of Being to all things.

Foundation.] In this word is plainly intimated the resemblance of the world to a building; and such a building it is as doth evidence the greatness of Him who framed it; so spacious, rich, and comely, so firm a foundation, raised to so high and stately a roof, and set with variety of stars as with jewels, therefore called as some conceive it, *the work of His fingers*, Psal. viii., to express the curious artifice that appears in them. Though naturalists have attempted to give the reason of the earth's stability from its heaviness, which stays it necessarily in the lowest part of the world, yet that abates not our admiring the wisdom and power of GOD, in laying its foundation so, and establishing it; for it is His will that is the first cause of that its nature, and hath appointed that to be the property of its heaviness, to fix it there; and therefore Job alleges this amongst the wonderful works of GOD, and evidences of His power, that *He hangeth the earth upon nothing.* Job xxvi. 7.

Before there was time, or place, or any creature, GOD, the blessed Trinity, was in Himself, and as the Prophet speaks, *inhabiting Eternity*, completely happy in Himself: but intending to manifest and communicate His goodness, He gave being to the world, and to time with it; made all to set forth His goodness, and the most excellent of His creatures to contemplate and enjoy it. But amongst all the works He intended before time, and in time effected, this is the master-piece, which is here said to be *fore-ordained*, namely, the manifesting of GOD in the flesh for man's redemption, and that by His Son

Jesus Christ, as *the first-born amongst many brethren*, in order that those appointed for salvation should be rescued from the common misery, and be made one mystical body, whereof Christ is the head, and so entitled to that everlasting glory and happiness that He hath purchased for them.

This, I say, is the great work, wherein all those glorious attributes shine jointly, the wisdom, and power, and goodness, justice, and mercy of GOD. As in great maps, or pictures, you will see the border decorated with meadows, and fountains, and flowers, &c., represented in it, but in the middle you have the main design; thus is this fore-ordained redemption amongst the works of GOD: all His other works in the world, all the beauty of the creatures, and the succession of ages, and things that come to pass in them, are but as the border to this as the main-piece. But as a foolish, unskilful beholder, not discerning the excellency of the principal piece in such maps or pictures, gazes only on the fair border and goes no further, thus do the greatest part of us; our eyes are taken with the goodly show of the world and appearance of earthly things: but as for this great work of GOD, Christ *fore-ordained*, and in time sent for our redemption, though it most deserves our attentive regard, yet we do not view and consider it as we ought.

2. We have the performance of that purpose, *Was manifested in these last times for you*. He was manifested both by His incarnation, according to that word of the Apostle St. Paul, *manifested in the flesh*, 1 Tim. iii. 16, and manifested by His marvellous works and doctrine; by His sufferings and death, resurrection and ascension, by the sending down of the Holy Ghost according to His promise, and by the preaching of the Gospel, in the fulness of time that GOD had appointed, wherein all the prophecies that foretold His coming, and all the types and ceremonies that prefigured Him, had their accomplishment.

The times of the Gospel are often called *the last times* by the prophets; for that the Jewish priesthood and ceremonies being abolished, that which succeeded was appointed by GOD to remain the same *to the end of the world*.* Besides this, the time of our Saviour's incarnation may be called *the last times*, because, although it were not near the end of time by many

* S. Matt. xxviii. 20.

ages, yet in all probability it is much nearer the end of time than the beginning of it. Some resemble the time of His sufferings in the end of the world to the Paschal Lamb which was slain in the evening.

It was doubtless the fit time; but notwithstanding the Schoolmen offer at reasons to prove the fitness of it, as their humour is to prove all things, none dare, I think, conclude, but if GOD had so appointed, it might have been either sooner or later. And our safest way is to rest in this, that it was the fit time, because so it pleased Him, and to seek no other reason why, having promised the MESSIAH so quickly after man's fall, He deferred His coming about four thousand years, and a great part of that time shut up the knowledge of Himself and the true religion within the narrow compass of that one nation of which Christ was to be born; of these and such like things, we can give no other reason than that which He teacheth us in a like case, *Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in Thy sight,* Matt. xi. 26.

3. The application of this manifestation, *For you.*] The Apostle represents these things to those he writes to, particularly for their use; therefore he applies it to them, but without prejudice of the believers who went before, or of those who were to follow in after ages. He who is here said to be *fore-appointed before the foundation of the world*, is therefore called *A Lamb slain from the foundation of the world*, Rev. xiii. 8. And as the virtue of His death looks backward to all preceding ages, whose faith and sacrifices looked forward to it; so the same death is of force and perpetual value to the end of the world. *After He had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever*, says the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, *He sat down for ever, on the right hand of GOD; for by one offering He hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified*, ch. x. ver. 12, 14. The Cross on which He was extended, points, in the length of it, to heaven and earth, reconciling them together, and in the breadth of it, to former and following ages, as being equally salvation to both.*

* Thus Adam of St. Victor, in his hymn *Laudes Crucis attollamus*:—

‘ This the ladder Jacob saw
Whereby all men Christ shall draw
To Himself, both friends and foes:
Who with arms of love extended
In its limits comprehended
All the wide world and its woes.’

In this appropriating and peculiar interest in Jesus Christ lies our happiness, without which it avails not that He was ordained from eternity, and in time manifested. It is not the general contemplation, but the peculiar possession of Christ, that gives both solid comfort and strong persuasion to obedience and holiness, which is here the Apostle's particular scope.

Ver. 21. Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

Now, because it is faith that gives the soul this particular title to Jesus Christ, the Apostle adds this, to declare whom he meant by *you*. *You*, says he, *who by Him do believe in GOD, &c.*

Here we have: 1. The complete object of faith. 2. The ground or warrant of it. The object, *GOD in Christ*. The ground or warrant, *In that He raised Him up from the dead, and gave Him glory*.

A man may have, while living out of Christ (yea, he must, he cannot choose but have) a conviction within him, that there is a GOD; and further he may have, even out of Christ, some kind of belief of those things that are spoken concerning GOD; but to repose on GOD as his GOD and his salvation, which is indeed to believe in Him, this cannot be but where Christ is the *medium* through which we look upon GOD; for so long as we look upon GOD through our own guiltiness, we can see nothing but His wrath, and apprehend Him as an armed enemy; and therefore are so far from resting on Him as our happiness, that the more we view it, it puts us upon the more speed to fly from Him, and to cry out, *Who can dwell with everlasting burnings, and abide with a consuming fire?* Isa. xxxiii.

'The four arms of the cross,' says S. Hildebert, 'signified the four quarters of the world; and Christ was willing to be lifted up on the cross that He might draw all men to love and imitate Him, and finally to reign together with Him.' In the same way the writing on the cross was addressed to all people, nations, and languages, being written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, the representative languages of the world.

Bishop Hall, in his *Contemplations*, says: 'Lo, Thou that art the Mediator betwixt God and Man, the Reconciler of heaven and earth, art lifted up betwixt earth and heaven, that Thou mightest accord both. Those arms which thine enemies meant violently to extend, are stretched forth for the embracing of all mankind. Even while Thou sufferest, Thou reignest.'

14. But our Saviour, taking sin out of the way, puts Himself betwixt our sins and GOD, and so makes a wonderful change of our apprehension of Him. When you look through a red glass, the whole heavens seem bloody; but through pure uncoloured glass, you receive the clear light that is so refreshing and comfortable to behold. When sin unpardoned is betwixt, and we look on GOD through that, we can perceive nothing but anger and enmity in His countenance; but once make Christ, our pure Redeemer, the *medium*, and through Him, as clear transparent glass, the beams of GOD's favourable countenance shine in upon the soul. The Father cannot look upon His well-beloved Son but graciously and pleasingly. GOD looks on us out of Christ, sees us rebels, and fit to be condemned: we look on GOD as being just and powerful to punish us; but when Christ is betwixt, GOD looks on us in Him as justified, and we look on GOD in Him as pacified, and see the smiles of His favourable countenance. Take Christ out, all is terrible; interpose Him, all is full of peace; therefore set Him always betwixt, and by Him we shall believe in GOD.

The warrant and ground of believing in GOD by Christ, is this, that GOD *raised Him from the dead, and gave Him glory*, which evidences the full satisfaction of His death; and in all that work, both in His humiliation and exaltation, standing in our room, we may repute His work as ours. If all is paid that could be exacted of Him, and therefore He set free from death, then are we acquitted, and have nothing to pay. If He was raised from the dead and exalted to glory, then so shall we; He hath taken possession of that glory for us, and we may judge ourselves possessed of it already, because He, our head, possesseth it. And this, the last words of the verse confirm to us, implying this to be the very purpose and end for which GOD, having given Him to death, *raised Him up and gave Him glory*; it is for this end, expressly, *that our faith and hope might be in GOD*. The last end is, that we may have life and glory through Him; the nearer end, that in the meanwhile, till we attain them, we may have firm belief and hope of them, and rest on GOD as the giver of them, and so in part enjoy them beforehand, and be upheld in our joy and conflicts by the comfort of them. And as St. Stephen in his vision, faith doth, in a spiritual way, look through all the visible

heavens, and sees Christ at the Father's right hand, and is comforted by that in the greatest troubles, though it were amidst a shower of stones, as St. Stephen was. The comfort is no less than this, that being by faith made one with Christ, His present glory wherein He sits at the Father's right hand is an assurance to us that *where He is we shall be also*, John xiv. 3.

Ver. 22. Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren; see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently.

JESUS CHRIST is made unto us of GOD, *wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption*, 1 Cor. i. 30. It is a known truth, and yet very needful to be often represented to us, that redemption and holiness are undivided companions, yea, that we are redeemed on purpose for this end, that we should be holy. The pressing of this, we see, is here the Apostle's scope; and having by that reason enforced it in the general, he now takes that as concluded and confessed, and so makes use of it particularly to exhort to the exercise of that main Christian grace of *brotherly love*.

The obedience and holiness mentioned in the foregoing verses comprehend the whole duties and frame of a Christian life towards GOD and men: and, having urged that in the general, he specifies this grace of mutual Christian love, as the great evidence of their sincerity and the truth of their love to GOD; for men are subject to much hypocrisy this way, and deceive themselves; if they find themselves diligent in religious exercises, they scarcely once ask their hearts how they stand affected this way, namely, in love to their brethren. They can come constantly to the church, and pray, it may be, at home too, and yet cannot find in their hearts to forgive an injury.

As forgiving injuries argues the truth of piety, so it is that which makes all converse both sweet and profitable; and besides, it graces and commends men and their holy profession to such as are without and strangers to it, yea, even to their enemies.

Therefore is it that our Saviour doth so much recommend this to His disciples, and they to others, as we see in all their

Epistles. He gives it them as the very badge and livery by which they should be known for His followers: *By this shall all men know that you are My disciples, if ye love one another*, St. John xiii. 35. And St. Paul is frequent in exhorting to and extolling this grace. See Rom. xii. 10 and xiii. 8; 1 Cor. i. 13; Gal. v. 13; Eph. iv. 2; and in many other places. He calls it *the bond of perfectness*, Col. iii. 14—that grace which unites and binds all together. So doth our Apostle here, and often in this and the other Epistle; and that beloved disciple St. John, who leaned on our Saviour's breast, drank deep of that spring of love that was there, and therefore it streams forth so abundantly in his writings: they contain nothing so much as this divine doctrine of LOVE.

We have here: 1. The due qualifications of it. 2. A Christian's obligation to it.

The *qualifications* are three; namely, *sincerity, purity, and fervency*. The *sincerity* is expressed in the former clause of the verse, *unfeigned love*, and repeated again in the latter part, that it be *with a pure heart*, as the *purity* is included in *fervency*.

1. Love must be *unfeigned*, ἀνυπόκριτον. It appears that this dissimulation is a disease that is very incident in this particular. The Apostle St. Paul hath the same word, *Let love be* (ἀνυπόκριτος) *without dissimulation*, Rom. xii. 9; and the Apostle St. John to the same sense exhorts us, 1 John iii. 13, *My children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth*: that is, Let us see that our love have that double reality which is opposed to double, dissembled love; that it be cordial and effectual; that the professing of it arise from truth of affection, and, as much as may be, be seconded with action; that both the heart and the hand may be the seal of it rather than the tongue; not 'court holy-water,'* an empty noise of service and affection, that fears nothing more than to be put upon trial. Although thy brother with whom thou conversest cannot, it may be, see through thy false appearances, He who commands this love looks chiefly within, seeks it there, and, if He find it not there, hates them most who most pretend it; so that the art of dissembling, though never so well studied, cannot pass in this King's court, to

* Cf. the note at p. 26.

*whom all hearts are open and all desires known.** When, after variances, men are brought to an agreement, they are much subject to this, rather to cover their remaining malices with superficial verbal forgiveness than to dislodge them, and free the heart of them. This is a poor self-deceit. As the philosopher said to him, who being ashamed that he was espied by him in a tavern in the outer room, withdrew himself to the inner, he called after him, ‘That is not the way out; the more you go that way, you will be the further within it:’† so when hatreds are upon admonition not thrown out, but retire inward to hide themselves, they grow deeper and stronger than before; and those constrained semblances of reconciliation are but a false healing, do but skin the wound over, and therefore it usually breaks forth worse again.

How few there are that have truly maliceless hearts, and find this entire upright affection towards their brethren meeting them in their whole conversation, this *law of love* deeply impressed on their hearts, and from thence expressed in their words and actions, and that is *unfeigned love*, as real to their brethren as to themselves!

2. It must be *pure*, from a pure heart. This is not all one with the former, as some take it. It is true, doubleness or hypocrisy is an impurity, and a great one; but all impurity is not doubleness; one may really mean that friendship and affection he expresses, and yet it may be most contrary to that which is here required, because *impure*; such a *brotherly love* as that of Simeon and Levi, brethren in iniquity, as the expressing them *brethren*, Gen. xlix. 5, is taken to mean. When hearts are cemented together by impurity itself, by ungodly conversation and society in sin, as in uncleanness or drunkenness, &c., this is a swinish fraternity, a friendship which is contracted, as it were, by wallowing in the same mire. Call it good fellowship or what you will, all the fruit that in the end can be expected out of unholy friendliness and fellowship in sinning together is, to be tormented together, and to add each to the torment of another.

The mutual love of Christians must be pure, arising from

* From the collect for purity in our Communion Office, taken from the Salisbury Missal, and used in the ancient Offices of the Western Church.

† Said by Diogenes the Cynic to Demosthenes, as related by D. Laërtius, and also by Plutarch *de Profect. Virtut. Sent.* ed. Reiske, 1776, tom. vi. p. 307.

such causes as are pure and spiritual, from the sense of our Saviour's command and of His example; for He Himself joins that with it, *A new commandment give I you*, saith He, *that as I have loved you, so you also love one another*, John xiii. 34. They that are indeed lovers of GOD are united by that love; their hearts meet in Him, as in one centre, so they cannot but love one another. Where a godly man sees his Father's image, he is forced to love it; he loves those whom he perceives godly, so as to delight in them, because that image is in them; and those that appear destitute of it, he loves them so as to wish them partakers of that image.* And this is all for GOD; he loves *amicum in Deo, et inimicum propter Deum*; † that is, he loves a friend in GOD, and an enemy for GOD. And as the Christian's love is pure in its cause, so in its effects and exercise. His society and converse with any tends mainly to this, that he may mutually help and be helped in the knowledge and love of GOD; he desires most that he and his brethren may jointly mind their journey Heavenwards, and further one another in their way to the full enjoyment of GOD. And this is truly the love of a pure heart, which both begins and ends in GOD.

3. We must love *fervently*, not after a cold indifferent manner. Let the love of your brethren be as a fire within you, consuming that selfishness which is so contrary to it, and is so natural to men; let it set your thoughts on work to study how to do others good; let your love be an active love, intense within you, and extending itself in doing good to the souls and bodies of your brethren as they need, and you are able; to one by money, to another by counsel, to another by kindness. *Alium re, alium consilio, alium gratiâ.*¹

It is self-love that contracts the heart, and shuts out all other love, both of GOD and man, save only so far as our own interest carries, and that is still self-love; but the love of GOD dilates the heart, purifies love, and extends it to all men, but after a special manner directs it to those who are more pecu-

* Cf. Scougal's *Life of God in the Soul of Man*, in which he powerfully urges this great truth, that—'To beget charity, we must remember that all men are nearly related unto God, and that they carry God's image upon them.'

† S. Aug. *Confess.* iv. 9.

¹ Seneca *de Beneficiis*, lib. i. c. 2.

liarily beloved of Him, and that is here the particular love required.

Love of the Brethren.] In this is implied our obligation after a special manner to love *those of the household of faith*, because they are our *brethren*. This includes not only, as Abraham saith, *that there ought to be no strife* (Gen. xiii. 8), but it binds most strongly to this sincere, and pure, and fervent love; and therefore the Apostle, in the next verse, repeats expressly the doctrine of the mysterious new-birth, and explains it more fully, which he had mentioned in the entrance of the Epistle, and again referred to, v. 14, 17.

There is in this fervent love, sympathy with the griefs of our brethren, desire and endeavour to help them, bearing their infirmities, and recovering them too, if it may be; raising them when they fall, admonishing and reproofing them as is needful, sometimes sharply, and yet still in love; rejoicing in their good, in their gifts and graces, so far from envying them, that we be glad as if they were our own. There is the same blood running in their veins: you have the same Father, and the same Spirit within you, and the same Jesus Christ, the head of that glorious fraternity, *The first-born among many brethren*, Rom. viii. 29; of whom the Apostle saith, that *He hath re-collected into one all things in Heaven and in earth*, Eph. i. 10. The word is, *ἀνακεφαλαιώσασθαι*, *gathered them into one head*; and so suits very fitly to express our union in Him. *In whom*, says he in the same Epistle, Eph. iv. 16, *the whole body is fitly compacted together*; and he adds that which agrees to our purpose, that this body *grows up and edifies itself in love*. All the members receive spirits from the same head, and are useful and serviceable one to another, and to the whole body. Thus, these brethren, receiving of the same Spirit from their head, Christ, are most strongly bent to the good of one another. If there be but a thorn in the foot, the back boweth, the head stoops down, the eyes look, the hands reach to it, and endeavour its help and ease: * in a word, all the members partake of the good and evil, one of another. Now, by how much this body is more spiritual and lively, so much the stronger must the union and love of the parts of it be, each to other. You are brethren by the same new-birth, and born to the same

* *Spinam calcat pes*, &c.—S. Aug. Cf. Lect. on Rom. xii. 4.

Inheritance, and such an one as shall not be an apple of strife amongst you, to beget debates and contentions: no, it is enough for all, and none shall prejudge another, but you shall have joy in the happiness one of another; seeing you shall then be *perfect in love*; all harmony, no difference in judgment or in affection, all your harps tuned to the same new song, which you shall sing for ever. Let that love begin here which shall never end.

And this same union, I conceive, is likewise expressed in the first words of the verse. Seeing you are partakers of that work of sanctification by the same Word, and the same Spirit that works it in all the faithful, and by that are called and incorporated into that fraternity, therefore live in it and like it. You are purified to it; therefore love one another after that same manner purely. Let the profane world scoff at that name of *brethren*; you will not be so foolish as to be scorned out of it,* being so honourable and happy; and the day is at hand wherein those that scoff you would give much more than all that the best of them ever possessed in the world, to be admitted into your number.

Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit.] Here is: 1. The chief seat, or subject of the work of sanctification, *the soul*. 2. The subordinate means, *truth*. 3. The nature of it, *obeying of truth*. 4. The chief worker of it, *the Holy Spirit*.

1. Sanctification is no doubt a work that goes through the whole man, renews and purifies all. Heb. 10, 22; 2 Cor. vii. 1. But because it purifies the soul, therefore it is that it does purify all. There impurity begins, Matth. xv. 18; not only evil thoughts, but all evil actions come forth from the heart, which is there all one with the soul; and therefore this purifying begins there, *makes the tree good that the fruit may be good*. It is not so much external performances that make the difference between men as their inward temper. We meet here in the same place, and all partake of the same word and prayer; but how wide a difference is there, in GOD'S eye, betwixt an

* Hooker observes, that the Puritans or zealots for the Geneva discipline used high terms of separation between themselves and the rest of the world; calling themselves 'the Brethren,' 'the Godly,' and so forth; and all others 'worldlings, time-servers, pleasers of men not of God,' and such like.—*Pref. to E. P. c. iii. § 11.*

unwashed profane heart in the same exercise, and a soul purified in some measure *in obeying the truth*, and desirous to be further purified by further obeying it!

2. That which is the subordinate means of this purity is, *The Truth*, or the Word of GOD. It is true and pure in itself, and it begets truth and purity in the heart, by teaching it concerning the holy and pure nature of GOD, showing it and His holy will, which is to us the rule of purity; and by representing Jesus Christ unto us as the fountain of our purity and renovation, *from whose fulness we may receive grace for grace*, John i. 16.

3. The nature of this work, that wherein the very being of this purifying consists, is, *the receiving, or obeying of this truth*; so Gal. iii. 1, where it is put for right believing. The chief point of obedience is believing; the proper obedience to truth is, to give credit to it; and this divine belief doth necessarily bring the whole soul into obedience and conformity to that pure truth which is in the Word; and so the very purifying and renewing of the soul is this obedience of faith, as unbelief is its chief impurity and disobedience; therefore, Acts xv. 9, faith is said to *purify the heart*.

4. The chief worker of this sanctification is, *the Holy Spirit of GOD*. They are said here to *purify themselves*, for it is certain and undeniable, that the soul itself doth act in believing or obeying the truth; but not of itself, it is not the first principle of motion. They purify their souls, but it is *by the Spirit*. They do it by His enlivening power, and a purifying virtue received from Him. Faith, or obeying the truth, works this purity, but the Holy Ghost works that faith: as in the fore-cited place, GOD is said to *purify their hearts by faith*, ver. 8. He doth that by giving them the Holy Ghost. The truth is pure, and purifying, yet can it not of itself purify the soul but by the obeying or believing of it; and the soul cannot obey or believe but by the Spirit which works in it that faith, and by that faith purifies it, and works love in it. It is the impurity and earthliness of men's minds that is the great cause of disunion and disaffection amongst them, and of all their strifes. Jam. iv. 1.

This Spirit is that fire which refines and purifies the soul from the dross of earthly desires that possess it, and which sub-

limates it to the love of GOD, and of His saints, because they are His and are purified by the same Spirit. It is the property of fire to draw together things of the same kind: the outward fire of enmities and persecution that are kindled against the godly by the world doth somewhat, and, if it were more considered by them, would do more, in this knitting their hearts closer one to another; but it is this inward pure and purifying fire of the Holy Ghost that doth most powerfully unite them.

The true reason why there is so little truth of this Christian mutual love amongst those that are called Christians, is, because there is so little of this purifying obedience to the truth whence it flows. Faith unfeigned would beget this *love unfeigned*. Men may exhort to them both, but they require the hand of God to work them in the heart.

Ver. 23. Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

THE two things which make up the Apostle's exhortation are the very sum of a Christian's duty; to walk as obedient children towards God, and as loving brethren one towards another: and that it may yet have the deeper impression, he here represents to them anew that new-birth he mentioned before, by which they are the children of GOD, and so brethren.

We shall first speak of this Regeneration; and then of the Seed.

1. Of the regeneration itself. This is the great dignity of believers, that they are *the sons of GOD*, John i. 12, as it is the great evidence of the love of GOD, that He hath bestowed this dignity on them. 1 John iii. 1. For they are no way needful to Him: He had from eternity a Son perfectly like Himself, *the character of His person*, Heb. i. 3, and one Spirit proceeding from both; and there is no creation, neither the first nor the second, can add anything to Those and Their happiness. It is most true of that Blessed Trinity, *Satis amplum alter alteri theatrum sumus*.* But the gracious purpose of GOD to impart His goodness appears in this, that He hath made Himself such a multitude of sons, not only Angels that are so called, but Man, a little lower than they in nature, yet dignified with this name in his creation: Luke iii. 38,

* Epicurus, quoted by Seneca, *Ep.* 7. Cf. Bacon, *Essay X.*

Which was the Son of Adam, which was the Son of GOD. He had not only the impression of GOD's footsteps (as they speak) which all the creatures have, but of His image.* And most of all in this is His rich grace magnified, that sin having defaced that image, and so degraded man from his honour, and divested him of that title of sonship, and stamped our polluted nature with the marks of vileness and bondage, yea, with the very image of Satan, rebellion and enmity against GOD; that out of mankind, thus ruined and degenerated, GOD should raise to Himself a new race and generation of sons.

For this design was the *Word made flesh*, John i. 12, the Son made man, to make men the sons of GOD. And it is by Him alone we are restored to this; they who receive Him receive with Him, and in Him, this privilege, ver. 12. And therefore it is a sonship by adoption, and is so called in Scripture, in difference from His eternal and ineffable generation, who is, and was, *the only-begotten Son of GOD*. Yet, that we may know that this Divine adoption is not a mere outward relative name, as that of men, the sonship of the saints is here, and often elsewhere in Scripture, expressed by *new generation* and *new birth*. They are *begotten of GOD*. John i. 13; 1 John ii. 29. A new being, a spiritual life, is communicated to them; they have in them of their Father's Spirit; and this is derived to them through Christ, and therefore called His Spirit. Gal. iv. 6. They are not only accounted of the family of GOD by adoption, but by this new-birth they are indeed His children, *partakers of the Divine nature*, as our Apostle expresseth it, 2 Peter i. 4.

Now though it be easy to speak and hear the words of this doctrine, yet the truth itself that is in it is so high and mysterious, that it is altogether impossible, without a portion of this new nature, to conceive of it. Corrupt nature cannot understand it. What wonder that there is nothing of it in the subtlest schools of philosophers, when a very *doctor in Israel* mistook it grossly? John iii. 10. It is indeed a great mystery, and he that was the sublimest of all the Evangelists, and there-

* 'Whereas the likeness of God in other creatures (as the school speaks) is found only *per modum vestigii*, the likeness of God is in man *per modum imaginis*. Aquinas, *pars 1, quæst. 93, art. 6.*—Dr. Boys' *Works*, London: 1622, p. 332.

fore called the Divine, the soaring eagle (as they compare him),* he is more abundant in this subject than the rest.

And the most profitable way of considering this regeneration and sonship is certainly to follow the light of those holy writings, and not to jangle in disputes about the order and manner of it, of which though somewhat may be profitably said, and safely, namely, so much as the Scripture speaks, yet much that is spoken of it and debated by many, is but an useless expense of time and pains. What those previous dispositions are, and how far they go, and where is the mark or point of difference betwixt them and the infusion of spiritual life, I conceive not so easily determinable.

If naturalists and physicians cannot agree upon the order of formation of the parts of the body in the womb, how much less can we be peremptory in the other! If there be so many wonders (as indeed there be) in the natural structure and frame of man, how much richer in wonders must this Divine and supernatural generation be! See how David speaks of the former. Psal. cxxxix. 14, 15. Things spiritual being more refined than material things, their workmanship must be far more wonderful and curious. But then, it must be viewed with a spiritual eye. There is an unspeakable lustre and beauty of the new creature, by the mixture of all Divine graces, each setting off another; as so many rich several colours in embroidery; but who can trace that Invisible Hand that works it, so as to determine of the order, and to say which was first, which

* The mysterious cherubic tetramorph, or four-faced creature, seen in the visions of Ezekiel and S. John, was considered by the ancients to have at least a secondary and subordinate reference to the Four Evangelists. Thus Durand says: 'S. Matthew is signified by a man, because his Gospel is chiefly occupied with the humanity of Christ: whence his history begins with His human pedigree. S. Mark by a lion,

which roareth in the desert, and his Gospel beginneth with 'The voice of one crying in the wilderness.' S. Luke by an ox, an animal fit for sacrifice; because he dwelleth on the passion of Christ. S. John by the eagle, because, soaring to the utmost height, he saith "In the beginning was the Word." And Bishop Taylor writes under the portrait of S. John, in his *Great Exemplar*:—

'Look how the quick-sight eagle mounts on high,
Beholds the sun with her all-piercing eye:
So unto CHRIST'S divinity I soar,
Beyond the strain of these that are before.'

See also Dr. Cave's *Life of S. John*; the *Study of the Gospels*, where the subject is fully treated; and Mr. Bowden on *The Six days of Creation*, p. 117. especially Mr. Isaac Williams's *Thoughts on*

second, and so on; whether faith, or repentance, &c.? This is certain, that these and all graces do inseparably make up the same work, and are all in the new formation of every soul that is born again.

If the ways of GOD'S universal Providence be untraceable, then, most of all, the workings of His grace are conducted in a secret unperceivable way in this new-birth. He gives this spiritual being as the dew, which is silently and insensibly formed, and this generation of the Sons of GOD is compared to it by the Psalmist, Psal. cx. 3;* they have this original from Heaven as the dew. *Except a man be born from above,† he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD.* John iii. 3. And it is the peculiar work of the Spirit of GOD; as He Himself speaks of the dew to Job, Job xxxviii. 28, *Hath the rain a father, or who hath begotten the drops of the dew?* The sharpest wits are to seek in the knowledge and discovery of it, as Job speaketh of *a way which no fowl knoweth, and which the vulture's eye hath not seen*, ch. xxviii. ver. 7.

To contest much, how in this regeneration He works upon the will and renews it, is to little purpose, provided this be granted, that it is in His power to regenerate and renew a man at His pleasure: and how is it possible not to grant this, unless we will run into that error, to think that GOD hath made a creature too hard for Himself to rule, or hath willingly exempted it? And shall the works of the Almighty, and, of all others, *this* work especially wherein He glories most, fail in His hand, and remain imperfect? Shall there be any abortive births whereof GOD is the Father? *Shall I bring to the birth, and not cause to bring forth?* Isa. lxvi. 9. No; no sinner so dead, but there is virtue in His hand to revive out of the very stones. Though the most impenitent hearts are as stones within them, yet He *can make of them children to Abraham*, Luke iii. 8. He can dig out *the heart of stone*, and put *a heart of flesh* in its place, Ezek. xxxvi. 26; otherwise, He would not have made such a promise. *The sons of GOD are born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of GOD*, John i. 13. If His sovereign will be not a sufficient principle of this Regeneration, why then, says the Apostle St. James, *Of*

* *The birth of thy womb is as the dew of the morning.* Cf. *Theol. Lect.* 'Of Regeneration.' † *ἀνωθεν* is so rendered in the marginal reading of our version.

His own will beget He us? And he adds the subordinate cause, *By the word of truth*, Jam. i. 18.

2. This brings us to consider, *secondly*, that by which we are *born again*, namely, *the Word of GOD*, which is here called the *immortal seed* of the new birth. It is *by the word of truth* that GOD begets us, and it is *of His own will*. Therefore it is that the Lord hath appointed the continuance of the ministry of this word, to the end that His Church may be still fruitful, bringing forth sons unto Him; that the assemblies of His people may be like *flocks of sheep coming up from the washing, none barren amongst them*, Cant. iv. 2.

Though the Ministers of this Word, by reason of their employment in dispensing it, have, by the Scriptures, the relation of parents imparted to them, (which is an exceeding great dignity for them, as they are called *co-workers* with God; and the same Apostle that writes so, calls the Galatians his *little children of whom he travailed in birth again till Christ were formed in them*; and the ministers of GOD have often very much pain in this travail;) yet, the privilege of the Father of Spirits remains untouched, which is, effectually to beget again those same spirits which He creates, and to make that seed of the Word fruitful in what way, where, and when He will. The preacher of the Word, be he never so powerful, can cast this seed only into the ear; his hand reaches no further; and the hearer, by his attention, may convey it into his head; but it is the supreme Father and Teacher above, who carries it into the heart, the only soil wherein it proves lively and fruitful. One man cannot reach the heart of another; how should he, then, renew its fruitfulness? * If natural births have been always acknowledged to belong to GOD's prerogative (Psal. cxxvii. 3: *Lo, children are an heritage of the Lord, and the fruit of the womb is His reward*; and so Jacob answered wisely to his wife's foolish passion, Gen. xxx. 2, *Am I in God's stead?*) how much more is this new-birth wholly dependent on His hand!

But though this word cannot beget without Him, yet it is by this word that He begets, and ordinarily not without it. It is true that the substantial Eternal Word is to us (as we said) the spring of this new-birth and life, the head from whom the

* Cf. above, p. 16; also vol. ii. p. 342.

spirits of this supernatural life flow; but that by *the Word* here is meant the Gospel, the Apostle puts out of doubt in the last verse, *And this is the word which by the Gospel is preached unto you.** Therefore this Word is thus really the seed of this new-birth, because it contains and declares that other WORD, the SON OF GOD as our life. The word is spoken in common, and so is the same to all hearers; but then, all hearts being naturally shut against it, GOD doth by His own hand open some to receive it, and mixes it with faith; and those it renews, and restoreth them in the image of GOD, draws the traits of it anew, and makes them the Sons of GOD. *My doctrine shall drop as the dew,* says Moses. Deut. xxxii. 2. The word, as a heavenly dew, not falling beside, but dropped into the heart by the hand of GOD's own Spirit, makes it all become spiritual and heavenly, and turns it into one of those drops of dew that the children of GOD are compared to, Psal. cx. 3, *Thou hast the dew of thy youth.*†

The natural estate of the soul is darkness, and the Word as a Divine light shining into it, transforms the soul into its own nature; so that as the Word is called *light*, so is the soul that is renewed by it. *Ye were darkness, but now are ye,* not only enlightened, but *light in the Lord*, Eph. v. 8. All the evils of the natural mind are often comprised under the name of darkness and error, and therefore the whole work of conversion is likewise signified by light and truth: *He begat us by the word of truth*, says St. James, i. 18: so in 2 Cor. iv. 6, alluding to the first *Fiat Lux*, or *Let there be light*, in the creation of the world, St. Paul declares, *GOD, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of GOD, in the face of Jesus Christ.*‡ The word brought within the soul by the Spirit lets it see its own necessity and Christ's sufficiency, convinceth it throughly, and causeth it to cast over itself upon Him for life; and this is the very begetting of it again to eternal life.

* It is to be noted, that in ver. 23 the expression is *διὰ Λόγου ζώντος Θεοῦ*, while in ver. 25 it is *τὸ δὲ ῥῆμα Κυρίου*.

† This obscure and difficult verse is thus rendered by Holden: 'Thy people shall willingly offer themselves in the day

of Thy power, arrayed in the beauties of holiness; Thy offspring shall be more numerous than the dew-drops from the womb of the morning.'

‡ *Fiat Lux*, &c. Cf. below, p. 167.

So that this efficacy of the Word to prove successful seed, doth not hang upon the different abilities of the preachers, their having more or less rhetoric or learning. It is true, eloquence hath a great advantage in civil and moral things to persuade, and to draw the hearers by the ears, almost which way it will; but in this spiritual work, to revive a soul, to beget it anew, the influence of Heaven is the main thing requisite. There is no way so common and plain (being warranted by GOD in the delivery of saving truth), but the Spirit of GOD can revive the soul by it; and the most skilful and authoritative way, yea, being withal very spiritual, yet may effect nothing, because left alone to itself. One word of holy Scripture, or of truth conformable to it, may be the principle of regeneration to him that hath heard multitudes of excellent sermons, and hath often read the whole Bible, and is still unchanged. If the Spirit of GOD preach that one or any such word to the soul, *GOD so loved the world, that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life*, John iii. 15, it will be cast down with the fear of perishing, and driven out of itself by that, and raised up and drawn to Jesus Christ by the hope of everlasting life; it will believe on Him that it may have life, and be inflamed with the love of GOD, and give itself to Him who so loved the world as to give His only begotten Son to purchase for us that everlasting life. Thus may that word prove this *immortal seed*, which, though very often read and heard before, was but a dead letter. A drop of those liquors which are called spirits operates more than large draughts of other waters: one word spoken by the Lord to the heart is all spirit, and doth that which whole streams of man's eloquence could never effect.

In hearing of the Word, men look usually too much upon men, and forget from what spring the word hath its power; they observe too narrowly the different hands of the sowers, and too little depend on His hand, who is the great Lord of both seed-time and harvest. Be it sown by a weak hand, or a stronger, the immortal seed is still the same; yea, suppose the worst, that it be a foul hand that sows it, that the preacher himself be not so sanctified and of so edifying a life as you would wish, yet the seed itself, being good, contracts no de-

filement, and may be effectual to regeneration in some, and to the strengthening of others; although he that is not renewed by it himself cannot have much hope of success, nor reap much comfort by it, and usually doth not seek nor regard it much; but all instruments are alike in an Almighty hand.

Hence learn: 1. That true conversion is not so slight a work as we commonly account it. It is not an outward change of some bad customs, which gains the name of a reformed man, in the ordinary dialect; it is a new-birth and being, and elsewhere called *a new creation*. Though it be but a change in qualities, yet it is such a one, and the qualities are so far different, that it bears the name of the most substantial productions; from *children of disobedience*, and that which is linked with it, *heirs of wrath*, to be *sons of GOD and heirs of glory!* They have a new spirit given them, *a free, princely, noble spirit*, as the word is, Psal. li. 12, and this spirit acts in their life and actions.*

2. Consider the great dignity of this regeneration, and be kindled with the ambition of it. How doth a Christian pity that poor vanity which men make so much noise about, of their kindred and extraction! This is worth glorying in indeed, to be of the highest blood-royal, and in the nearest relation, sons of THE KING of kings by this new-birth! This adds matchless honour to that birth which is so honourable in the esteem of the world.†

* The elder Leighton, in the *Epitome* of his troubles, observes: 'The Prophet David desireth the Lord to give him a *free spirit*, Psal. li. 12; but the word in the original signifieth a *princely* and *royal spirit*, a *well-framed spirit*,' p. 65. See the lines in the *Christian Year* on *The Psalmist Repenting*, and imploring to be—

'With that free Spirit blest,
Who to the contrite can dispense
The princely heart of innocence.'

† J. Smith, the Platonist, in his *Discourse on the Excellency and Nobleness of True Religion*, has the following passage: 'Religion is a Heaven-born thing, the seed of God in the spirits of men, whereby they are formed to a similitude and likeness of Himself. A true Christian is every way of a most noble extraction, of a heavenly and divine pedigree, being born *ἀνωθεν* "from above," as S. John expresseth it. The line of earthly nobility, if it were followed to the beginning, would lead to Adam, where all the lines of descent meet in one; and the root of all extractions would be found planted in nothing else but Adamah, "red earth:" but a Christian derives his line from CHRIST. We may truly say of Christ and Christians, as Zeba and Zalmunna said of Gideon's brethren, "As he is, so are they (according to their capacity), each one resembling the children of a king." Titles of worldly honour in Heaven's heraldry are only *tituli nominales*; but titles of Divine dignity signify some real thing, some real

But we all pretend to be of this number. Would we not study to cozen ourselves, it would not be so hard to discover whether we are or not.

In many, their false confidence is too evident; there is no appearance in them of the Spirit of GOD, not a footstep like His leading, nor any trace of that character of *the children of GOD*, given by St. Paul, Rom. viii. 14, namely, the being *led by the Spirit of GOD*; not a lineament of GOD's visage, as their Father. *If ye know that He is righteous* (says St. John, 1 Ep. ii. 29), *ye know then that every one that doth righteousness is born of Him*. And so, on the other hand, how contrary to the most Holy GOD, the lover and fountain of holiness, are they who swinishly love to wallow in the mire of unholiness! Is swearing and cursing the accent of the regenerate, the children of GOD? No; it is the language of hell. Do children delight to indignify and dishonour their father's name? No; they delight in the exalting and magnifying of it. Again, earthly-mindedness is a countersign. Shall the king's children, *they that were brought up in scarlet* (as Jeremiah laments), *embrace the dunghill*? Lam. iv. 5. Princes, by their high birth and education, have usually their hearts filled with far higher thoughts than mean persons: the children of the poorer sort being pinched that way, their greatest thoughts, as they grow up, are ordinarily, how they shall shift to live, how they shall get bread; but princes think either of the conquest or governing of kingdoms. Are you not born to a better inheritance, if indeed you are *born again*: why then do you vilify yourselves? Why are you not more in prayer? There are no dumb children among those that are *born of GOD*; they all have that Spirit of prayer by which they not only speak, but *cry, Abba Father*.

3. Consider the surpassing worth of the *seed* of this regeneration, *the word of GOD*. The most part of us esteem the preaching of the word as an evanishing discourse that amuses us for an hour. We look for no more, and therefore we find no

and Divine communication to the spirits and minds of men. All perfections and excellences, in any kind, are to be measured by their approach to that primitive perfection of all, God Himself; and therefore, participation of the Divine

nature cannot but entitle a Christian to the highest degree of dignity. "Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God."—Ch. 1. Cf. Scougal, *Disc.* i. p. 73.

more. We receive it not as the immortal seed of our regeneration, as *the ingrafted word that is able to save our souls*. Jam. i. 21. Oh! learn to reverence this holy and happy ordinance of GOD, this *Word of Life*, and know, that they who are not regenerated, and so saved by it, shall be judged by it.

Not of corruptible seed.] It is a main cause of the unsuitable and unworthy behaviour of Christians, (those that profess themselves such,) that a great part of them either do not know, or at least do not seriously and frequently consider, what is indeed the estate and quality of Christians, how excellent and of what descent their new nature is; therefore they are often to be reminded of this. Our Apostle here doth so, and by it binds on all his exhortations.

Of this new being we have here these two things specified:
 1. Its high original from GOD, *Born again by His word*:
 2. That which so much commends good things, its duration. And this follows from the other; for if the *seed* or principle of this be *incorruptible*, itself must be so too. The word of GOD is not only a living and ever abiding word in itself, but likewise in reference to this new-birth and spiritual life of a Christian; and in this sense that which is here spoken of it is intended: it is therefore called, not only an *abiding word* but *incorruptible seed*, which expressly relates to regeneration. And because we are most sensible of the good and evil of things by comparison, the everlastingness of the word and of that spiritual life which it begets, is set off by the frailty and shortness of natural life, and of all the good that concerns it. This the Apostle expresseth in the words of Isaiah,* in the next verse.

Ver. 24. For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass :
 the grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away.

IN expressing the vanity and frailty of the natural life of man, it agrees very well with the subject to call him *flesh*, giving to the whole man the name of his corruptible part, both to make the wretched and perishing condition of this life more sensible, and man the more humble by it: for though by providing all for the flesh, and bestowing his whole time in the endeavours which are of the flesh's concernment, he remembers it too much, and forgets his spiritual and immortal part; yet, in that over-

* xl. 6-8.

eager care for the flesh, he seems, in some sense, to forget that he is flesh, or, at least, that flesh is perishing because flesh; extending his desires and projects so far for the flesh, as if it were immortal, and should always abide to enjoy and use these things. As the philosopher said of his countrymen, upbraiding at once their surfeitings and excess in feasting, and their sumptuousness in building, 'That they ate as if they meant to die to-morrow, and yet built as if they were never to die;' * thus, in men's immoderate pursuits of earth, they seem both to forget they are anything else beside flesh, and, in this sense too, to forget that they are flesh, that is, mortal and perishing; they rightly remember neither their immortality nor their mortality. If we consider what it is to be flesh, the naming of that were sufficient to the purpose: *All men are flesh*; but it is plainer thus, *All flesh is grass*. Thus, in the lxxviiith Psalm, *He remembered that they were but flesh*: that speaks their frailty enough; but it is added, to make the vanity of their estate the clearer—*a wind that passeth away, and cometh not again*. So Psal. ciii. 15, *As for man, his days are as grass, as a flower of the field so he flourisheth. For the wind passeth over it and it is gone, and the place thereof shall know it no more*.

This natural life is compared, even by natural men, to the vainest things, and scarcely find they things light enough to express its *vanity*; and as it is here called *grass*, so they have compared the generations of men to the leaves of trees.† But the light of Scripture doth most discover this, and it is a lesson that requires the Spirit of GOD to teach it aright. *Teach us* (says Moses, Psal. xc. 12) *so to number our days, that we may apply our hearts unto wisdom*. And David (Psal. xxxix. 4), *Make me to know my life, how frail I am*. So Jam. iv. 14, *What is your life? it is even a vapour*. And here it is called *grass*. So Job xiv. 1, 2, *Man that is born of a woman, is of*

* Empedocles said this of the citizens of Agrigentum. See Diog. Laert.

† 'Like leaves on trees, the race of man is found,
Now green in youth, now withering on the ground;
Another race the following spring supplies,
They fall successive and successive rise:
So generations in their course decay;
So flourish these, when those have passed away.'

Homer, *I. Z.* 146—Pope vi. 181. Cf. in the *Christian Year* entitled 'Forest
Eclus. xiv. 18; and the *Dionysiacs* of Leaves in Autumn.'
Nonnus, iii. 27. See also the poem

few days and full of trouble. He cometh forth like a flower and is cut down.

Grass hath its root in the earth, and is fed by the moisture of it, and for a while endures ; but, besides that it is under the hazard of such weather as favours it not, or of the scythe that cuts it down, give it all the forbearance that may be, let it be free from both those, yet how quickly will it wither of itself ! Set aside those many accidents, the smallest of which is able to destroy our natural life, the diseases of our own bodies, and outward violences, and casualties that cut down many in their greenness, in the flower of their youth, the utmost term is not long ; in the course of nature it will wither. Our life is indeed a lighted torch, either blown out by some stroke or some wind, or, if spared, yet within a while it burns away, and will die out of itself.

And all the glory of Man.] This is elegantly added. There is indeed a great deal of seeming difference betwixt the outward conditions of life amongst men. Shall the rich, and honourable, and beautiful, and healthful go in together, under the same name, with the baser and unhappier part, the poor, wretched sort of the world, who seem to be born for nothing but sufferings and miseries ? At least, hath the wise no advantage beyond the fools ? Is all grass ? Make you no distinction ? No ; *all is grass*, or if you will have some other name, be it so, once this is true, that *all flesh is grass* ; and if that glory which shines so much in your eyes must have a difference, then this is all it can have,—it is but *the flower of that same grass* ; somewhat above the common grass in gayness, a little comelier, and better apparelled than it, but partaker of its frail and fading nature ; it hath no privilege nor immunity that way, yea, of the two, is the less durable, and usually shorter lived ; at the best it decays with it : *The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away.*

How easily and quickly hath the highest splendour of a man's prosperity been blasted, either by men's power or by the immediate hand of GOD ! *The Spirit of the Lord blows upon it* (as Isaiah says, ch. xl. 7), and by that, not only *the grass withers*, but *the flower fades*, though never so fair. *When thou correctest man for iniquity*, says David, *thou makest his beauty to consume away like a moth*, Psal. xxxix. 11. How many

have the casualties of fire, or war, or shipwreck, in one day, or in one night, or in a small part of either, turned out of great riches into extreme poverty! And the instances are not few, of those who have on a sudden fallen from the top of honour into the foulest disgraces, not by degrees coming down the stair they went up, but tumbled down headlong. And the most vigorous beauty and strength of body, how doth a few days' sickness, or if it escape that, a few years' time, blast that flower! Yea, those higher advantages which have somewhat both of truer and more lasting beauty in them, the endowments of wit, and learning, and eloquence, yea, and of moral goodness and virtue, yet they cannot rise above this word, they are still, in all their glory, but the *flower of grass*; their root is in the earth. Natural ornaments are of some use in this present life, but they reach no further. When men have wasted their strength, and endured the toil of study night and day, it is but a small parcel of knowledge they can attain to, and they are forced to lie down in the dust in the midst of their pursuit of it: that head that lodges most sciences, shall within a while be disfurnished of them all; and the tongue that speaks most languages be silenced.

The great projects of kings and princes, and they also themselves, come under this same notion; all the vast designs that are framing in their heads fall to the ground in a moment; *They return to their dust, and in that day all their thoughts perish*, Psal. cxlvi. 4. Archimedes was killed in the midst of his demonstration.*

If they themselves did consider this in the heat of their affairs, it would much allay the swelling and loftiness of their minds; and if they who live upon their favour would consider it, they would not value it at so high a rate, and buy it so dear as often they do. *Men of low degree are vanity*, says the Psalmist (Psal. lxii. 9), but he adds, *men of high degree are a lie*. From base, mean persons we expect nothing; but the estate of great persons promises fair, and often keeps not its promise; therefore they are a lie, although they can least endure that word. They are, in respect of mean persons, as the flower to the grass; a somewhat fairer lustre they have, but no more endurance, nor exemption from decaying.

* See vol. ii. pp. 287-8, 357.

Thus, then, the assertion in the text is an universal and undeniable truth: it begins here with *διότι*, and is as sure a conclusion as the surest of those in their best demonstrations, which they call *διότι*. And as particular men, so whole states and kingdoms are thus; they have their budding, flourishing, and withering, and it is in both, as with flowers—when they are fullest spread, then they are near their declining and withering. And thus it is with all whole generations of men upon earth: as Solomon says, *One goeth and another cometh*, Eccl. i. 4; but not a word of abiding at all. We, in our thoughts, shut up Death into a very narrow compass, namely, into the moment of our expiring; but the truth is, as the Moralist observes, it goes through all our life: for we are still losing and spending life as we enjoy it, yea, our very enjoying of it is the spending of it. Yesterday's life is dead to-day, and so shall this day's life be to-morrow.* *We spend our years*, says Moses, in Psal. xc. 9, *as a tale*, or as *a thought*,† so swift and evanishing is it. Each word helps a tale towards its end, and then (in that appears the vanity‡), when it is done, it evanishes as a sound in the air. What is become of all the pompous solemnities of kings and princes at their births and marriages, coronations and triumphs? They are now as a dream; as St. Luke (Acts xxv. 23) calls the pomp of Agrippa and Bernice, *φαντασία*, a mere phantasy.

Hence, learn the folly and pride of man who can glory and please himself in the frail and wretched being he hath here, who doats on this poor natural life, and cannot be persuaded to think on one higher and more abiding, although this course of time, and his daily experience, tell him this truth, that *all flesh is grass*, Isa. xl. 6. Yea, the Prophet prefixes to these words a command of crying—the *voice said*, *Cry!* they must be shouted aloud in our ears ere we will hear them, and by that time the sound of the cry is done we have forgotten it again.

* Memini non repente nos in mortem incidere, sed minutatim procedere. Quotidie morimur; quotidie enim demitur aliqua pars vitæ: et tunc quoque cum crescimus, vita decrescit. Infantiam amisimus, deinde pueritiam, deinde adolescentiam: usque ad hesternum, quidquid transiit temporis perit: hunc ipsum quem agimus diem, cum morte dividimus. Quemadmodum clepsydræ

non extremum stillicidium exhaurit, sed quidquid ante defluxit: sic ultima hora, qua esse desinimus, non sola mortem facit, sed sola consummat. Tunc ad illam pervenimus, sed diu venimus.—Sen. *Ep.* 24.

† Cf. marginal reading.

‡ The printed text reads, 'and then in that the vanity, when it is done,' &c.

Would we consider this, in the midst of those vanities that toss our light minds to and fro, it would give us wiser thoughts and ballast our hearts; make them more solid and steadfast in those spiritual endeavours which concern a durable condition, a being that abides for ever; in comparison of which the longest term of natural life is less than a moment, and the happiest estate of it but a heap of miseries. Were all of us more constantly prosperous than any one of us is, yet that one thing were enough to cry down the price we put upon this life, that it continues not. As that King answered to one who had a mind to flatter him in the midst of a pompous triumph, by saying, What is wanting here? *Continuance*, said he. It was wisely said at any time, but wisest of all, to have so sober a thought in such a solemnity, in which weak heads cannot escape either to be wholly drunk, or somewhat giddy at least. Surely we forget this, when we grow vain upon any human glory or advantage; the colour of it pleases us, and we forget that it is but a flower, and foolishly over-estimate it. This is like that madness upon flowers, which is somewhere prevalent, where they will give as much for one flower as would buy a good dwelling-house.* Is it not a most foolish bargain, to bestow continual pains and diligence upon the purchasing of great possessions or honours, if we believe this, that the best of them is no other than a short-lived flower, and to neglect the purchase of those glorious mansions of eternity, a garland of such flowers as wither not, an unfading crown, that everlasting life, and those everlasting pleasures that are at the right hand of GOD?

Now, that life which shall never end must begin here; it is the new spiritual life, whereof the word of GOD is the immortal seed; and in opposition to corruptible seed and the corruptible life of flesh, it is here said to endure for ever. And for this end is the frailty of natural life mentioned, that our affections may be drawn off from it to this spiritual life, which is not subject unto death.

Ver. 25. But the word of the Lord endureth for ever; and this is the word which by the Gospel is preached unto you.

THE word of GOD is so like Himself, and carries so plainly the image and impression of His power and wisdom, that where

* The Tulipomania in Holland.

they are spoken of together, it is sometimes doubtful whether the expressions are to be referred to Himself or to His word (as Heb. iv. 12; and so here): but there is no hazard in referring them either way, seeing there is truth in both, and pertinency too; for they who refer them to GOD affirm that they are intended for the extolling of His word, being the subject in hand, and that we may know it to be like Him. But I rather think that here these words are meant of the [written] Word; it is called living ($\xi\omega\nu$) here as in Heb. iv. 12; and *abiding for ever* is expressly repeated of it here in the Prophet's words; and (with respect to those learned men that apply them to GOD) I remember not that this *abiding for ever* is used to express GOD's eternity in Himself.* Howsoever, this *incorruptible seed is the living and everlasting Word* of the living and everlasting GOD, and is therefore such because He, whose it is, is such.

Now, this is not to be taken, in an abstract sense, of the Word only in its own nature, but as the principle of regeneration, the seed of this new life; because the Word is *enlivening*† and *living*, therefore they with whom it is effectual and into whose hearts it is received, are begotten again and made alive by it; and because the Word is *incorruptible, and endureth for ever*, therefore that life begotten by it is such too, cannot perish or be cut down, as the natural life; no, this spiritual life of grace is the certain beginning of that eternal life of glory, and shall issue in it, and therefore hath no end.

As the Word of GOD in itself cannot be abolished, but surpasses the permanence of heaven and earth, as our Saviour teaches; and all the attempts of men against the Divine truth of that Word to undo it are as vain as if they should consult to pluck the sun out of the firmament: so likewise, in the heart of a Christian, it is immortal and incorruptible. Where it is once received by faith, it cannot be obliterated again: all the powers of darkness cannot destroy it, although they be never so diligent in their attempts that way. And this is the comfort of the saints, that though the life which GOD by His word hath breathed into their souls have many and strong enemies, such

* This very expression applied to the *Law, that Christ abideth for ever*. See *Logos* here is applied to Christ in S. note above, p. 154.
John xii. 34: *We have heard out of the* † Cf. Psal. cxix. 50; and 2 Cor. iii. 6.

as they themselves could never hold out against, yet for His own glory, and His promise sake, He will maintain that life, and bring it to its perfection: *GOD will perfect that which concerneth me*, saith the Psalmist, Psal. cxxxviii. 8. It is grossly contrary to the truth of the Scriptures to imagine, that they who are thus renewed can be unborn again. This new-birth is but once, of one kind; though they are subject to frailties and weaknesses here in this spiritual life, yet not to death any more, nor to such way of sinning as would extinguish this life. This is that which the Apostle John says, *He that is born of GOD sinneth not*; and the reason he adds is the same that is here given, the permanence and incorruptibleness of this word, *The seed of GOD abideth in him*, John iii. 9.*

This is the word which by the Gospel is preached unto you.] It is not sufficient to have these thoughts of the word of GOD in a general way, and not to know what that word is; but we must be persuaded, that *that word which is preached to us* is this very Word of so excellent virtue, and of which these high things are spoken; that it is *incorruptible* and *abideth for ever*, and therefore surpasses all the world, and all the excellencies and glory of it. Although delivered by weak men—the Apostles, and by far weaker than they in the constant ministry of it, yet it loseth none of its own virtue; for that depends upon the first Owner and Author of it, the ever-living GOD, who by it begets His chosen unto life eternal.

This, therefore, is that which we should learn thus to hear, and thus to receive, esteem, and love, this holy, this living Word; to despise all the glittering vanities of this perishing life, all outward pomp, yea, all inward worth, all wisdom and natural endowments of mind, in comparison of the heavenly light of the Gospel preached unto us: rather to hazard all than

* Cf. the parallel passage in this Epistle, v. 18: *Scimus quia omnis qui natus est ex Deo, non peccat; sed generatio Dei conservat eum.* S. Bernard has this comment: *Generatio cœlestis est æterna prædestinatio, qua Deus prævidit nos conformes fieri imagini Filii sui. Ex his nullus peccat, id est, in peccato perseverat; quia novit Dominus qui sunt ejus, et propositum Dei manet immobile. Etsi horrendorum criminum nota David inuritur, etsi Maria Magdalene septem*

*demoniis cumulatur, etsi princeps Apostolorum in profundum negationis submergitur: non est tamen qui de manu Dei possit eruere. Quos enim prædestinavit, hos et vocavit, et quos vocavit, hos et justificavit. Nonne huic adhærere Deo bonum est?—De Divers. Serm. iv. § 5. Cf. in Septuag. i. § 1; in Cantic. xxiii. 15; De Gratia ix. 29; and S. Fr. de Sales, *Traité de l'amour de Dieu*, l. iii. c. 4.*

lose that, and banish all other things from the place that is due to it; to lodge it alone in our hearts, as our only treasure here and the certain pledge of that treasure of glory laid up for us in heaven. To which blessed state may GOD of His infinite mercy bring us! *Amen.*

CHAPTER II.

Ver. 1. Wherefore, laying aside all malice and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings,

2. As new-born babes desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby.

THE same power and goodness of GOD that manifests itself in giving being to His creatures, appears likewise in sustaining and preserving them. To give being is the first, and to support it is the continued effect of that power and goodness. Thus it is both in the first Creation, and in the second. In the first, the creatures to which He gave life He provided with convenient nourishment to uphold that life (Gen. i. 11): so here; in the close of the former chapter we find the doctrine of the new birth and life of a Christian, and in the beginning of this, the proper food of that life. And it is the same Word by which we there find it to be begotten, that is here the nourishment of it; and therefore Christians are here exhorted by the Apostle so to esteem and so to use it; and that is the main scope of the words.

Observe in general: The Word, the principle and the support of our spiritual being, is both the *incorruptible seed* and the *incorruptible food* of that new life of grace, which must therefore be an incorruptible life; and this may convince us that the ordinary thoughts, even of us who hear this word, are far below the true excellency and worth of it. The stream of custom and our profession bring us hither, and we sit out our hour under the sound of this word; but how few consider and prize it as the great ordinance of GOD for the salvation of souls, the beginner and the sustainer of the Divine life of grace within us! And certainly, until we have these thoughts of it, and seek to feel it thus ourselves, although we hear it most frequently, and let slip no occasion, yea, hear it with attention and some

present delight, yet still we miss the right use of it, and turn it from its true end, while we take it not as *that engrafted word which is able to save our souls*, James i. 21.

Thus ought they who preach to speak it; to endeavour their utmost to accommodate it to this end, that sinners may be converted, begotten again, and believers nourished and strengthened in their spiritual life; to regard no lower end, but aim steadily at that mark. Their hearts and tongues ought to be set on fire with holy zeal for GOD and love to souls, kindled by the Holy Ghost, that came down on the Apostles in the shape of fiery tongues.

And they that hear should remember this as the end of their hearing, that they may receive spiritual life and strength by the word. For though it seems a poor despicable business, that a frail sinful man like yourselves should speak a few words in your hearing, yet, look upon it as the way wherein GOD communicates happiness to those who believe, and works that believing unto happiness, alters the whole frame of the soul, and makes a new creation, as it begets it again to the inheritance of glory. Consider it thus, which is its true notion; and then, what can be so precious? Let the world disesteem it as they will, know ye, that *it is the power of GOD unto salvation. The preaching of the Cross is to them that perish, foolishness; but unto them that are saved, it is the power of GOD*, says the Apostle, 1 Cor. i. 18. And if you would have the experience of this, if you would have life and growth by it, you must look above the poor worthless messenger, and call in His almighty help, who is the Lord of life. As the philosophers affirm, that if the heavens should stand still, there would be no generation or flourishing of anything here below, so it is the moving and influence of the Spirit that makes the Church fruitful. Would you but do this before you come here, present the blindness of your minds and the deadness of your hearts to GOD, and say, ‘Lord, here is an opportunity for Thee to shew the power of Thy word. I would find life and strength in it; but neither can I who hear, nor he that speaks, make it thus unto me; that is Thy prerogative; say Thou the word, and it shall be done.’ *GOD said, Let there be light, and it was light.**

* Thus S. Austin: O Domine verbum, facta est lux, qui es via, veritas, et vita; O Deus verbum, qui es lux, per quem in quo non sunt tenebræ, error, vanitas,

In this exhortation to the due use of the word, the Apostle continues the resemblance of that new-birth he mentioned in the preceding chapter.

As new-born babes.] Be not satisfied with yourselves, till you find some evidence of this new, this supernatural life. There be delights and comforts in this life, in its lowest condition, that would persuade us to look after it, if we knew them; but as the most cannot be made sensible of these, consider therefore the end of it. Better never to have been, than not to have been partaker of this new being. *Except a man be born again*, says our Saviour, *he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD*, John iii. 3. Surely they that are not born again shall one day wish they had never been born. What a poor wretched thing is the life that we have here! a very heap of follies and miseries! Now if we would share in a happier being after it, in that life which ends not, it must begin here. Grace and Glory are one and the same life, only with this difference, that the one is the beginning, and the other the perfection of it; or, if we do call them two several lives, yet the one is the undoubted pledge of the other. It was a strange word for a heathen to say, that ‘that day of Death we fear so,’ *æterni natalis est*, ‘is the Birth-day of Eternity.’* Thus it is indeed to those who are here born again: this new-birth of grace is the sure earnest and counterpaw of that birth-day of glory. Why do we not then labour to make this certain by the former? Is it not a fearful thing to spend our days in vanity, and then lie down in darkness and sorrow for ever; to disregard the life of our soul while we may and should be provident for it, and then, when it is going out, cry, *Quò nunc abibis?* Whither art thou going, O my soul? †

neque mors! Dic verbum, Domine, *Fiat lux*, ut videam lucem.—Peccata mea dividerunt inter me et te. Hæ sunt umbræ tenebrarum, quibus operior in hac abysson caliginosi carceris hujus, in qua prostratus jaceo, *donec aspiret dies et inclinentur umbræ*, fiatque lux in firmamento virtutis tuæ. Vox Domini in virtute et in magnificentia dicat: *fiat lux*, et effugentur tenebræ, et arida, germinetque terra herbam virentem et facientem semen et fructum bonum justitiæ regni tui.—*Soliloq.* c. 4 et c. 12. Cf. c. 33.

* Dies iste, quem tanquam extremum reformidas, æterni natalis est.—*Sen. Ep.* 102.

† The dying words of the Emperor Adrian, referred to again in vol. ii. pp. 44, 357. Andrew Gray makes the same allusion in his first sermon on *the Faith of Assurance*: ‘I may fear that lamentation shall be heard upon the death-beds of many:—*O poor wretched wandering soul, whither art thou going?* And it is no wonder it comes to this, when we are so long in beginning to ask this question.’ And Purchas, in

But this new life puts us out of the danger and fear of that eternal death. *We are passed from death to life*, says St. John (1 John iii. 14), speaking of those who are born again; and being passed, there is no re-passing, no going back from this life to death again.

This new-birth is the same that St. John calls the *first resurrection*, and he pronounces them blessed who partake of it: *Blessed are they that have part in the first resurrection; the second death shall have no power over them*, Rev. xx. 6.

The weak beginnings of grace, weak in comparison of the further strength attainable even in this life, are sometimes expressed as the infancy of it; and so believers ought not to continue infants; if they do, it is reprobable in them, as we see, Eph. iv. 14; 1 Cor. ii. 2; 1 Cor. xiv. 20; Heb. v. 12. Though the Apostle writes to new converts, and so may possibly imply the tenderness of their beginnings of grace, yet I conceive that infancy is here to be taken in such a sense as agrees to a Christian in the whole course and best estate of his spiritual life here below. So, likewise, the *milk* here recommended is answerable to infancy, taken in this sense, and not in the former (as it is in some of those cited places, where it means the easiest and first principles of religion, and so is opposed to the higher mysteries of it, as to strong meat); but here it signifies the whole word of GOD, and all its wholesome and saving truths, as the proper nourishment of the children of GOD. And so the Apostle's words are a standing exhortation for all Christians of all degrees.

And the whole estate and course of their spiritual life here is called their *infancy*, not only as opposed to the corruption and wickedness of *the old man*, but likewise as signifying the weakness and imperfection of it, at its best, in this life, compared with the perfection of the life to come; for the weakest beginnings of grace are by no means so far below the highest degree of it possible in this life, as that highest degree falls short of the state of glory; so that, if one measure of grace is called infancy in respect of another, much more is all grace infancy in respect of glory. And surely, as for duration, the

his *Pilgrim*, observes: 'Man is the diminutive of himself. Well might Adrian, in his swanlike fatal song, quaver himself on the trembling treble, *Animula, vagula, blandula, pallidula, rigida, nudula, &c.*, man being so far degenerated.'—London: 1619, p. 303.

time of our present life is far less, compared to eternity, than the time of our natural infancy is to the rest of our life; so that we may be still called but *new or lately born*. Our best pace and strongest walking in obedience here, is but as the stepping of children when they begin to go by hold, in comparison of the perfect obedience in glory, when *we shall follow the Lamb wheresoever He goes*. All our knowledge here is but as the ignorance of infants, and all our expressions of GOD and of His praises but as the first stammerings of children, in comparison of the knowledge we shall have of Him hereafter, when *we shall know as we are known*, and of the praises we shall then offer Him, when that *new song* shall be taught us. A child hath in it a reasonable soul, and yet, by the indisposedness of the body and abundance of moisture, it is so bound up that its difference from the beasts in partaking of a rational life is not so apparent as afterwards; and thus the spiritual life that is from above infused into a Christian, though it doth act and work in some degree, yet it is so clogged with the natural corruption still remaining in him that the excellency of it is much clouded and obscured; but in the life to come, it shall have nothing at all incumbering and indisposing it. And this is the Apostle St. Paul's doctrine, 1 Cor. xiii. 9-12.

And this is the wonder of Divine grace, that brings so small beginnings to that height of perfection that we are not able to conceive of; that a little spark of true grace, which is not only indiscernible to others but often to a Christian himself, should yet be the beginning of that condition wherein they shall shine brighter than the sun in the firmament. The difference is great in our natural life, in some persons especially; that they who in infancy were so feeble and wrapped up as others in swaddling clothes, yet afterwards come to excel in wisdom and in the knowledge of sciences, or to be commanders of great armies, or to be kings: but the distance is far greater and more admirable betwixt the weakness of these *new-born babes*, the small beginnings of grace, and our after-perfection, that fulness of knowledge that we look for, and that crown of immortality which all they are born to who are born of GOD.

But as in the faces or actions of some children, some characters and presages of their after-greatness have appeared, as a singular beauty in Moses's face, as they write of him, and as

Cyrus was made king among the shepherds' children with whom he was brought up; so also, certainly, in these children of GOD, there be some characters and evidences that they are born for Heaven by their new birth. That holiness and meekness, that patience and faith, which shine in the actions and sufferings of the saints, are characters of their Father's image, and show their high original, and foretell their glory to come; such a glory as doth not only surpass the world's thoughts, but the thoughts of the children of GOD themselves. 1 John iii. 2.

Now that the children of GOD may grow by the word of GOD, the Apostle requires these two things of them: 1. The innocency of children; 2. The appetite of children. For this expression, *new-born babes*, as I conceive, is relative not only to the desiring of *the milk of the word*, ver. 2, but to the former verse, the *putting off malice*. So the Apostle Paul exhorts, 1 Cor. xiv. 20, *As concerning malice, be ye children*.

Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and evil-speakings.] This imports that we are naturally prepossessed with these evils, and therefore we are exhorted to put them off. Our hearts are by nature no other than cages of those unclean birds, malice, envy, hypocrisy, &c. The Apostle sometimes names some of these evils, and sometimes others of them, but they are inseparable, —all one garment, and all comprehended under that one word, Eph. iv. 22, *the old man*, which the Apostle there exhorts Christians to put off: and here it is pressed as a necessary evidence of their new-birth, as well as for the furtherance of their spiritual growth, that these base habits be thrown away; ragged filthy habits, unbeseeming the children of GOD. They are the proper marks of an unrenewed mind, the very characters of the children of Satan, for they constitute his image. He hath his names from enmity, and envy, and slandering,* and he is that grand hypocrite and deceiver, who can *transform himself into an angel of light*, 2 Cor. xi. 14.

So, on the contrary, the Spirit of GOD that dwells in His children, is the spirit of meekness, and love, and truth. That dove-like Spirit which descended on our Saviour is from Him communicated to believers. It is the grossest impudence to

* *Satan* means the adversary or enemy; *devil*, *Διάβολος*, means the envious accuser or slanderer.

pretend to be Christians, and yet to entertain hatred and envyings upon whatsoever occasion; for there is nothing more recommended to them by our Saviour's own doctrine, nothing more impressed upon their hearts by His Spirit, than love.*

Laying aside all malice.] *Kakía* may be taken generally, but I conceive it intends that which we particularly call *malice*. Malice and envy are but two branches growing out of the same bitter root, self-love; and *evil-speakings* are the fruit they bear. Malice is properly the procuring or wishing another's evil, envy the repining at his good; and both these vent themselves by evil-speaking. This infernal fire within smokes and flashes out by the tongue, which St. James says *is set on fire of hell* (iii. 6), and fires all about it; censuring the actions of those they hate or envy, aggravating their failings, and detracting from their virtues, taking all things by the left ear, for (as Epictetus says) *everything hath two handles*.† The art of taking things by the better side, which charity always doth, would save much of those janglings and heart-burnings that so abound in the world. But folly and perverseness possess the hearts of the most, and therefore their discourses are usually the vent of these; *For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh*, Matt. xii. 34. The unsavoury breaths of men argue their inward corruption. Where shall a man come, almost, in societies, but his ears shall be beaten with the unpleasant noise (surely it is so to a Christian mind) of one detracting and disparaging another? And yet this is extreme baseness, and the practice only of false counterfeit goodness, to make up one's own reputation out of the ruins of the good name of others. Real virtue neither needs nor can endure

* Dr. H. More thus strikingly puts the question: 'Take from the devil *envy, pride, and arrogancy*, and what evil is there in him? Take from the elect *love, meekness, and humility*, and what goodness is there in them?'—*Life*, by Ward, p. 98. Sir Thomas Brown also well observes: 'Envy, malice, and hatred are the qualities of Satan, close and dark, like himself; and where such brands smoke, the soul cannot be white. Could the world unite in the practice of that despised train of virtues which the Divine ethics of our Saviour hath so inculcated upon us, the furious face of

things must disappear, Eden would be yet to be found, and the angels might look down upon us not with pity but with joy.'—*Christian Morals*, pt. i. § 19; pt. ii. § 7.

† 'Everything hath two handles; one by which it may be borne, and one by which it cannot. If your brother act unjustly, do not lay hold on the action by the handle of his injustice, for by that it cannot be borne; but by the other, that he is your brother, that he was brought up with you: and thus you will lay hold on it, as it is to be borne.'—*Enchirid.* c. 43.

this dishonest shift: it can subsist of itself, and therefore ingenuously commends and acknowledges what good is in others, and loves to hear it acknowledged; and neither readily speaks nor hears evil of any, but rather, where duty and conscience require not discovery, casts a veil upon men's failings to hide them: this is the true temper of the children of GOD.

These evils of *malice*, and *envy*, and *evil-speakings*, and such like, are not to be dissembled by us in ourselves, and conveyed under better appearances, but are to be cast away; not to be covered, but put off; and therefore that which is the upper garment and cloak of all other evils the Apostle here commands us to cast that off too, namely, *hypocrisy*.

What avails it to wear this mask? A man may indeed in the sight of men act his part handsomely under it, and pass so for a time; but know we not that there is an Eye that sees through it, and a Hand that, if we will not put off this mask, will pull it off to our shame, either here in the sight of men, or, if we should escape all our life, and go fair off the stage under it, yet that there is a day appointed wherein all hypocrites shall be unveiled, and appear what they are indeed before men and angels? It is a poor thing to be approved and applauded by men, while GOD condemns, to whose sentence all men must stand or fall. Oh! seek to be approved and justified by Him, and then, *who shall condemn?* Rom. viii. 34. It is no matter who do. How easily may we bear the mistakes and dislikes of all the world, if He declare Himself well pleased with us! *It is a small thing for me to be judged of man, or man's day:** *He that judgeth me is the Lord*, saith the Apostle, 1 Cor. iv. 3.

But these evils are here particularly to be put off, as contrary to the right and profitable receiving of the word of GOD; for this part of the exhortation (*laying aside*) looks to that which follows (*desire, &c.*), and is specially so to be considered.

There is this double task in religion: when a man enters upon it, he is not only to be taught true wisdom, but he is

* Some writers think that S. Paul uses this remarkable expression, ἀνθρωπίνης ἡμέρας (literally *man's day*), in opposition to the day of the Lord's coming, or the day of judgment referred to in ver. 5. Ἡμέρα for *judgment* occurs in Demosthenes. Cf. Parkhurst and Rose. In English, by a like idiom, we use *days-man* for judge. See Job ix. 33.

withal, yea, first of all, to be untaught the errors and wickedness that are deep rooted in his mind, which he hath not only learned by the corrupt conversation of the world, but brought the seeds of them into the world with him. They do indeed improve and grow by the favour of that example that is round about a man, but they are originally in our nature as it is now; they are connatural to us, besides being strengthened by continual custom, which is another nature. There is no one comes to the school of Christ suiting the philosopher's word, *ut tabula rasa*, as blank paper,* to receive His doctrine; but, on the contrary, all scribbled and blurred with such base habits as these, *malice, hypocrisy, envy, &c.*

Therefore, the first work is, to raze out these, to cleanse and purify the heart from these blots, these foul characters, that it may receive the impression of the image of GOD. And because it is the Word of GOD that both begins and follows forth this work, and draws the lineaments of that Divine image on the soul, therefore, to the receiving of this Word aright, and to this proper effect by means of it, the conforming of the soul to Jesus Christ, which is the true growth of the spiritual life, this is pre-required, that the hearts of those who hear it be purged of these and such-like impurities, *malice, hypocrisy, &c.*

These dispositions are so opposite to the profitable receiving of the word of GOD, that while they possess and rule the soul, it cannot at all embrace these Divine truths; while it is filled with such guests, there is no room to entertain the word.

They cannot dwell together, by reason of their contrary nature; the word will not mix with these. The saving mixture of the word of GOD in the soul is what the Apostle speaks of, and he assigns the want of it as the cause of unprofitable hearing of the word, Heb. iv. 2, *not mixing of it with faith*. For by that the word is concocted into the nourishment of the life of grace, united to the soul, and mixed with it, by being mixed with faith, as the Apostle's expression imports: that is the proper mixture it requires, but with the qualities here mentioned it will not mix; there is a natural antipathy betwixt them, as strong as in those things in nature that cannot be brought by any means to agree and mingle together.

* With regard to Aristotle's celebrated dogma, see Dutens' *Inquiry*, p. 14; and Coleridge's *Aids*, p. 49.

Can there be anything more contrary than the *good word of GOD*, as the Apostle calls it, and those *evil-speakings*? than the word that is of such excellent sweetness, and the bitter words of a malignant tongue? than *the word of life*, and words *full of deadly poison*? For so slanders and defamings of our brethren are termed, St. James iii. 8. And is not all *malice* and *envy* most opposite to the word, that is the message of *peace* and *love*? How can the gall of *malice* and this *milk of the word* agree? Hypocrisy and guile stand in direct opposition to the name of this word, which is called *the word of truth*; and here the very words show this contrariety, *sincere milk* and a *double, unsincere mind*.

These two are necessary conditions of good nourishment: 1. That the food be good and wholesome; 2. That the inward constitution of them who use it be so too. And if this fail, the other profits not. This *sincere milk* is the only proper nourishment of spiritual life, and there is no defect or undue quality in it; but the greatest part of hearers are inwardly unwholesome, diseased with the evils here mentioned, and others of the like nature; and therefore, either have no kind of appetite to the Word at all, but rather feed upon such trash as suits with their distemper (as some kind of diseases incline those that have them to eat coals or lime, &c.), or, if they be anyways desirous to hear the word, and seem to feed on it, yet the noxious humours that abound in them make it altogether unprofitable, and they are not nourished by it. This evil of malice and envying, so ordinary among men (and, which is most strange, amongst Christians), like an overflowing of the gall, possesses their whole minds; so that they are not nourished by the word they hear, but are the worse by it; their disease is fed by it, as an unwholesome stomach turns the best meat it receives into that bad humour that abounds in it. Do not they thus, who observe what the word says, that they may be the better enabled to discover the failings of others, and speak maliciously and uncharitably of them, and vent themselves, as is too common? *This word met well with such a one's fault, and this with another's*:—is not this to feed these diseases of *malice, envy, and evil-speakings*, with this *pure milk*, and make *them* grow, instead of growing by it ourselves in grace and holiness?

Thus, likewise, the hypocrite turns all that he hears of this Word, not to the inward renovation of his mind, and redressing what is amiss there, but only to the composing of his outward carriage, and to enable himself to act his part better; to be cunninger in his own faculty, a more refined and expert hypocrite; not to grow more a Christian indeed, but more such in appearance only, and in the opinion of others.

Therefore it is a very needful advertisement, seeing these evils are so natural to men, and so contrary to the nature of the word of GOD, that they be purged out, to the end it may be profitably received. A very like exhortation to this hath the Apostle St. James, and some of the same words, but in another metaphor: Jam. i. 21. *Wherefore lay apart all filthiness, and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word.* He compares the Word to a plant of excellent virtue, the very tree of life, *the word that is able to save your souls*; but the only soil wherein it will grow is a heart full of meekness, a heart that is purged of those luxuriant weeds that grow so rank in it by nature; they must be plucked up and thrown out to make place for this word.

And there is such a necessity for this that the most approved teachers of wisdom, in a human way, have required of their scholars, that to the end their minds might be capable of it, they should be purified from vice and wickedness. For this reason, the Philosopher judges young men unfit hearers of moral philosophy, because of the abounding and untamedness of their passions, granting that, if those were composed and ordered, they might be admitted.* And it was Socrates' custom, when anyone asked him a question, seeking to be informed by him, before he would answer them, he asked them concerning their own qualities and course of life.

Now, if men require a calm and purified disposition of mind to make it capable of *their* doctrine, how much more is it suitable and necessary for learning the doctrine of GOD, and those deep mysteries that His word opens up! It is well expressed in that Apocryphal book of Wisdom, that *Froward thoughts separate from GOD, and wisdom enters not into a malicious soul*: † no, indeed, that is a very unfit dwelling for it; and the very heathen could say, 'The mind that is impure is not capable

* Aristotle, *Eth. Nic.* i. 3.

† *Wisd.* i. 3, 4.

of GOD and Divine things.—Seneca.* Therefore we see the strain of the book of Proverbs that speaks so much of this Wisdom; it requires, in the first chapter, that they who would hear it, do retire themselves from all ungodly customs and practices. This is it that makes the Word obscure, namely, the filthy mists within. And indeed, how can the soul apprehend spiritual things, that is not in some measure refined from the love of sin, which abuses and bemires the minds of men, and makes them unable to arise to heavenly thoughts? *Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see GOD*, says our Saviour (Matt. v. 8): not only shall they see Him perfectly hereafter, but, so far as they can receive Him, He will impart and make Himself known unto them here, so John xiv. 23; whereas, on the contrary, He will in just judgment hide Himself, and the saving truth of His word, from those that entertain and delight in sin: the very sins wherein they delight shall obscure and darken the light of the Gospel to them, so that, though it shine clear as the sun at noon-day, they shall be as those that live in a dungeon; they shall not discern it.

And as they receive no benefit by the Word, who have the evils here mentioned reigning and in full strength within them, so they that are indeed *born again*, the more they retain of these, the less shall they find the influence and profit of the word; for this exhortation concerns them. They may possibly, some of them, have a great remainder of these corruptions unmortified; therefore are they exhorted to *lay aside* entirely those evils, *all malice, all hypocrisy, &c.*, else, though they hear the word often, yet they will be in a spiritual atrophy: they will eat much, but grow nothing by it; they will find no increase of grace and spiritual strength.

Would we know the main cause of our fruitless hearing of the Word, here it is: men bring not meek and guileless spirits to it, not minds emptied and purified to receive it, but stuffed with *malice*, and *hypocrisy*, and *pride*, and other such evils: and where should the word enter, when all is so taken up? And if it did enter, how should it prosper amongst so many enemies, or at all abide amongst them? Either they will turn it out again, or choke and kill the power of it. We think religion and our own lusts, and secret heart-idols, should agree

* Animus nisi purus et sanctus est, Deum non capit.—*Ep.* 87.

together, because we would have it so ; but this is not possible. Therefore, labour to entertain the word of truth *in the love of it*,* and lodge *the mystery of faith in a pure conscience*, as the Apostle St. Paul speaks (1 Tim. iii. 9). Join those together with David (Psal. cxix. 113), *I hate vain thoughts, but Thy law do I love*. And as here our Apostle exhorts, *Lay aside all malice, and hypocrisy, and envy, and evil speakings*, and so receive the word, or else look for no benefit by it here nor for salvation by it hereafter ; but cast out all impurity and give your whole heart to it ; so *desire it that you may grow*, and then, as you desire, you shall *grow by it*.

Every real believer hath received a life from Heaven, far more excelling our natural life than that excels the life of the beasts. And this life hath its own peculiar desires and delights, which are the proper actings and the certain characters and evidence of it ; amongst others, this is one, and a main one, answerable to the like desire in natural life, namely, a desire of food ; and because it is here still imperfect, therefore the natural end of this is, not only nourishment, but growth, as it is here expressed.

The sincere milk of the Word.] The life of grace is the proper life of a reasonable soul, and without it the soul is dead, as the body is without the soul ; so that this may be truly rendered, *reasonable milk*, as some read it ; † but certainly, that *reasonable milk* is the word of GOD, *the milk of the word*.

It was before called *the immortal seed*, and here it is *the milk* of those that are born again, and thus it is nourishment very agreeable to that spiritual life, according to their saying, *Iisdem alimur ex quibus constamus*, we are nourished by that of which we consist. As the milk that infants draw from the breast is the most connatural food to them, being of that same substance that nourished them in the womb ; and when they are brought forth, that food follows them as it were for their supply, in the way that is provided in nature for it ; by certain veins it ascends into the breasts, and is there fitted for them, and they are by nature directed to find it there : thus, as a Christian begins to live by the power of the Word, so he is, by

* Cf. 2 Thes. ii. 10.

† τὸ λογικὸν γάλα. It is the same word which is rendered *reasonable* in Rom. xii. 1. The ambiguity arises from

the Greeks using the same term to express *a word* and *reason* ; but it is greatly increased here by the use of the adjective instead of the noun.

the nature of that spiritual life, directed to that same Word as its nourishment. To follow the resemblance further in the qualities of milk, after the monkish way, that runs itself out of breath in allegory, I conceive is neither solid nor profitable; and to speak freely, the curious searching of the similitude in other qualities of milk, seems to wrong the quality here given it by the Apostle, in which it is so well resembled by *milk*, namely, the simple pureness and sincerity of the Word: besides that the pressing of comparisons of this kind too far proves often so constrained ere they have done with it, that by too much drawing they bring forth blood instead of milk.*

Sincere, that is, *pure and unmixed*, as milk drawn immediately from the breast; the pure Word of GOD without the mixture not only of error, but of all other composition of vain unprofitable subtilties, or affected human eloquence, such as become not the majesty and gravity of GOD'S word. *If any man speak*, says our Apostle (ch. iv. ver. 11), *let him speak as the oracles of GOD*. Light conceits and flowers of rhetoric wrong the word more than they can please the hearers; the weeds among the corn make it look gay, but it were all the better they were not amongst it. Nor can those mixtures be pleasing to any but carnal minds. They who are indeed the children of GOD, as infants who like their breast-milk best pure, do love the word best so, and wheresoever they find it so they relish it well; whereas natural men cannot love spiritual things for themselves, desire not the word for its own sweetness, but would have it sauced with such conceits as possibly spoil the simplicity of it; or at the best, love to hear it for the wit and learning which, without any wrongful mixture of it, they find in one delivering it more than another. But the natural and genuine appetite of the children of GOD is to the word for itself, and only as milk, *sincere milk*; and where they find it so, from whomsoever or in what way soever delivered unto them, they

* '*Qui nimis emungit, elicit sanguinem*, "he that wrings too hard draws blood."—Prov. xxx. 33. Nothing is fit to be offered to your flocks but what flows naturally and willingly from the fountains of Salvation.'—*Bishop Taylor*, vol. viii. p. 530. 'As those wines which flow from the first treading of the grape are sweeter and better than

those forced out by the press, which gives them the harshness of the husk and the stone; so are those doctrines best and wholesomest which flow from a gentle pressure of the Scripture, and are not wrung into controversies or commonplace.'—*Bacon, Augm. Scient.* l. ix. Cf. *Essay LII., qui fortiter emungit, &c.*

feed upon it with delight. Before conversion, wit, or eloquence may draw a man to the Word, and possibly prove a happy bait to catch him (as St. Augustine reports of his hearing St. Ambrose), but when once he is born again, then it is the milk itself that he desires for itself.

Desire the sincere milk.] Not only hear it because it is your custom, but desire it because it is your food. And it is :
 1. A *natural* desire, as the infant's desire of milk ; not upon any external respect or inducement, but from an inward principle and bent of nature. And because natural, therefore, 2. *Earnest* ; not a cold indifferent willing, that cares not whether it obtain or not, but a vehement desire, as the word *ἐπιποθήσατε* signifies, and as the resemblance clearly bears ; as a child that will not be stilled till it have the breast, offer it what you will, silver, gold, or jewels ; it regards them not, these answer not its desire, and that must be answered. Thus David (Psal. cxix. 20), *My soul breaketh for the longing it hath to Thy judgments* ; as a child like to break its heart with crying for want of the breast. And again, because natural, it is, 3. *Constant*. The infant is not cloyed nor wearied with daily feeding on the breast, but desires it every day, as if it had never had it before : so the child of GOD hath an unchangeable appetite for the Word ; it is daily new to him ; he finds still fresh delight in it. Thus David, as before cited, *My soul breaketh for the longing it hath for Thy judgments at all times*. And then, Psal. i. 2, this law was his *meditation day and night*. Whereas, a natural man is easily surfeited of it, and the very commonness and cheapness of it makes it contemptible to him. And this is our case ; that wherein we should wonder at GOD's singular goodness to us, and therefore prize His word the more, that very thing makes us despise it : while others, our brethren, have bought this milk with their own blood, we have it upon the easiest terms that can be wished, only for the desiring, without the hazard of bleeding for it, and scarce at the pains of sweating for it.

That ye may grow thereby.] This is not only the end for which GOD hath provided His children with the Word, and moves them to desire it, but that which they are to intend in their desire and use of it ; and, answerable to GOD's purpose, they are therefore to desire it, because it is proper for this end, and that by it they may attain this end, *to grow thereby*. And

herein, indeed, these children differ from infants in the natural life, who are directed to their food beside their knowledge, and without intention of its end; but this *rational milk* is to be desired by the children of GOD in a rational way, knowing and intending its end, having the use of natural reason renewed and sanctified by supernatural grace.

Now the end of this desire is growth. Desire the Word, not that you may only hear it; that is to fall very far short of its true end; yea, it is to take the beginning of the work for the end of it. The ear is indeed the mouth of the mind, by which it receives the word (as Elihu compares it, Job xxxiv. 3), but meat that goes no further than the mouth, you know, cannot nourish. Neither ought this desire of the Word to be only to satisfy a custom; it were an exceeding folly to make so superficial a thing the end of so serious a work. Again, to hear it only to stop the mouth of conscience, that it may not clamour more for the gross impiety of contemning it, this is to hear it, not out of desire, but out of fear. To desire it only for some present pleasure and delight that a man may find in it, is not the due use and end of it: that there is delight in it, may help to commend it to those that find it so, and so be a mean to advance the end; but the end it is not. To seek no more than a present delight, that evanisheth with the sound of the words that die in the air, is not to desire the Word as meat, but as music, as GOD tells the prophet Ezekiel of His people, Ezek. xxxiii. 32: *And lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well upon an instrument; for they hear thy words, and they do them not.* To desire the Word for the increase of knowledge, although this is necessary and commendable, and, being rightly qualified, is a part of spiritual accretion, yet, take it as going no further, it is not the true end of the word. Nor is it the venting of that knowledge in speech and frequent discourse of the Word and the Divine truths that are in it; which, where it is governed with Christian prudence, is not to be despised, but commended; yet, certainly, the highest knowledge, and the most frequent and skilful speaking of the word, severed from the growth here mentioned, misses the true end of the word. If any one's head or tongue should grow apace, and all the rest stand at a stay, it would certainly make him a monster;

and they are no other, who are knowing and discoursing Christians, and grow daily in that respect, but not at all in holiness of heart and life, which is the proper growth of the children of GOD. [To the godly may be applied] Epictetus's comparison of the sheep; they return not what they eat in grass, but in wool.* David, in that cixth Psalm, which is wholly spent upon this subject, *the excellency and use of the Word of GOD*, expresseth, ver. 14, 16, 24, his delight in it, his earnest desire to be further taught, and to know more of it; his readiness to speak of it, ver. 13, 27; but withal, you know, he joins his desire and care *to keep it, to hide it in his heart, &c.*, ver. 5, 11; to make it *the men of his counsel*, ver. 24, to let it be as the whole assembly of his privy counsellors, and to be ruled and guided by it; and with him, to use it so, is indeed *to grow by it*.

If we know what this spiritual life is, and wherein the nature of it consists, we may easily know what is the growth of it. When holiness increases, when the sanctifying graces of the Spirit grow stronger in the soul, and consequently act more strongly in the life of a Christian, then he grows spiritually.

And as the Word is the mean of begetting this spiritual life, so likewise of its increase.

1. This will appear, if we consider the nature of the Word in general, that it is spiritual and Divine, treats of the highest things, and therefore hath in it a fitness to elevate men's minds from the earth, and to assimilate to itself such as are often conversant with it; as every kind of learning readily doth to those who are much engaged in it, and apply their minds to study it. Doubtless, such kind of things as are frequent with men have an influence into the disposition of their souls. The Gospel is called *light*, and the children of GOD are likewise called *light*, as being transformed into its nature, and thus they become still the more enlightened by more hearing of it, and so they *grow thereby*.†

* *Enchirid.* 46.

† 'As they say of the understanding in the schools, *intellectus fit illud quod intelligit*, so faith, apprehending its proper object, is made one with it.'—*Leighton on the Creed*. Cf. a beautiful passage in the first Homily, which is entitled, *A Fruitful Exhortation to the Reading and Knowledge of Holy Scrip-*

ture: 'This Word, whosoever is diligent to read, and in his heart to print that he readeth, the great affection to the transitory things of this world shall be minished in him, and the great desire of heavenly things (that be therein promised of God) shall increase in him. And there is nothing that so much strengtheneth our faith and trust in God,

2. If we look more particularly unto the strain and tenor of the Word, it will appear most fit for increasing the graces of the Spirit in a Christian; for there be in it particular truths relative to them, that are apt to excite them, and set them on work, and so to make them grow, as all habits do, by acting. It doth (as the Apostle's word may be translated) *stir up the sparks*,* and blow them into a greater flame, make them burn clearer and hotter. This it doth both by particular exhortation to the study and exercise of those graces, sometimes pressing one, and sometimes another; and by rightly representing to them their objects. The Word feeds *faith*, by setting before it the free grace of GOD, His rich promises, and His power and truth to perform them all; shows it the strength of the new covenant, not depending upon itself, but holding in Christ, *in whom all the promises of GOD are yea and amen*, 2 Cor. i. 20; and draws faith still to rest more entirely upon His righteousness. It feeds *repentance*, by making the vileness and deformity of sin daily more clear and visible. Still as more of the Word hath admission into the soul, the more it hates sin, sin being the more discovered and the better known in its own native colour: as the more light there is in a house, the more anything in it that is uncleanly or deformed is seen and disliked. Likewise it increaseth *love to GOD*, by opening up still more and more of His infinite excellency and loveliness. As

that so much keepeth up innocency and pureness of heart, and also of outward godly life and conversation as continual reading and recording of God's word. For that thing which, by continual use of reading Holy Scripture, and diligent searching of the same, is deeply printed and graven upon the heart, at length *turneth almost into nature*. And, moreover, the effect and virtue of God's word is to illuminate the ignorant and to give more light unto them that faithfully read it, to comfort their hearts and to encourage them to perform that which of God is commanded. It teacheth patience in all adversity, and in prosperity humbleness; what honour is due unto God, what mercy and charity unto our neighbour. It giveth good counsel in all doubtful things. It showeth to whom we should look for aid and help in all perils, and that God is the only giver of victory in all battles and temp-

tations of our enemies, ghostly and bodily. And in reading of God's word, he not always most profiteth that is most ready of turning the book, but *he that is most turned into it*, that is, most inspired by the Holy Ghost, *most in his heart and life altered and changed into that thing which he readeth*; he that is daily less and less proud, less wrathful, less covetous, and less desirous of worldly and vain pleasures; he that, daily forsaking his old vicious life, increaseth in virtue more and more.' Cf. Seneca: Nam philosophiam qui didicit et facienda ac vitanda percepit, nondum sapiens est, nisi in ea quæ didicit, animus ejus transfiguratus est.—Hæc est enim Sapientia, in naturam converti.—*Ep.* 94.

* 2 Tim. i. 6, ἀναζωπυρεῖν τὸ χάρισμα τοῦ Θεοῦ, ὃ ἐστὶν ἐν σοί, — *stir up the sparks of the grace of God which is in thee.*

it borrows the resemblance of the vilest things in nature to express the foulness and hatefulness of sin, so all the beauties and dignities that are in all the creatures are called together in the Word, to give us some small scantling of that Uncreated Beauty that alone deserves to be loved. Thus might its fitness be instanced in respect to all other graces.

But above all other considerations, this is observable in the Word as the increaser of grace, that it holds forth JESUS CHRIST to our view to look upon, not only as the perfect pattern, but as the full fountain of all grace, from *whose fulness we all receive*. The contemplating of Him as the perfect image of GOD, and then drawing from Him as having in Himself a treasure for us, these give the soul more of that image which is truly spiritual growth. This the Apostle expresseth excellently, 2 Cor. iii. 18, speaking of the ministry of the Gospel revealing Christ, that *beholding in Him* (as it is, ch. iv. ver. 6, *in His face*), *as in a glass, the glory of the Lord, we are changed into the same image from glory to glory, as by the Spirit of the Lord*: not only that we may take the copy of His graces, but have a share of them.

There may be many things that might be said of this spiritual growth, but I will add only a few.

First, on the one hand, in the judging of this growth, some persons conclude too rigidly against themselves, that they grow not by the word, because their growth is not so sensible to them as they desire. But: 1. It is well known, that in all things that grow, this principle is not discerned in *motu sed in termino*, not in the growing but when they are grown. 2. Besides, other things are to be considered in this: although other graces seem not to advance, yet if thou growest more self-denying, and humble in the sense of thy slowness, all is not lost; although the branches shoot not up so fast as thou wishest, yet, if the root grow deeper, and fasten more, it is an useful growth. He that is still learning to be more in Jesus Christ, and less in himself, to have all his dependence and comfort in Him, is doubtless a growing believer.

On the other side, a far greater number conclude wrong in their own favour, imagining that they do grow, if they gain in some of those things we mentioned above, namely, more knowledge and more faculty of discoursing, if they find often

some present stirrings of joy or sorrow in hearing of the word, if they reform their life, grow more civil and blameless, &c.; yet all these, and many such things, may be in a natural man, who notwithstanding grows not, for that is impossible; he is not, in that state, a subject capable of this growth, for he is dead, he hath none of the new life to which this growth relates. *Herod heard gladly, and obeyed many things, Mark vi. 20.*

Consider, then, what true delight we might have in this. You find a pleasure when you see your children grow, when they begin to stand and walk, and so forth; you love well to perceive your estate or your honour grow: but for the soul to be growing liker GOD, and nearer Heaven, if we know it, is a pleasure far beyond them all:—to find pride, earthliness, and vanity abating, and faith, love, and spiritual-mindedness increasing; especially if we reflect that this growth is not as our natural life, which is often cut off before it has attained full age, as we call it, and, if it attain that, falls again to move downwards, and decays, as the sun, being at its meridian, begins to decline again: but this life shall grow on in whomsoever it is, and come certainly to its fulness; after which, there is no more need of this word, either for growth or nourishment, no death, no decay, no old age, but perpetual youth, and a perpetual spring; *ver æternum, fulness of joy in the presence of GOD, and everlasting pleasures at His right hand.*

Ver. 3. If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

OUR natural desire of food arises principally from its necessity for that end which nature seeks, viz., the growth, or at least the nourishment of our bodies. But there is besides, a present sweetness and pleasantness in the use of it, that serves to sharpen our desire, and is placed in our nature for that purpose. Thus the children of GOD, in their spiritual life, are naturally carried to desire the means of their nourishment and of their growth, being always here in a growing state; but withal, there is a spiritual delight and sweetness in the Word, in that which it reveals concerning GOD, and this adds to their desire, stirs up their appetite towards it. The former attractive is expressed in the foregoing verse, the latter in this.

Nature disposes the infant to the breast; but when it hath once tasted of it, that is a new superadded attractive, and makes it desire after it the more earnestly. So here: the Word is fully recommended to us by these two, usefulness and pleasantness: like milk (as it is compared here), which is a nourishing food, and withal sweet and delightful to the taste: *by* it we grow, and *in* it we taste the graciousness of GOD. David, in that psalm which he dedicates wholly to this subject, gives both these as the reason of his appetite. His love to it he expresses pathetically (cxix. 97), *O how love I Thy law!* He declares, that by it he was *made wiser than his enemies,—than his teachers,—and than the ancients*; taught to *refrain from every evil way* (ver. 102), taught by the Author of that Word, the Lord Himself, to grow wiser and warier, and holier in the divine ways: and then, ver. 103, he adds this other reason, *How sweet are Thy words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth.*

We shall speak: I. of the goodness or graciousness of the Lord; II. of this taste; and III. of the inference from both.

I. The goodness of GOD: *The Lord is gracious*;—or, of a bountiful, kind disposition. The Hebrew word *Tob* in Psal. xxxiv. 8, whence this is taken, signifies *good*. The Septuagint render it by *χρηστός*, the same word as is used here by our Apostle. Both the words signify a benignity and kindness of nature. It is given as one of love's attributes, 1 Cor. xiii. 4, that it *is kind*, *χρηστεύεται*, ever compassionate, and helpful as it can be in straits and distresses, still ready to forget and pass by evil, and to do good. In the largest and most comprehensive sense must we take the expression here, and yet still speak and think infinitely below what His goodness is. He is naturally good, yea, goodness is His nature; He is Goodness and Love itself. *He that loveth not, knoweth not GOD; for GOD is love*, 1 John iv. 8. He is primitively good; all goodness is derived from Him, and all that is in the creature comes forth from no other than that Ocean; and this Graciousness is still larger than them all.

There is a common bounty of GOD, wherein He doth good to all, and so *the whole earth is full of His goodness*, Psal. xxxiii. 5. But the goodness that the Gospel is full of,—the particular stream that runs in that channel, is His peculiar

graciousness and love to His own children, that by which they are first enlivened, and then refreshed and sustained in their spiritual being. It is this that is here spoken of. He is gracious to them in freely forgiving their sins, in giving no less than Himself unto them; He frees them from all evils, and fills them with all good. He *satisfies thy mouth with good things*, Psal. ciii. 3-5: and so it follows with good reason, ver. 8, that He is *merciful and gracious*; and His graciousness is there further expressed in His gentleness and *slowness to anger*, bearing with the frailties of His own, and pitying them *as a father pitieth his children*, ver. 13.

No friend is so *kind* and *friendly* (as this word *χρηστός* signifies), and none so powerful. He is *a present help in trouble*, ready to be found: whereas others may be far off, He is always at hand, and His presence is always comfortable.

They that know GOD still find Him a real, *useful** good. Some things and some persons are useful at one time, and others at another, but GOD at all times. A well-furnished table may please a man while he hath health and appetite, but offer it to him in the height of a fever, how unpleasant would it be then! Though never so richly decked, it is then not only useless, but hateful to him: but the kindness and love of GOD is then as seasonable and refreshing to him as in health, and possibly more; he can find sweetness in that, even on his sick bed. The bitter choler abounding in the mouth, in a fever, doth not disrelish this sweetness; it transcends and goes above it. Thus all earthly enjoyments have but some time (as meats) when they are in season, but the graciousness of GOD is always sweet; the taste of that is never out of season. See how old age spoils the relish of outward delights, in the example of Barzillai, 2 Sam. xix. 35; but it makes not this distasteful. Therefore the Psalmist prays, that when other comforts forsake him and wear out, when they ebb from him and leave him on the sand, this may not; that still he may feed on the goodness of GOD: Psal. lxxi. 9: *Cast me not off in old age, forsake me not when my strength faileth*. It is the continual influence of His graciousness that makes the righteous still grow *like cedars in Lebanon*, Psal. xcii. 14, 15, that makes them *bring forth fruit in old age, and to be still fat and flourishing; to shew that the*

* This has reference to the primary meaning of *χρηστός*, which is *useful*.

Lord is upright, as it is there added, that He is (as the word imports) *still like Himself*, and his goodness ever the same.

Full chests or large possessions may seem sweet to a man, till death present itself; but then (as the Prophet speaks of *throwing away their idols of silver and gold to the bats and moles, in the day of calamity*, Isa. ii. 20) then, he is forced to throw away all he possesses, with disdain of it and of his former folly in doating on it: then, the kindness of friends, and wife, and children, can do nothing but increase his grief and their own; but then is the love of GOD the [supreme] good indeed and abiding sweetness, and it best relisheth when all other things are most unsavoury and uncomfortable.*

GOD is gracious, but it is GOD in Christ; otherwise we cannot find Him so; therefore this is here spoken in particular of Jesus Christ (as it appears by that which followeth), through whom all the peculiar kindness and love of GOD is conveyed to the soul, for it can come no other way; and *the Word* here mentioned is the Gospel (see ch. i. ver. 25) whereof Christ is the subject. Though GOD is mercy and goodness in Himself, yet we cannot find or apprehend Him so to us, but only when looking through that *medium*, the Mediator. That main point of the goodness of GOD in the Gospel, which is so sweet to a humbled sinner, *the forgiveness of sins*, we know we cannot taste of, but in Christ, *In whom we have redemption*, Eph. i. 7. And all the favour that shines on us, all the grace we receive, is *of His fulness*; all our acceptance with GOD, our being taken into grace and kindness again, is *in Him* (ver. 4). *He made us accepted in the beloved* (ver. 6). His grace appears in both,† as it is there expressed, but it is all *in Christ*. Let us therefore never leave Him out in our desires of tasting the graciousness and love of GOD; for otherwise, we shall but dishonour Him, and disappoint ourselves.

The free grace of GOD was given to be tasted, in the promises, before the coming of Christ in the flesh; but being accomplished in His coming, then was the sweetness of grace

* Elige illum amicum tuum pro omnibus amicis tuis, qui cum omnia subtracta fuerint solus tibi fidem servabit. In die sepulture tuæ cum omnes amici tui recedant a te, Ille te non derelinquet.—S. Aug. *Manuale*, cap. xxiv. § 2. Cf.

the *De Imitatione*: Illum dilige et amicum tene tibi, qui omnibus recedentibus te non relinquet nec patietur in fine perire.—l. ii. c. 7, § 1.

† *In both*, that is, in *forgiveness* and *acceptance*.

made more sensible; then was it more fully broached, and let out to the elect world, when He was pierced on the cross, and His blood poured out for our redemption. *Through those holes of His wounds may we draw, and taste that the Lord is gracious,* says St. Augustine.*

II. As to this taste: *If ye have tasted.*] There is a tasting exercised by temporary believers, spoken of, Heb. vi. 4. Their highest sense of spiritual things (and it will be in some far higher than we easily think), yet is but a taste, and is called so in comparison of the truer, fuller sense that true believers have of the grace and goodness of GOD, which, compared with a temporary taste, is more than tasting. The former is merely tasting; rather an imaginary taste than real; but this is a true feeding on the graciousness of GOD, yet it is called but a taste in respect of the fulness to come. Though it is more than a taste, as distinguishable from the hypocrite's sense, yet it is no more than a taste, compared with the great marriage-feast we look for.

Jesus Christ being *all in all* unto the soul, faith apprehending Him is all the spiritual senses in one. Faith is the *eye* that beholds His matchless beauty, and so enkindles love in the soul, and can speak of Him as having seen Him, and taken particular notice of Him, Cant. v. 9; it is the ear that discerns His voice, Cant. ii. 8: it is faith that smells *His name poured forth as an ointment*, Cant. i. 3; it is faith that *touches* Him, and draws virtue from Him: and it is faith that *tastes* him, Cant. ii. 3; and so here, *If ye have tasted.*†

In order to this, there must be: 1. A firm believing of the truth of the promises, wherein the free grace of GOD is expressed and exhibited to us. 2. A particular application or attraction of that grace to ourselves, which is the drawing of those *breasts of consolation*, spoken of by Isaiah, lxvi. 11, namely, the promises contained in the Old and New Testaments. 3. A sense of the sweetness of that grace, being applied or drawn into the soul, and that constitutes properly this *taste*. No unrenewed man hath any of these in truth, not the highest kind of temporary believer; he cannot have so much as a real lively

* *Vulnera Jesu Christi plena sunt misericordia. . . . Per has rimas licet mihi gustare quam suavis est Dominus Deus meus.—Man. xxi. 2.*

† Cf. vol. ii. p. 216.

assent to the general truth of the promises; for had he that, the rest would follow. But as he cannot have the least of these in truth, he may have the counterfeit of them all; not only of assent, but of application; yea, and a false spiritual joy arising from it; and all these so drawn to the life, that they may resemble much of the reality. To give clear characters of difference is not so easy as most persons imagine; but doubtless, the true living faith of a Christian hath in itself such a particular stamp as brings with it its own evidence, when the soul is clear and the light of GOD'S face shines upon it. Indeed, in the dark we cannot read, nor distinguish one mark from another; but when a Christian hath light to look upon the work of GOD in his own soul, although he cannot make another sensible of that by which he knows it, yet he himself is ascertained, and can say confidently in himself, 'This I know, that this faith and taste of GOD I have is true; the seal of the Spirit of GOD is upon it;' and this is the reading of that *new name in the white stone, which no man knows but he that hath it*, Rev. ii. 17.* There is, in a true believer, such a constant love to GOD for Himself, and such a continual desire after Him simply for His own excellency and goodness, as no other can have. On the other side, would an hypocrite deal truly and impartially by himself, he would readily find out something that would discover him, more or less, to himself. But the truth is, men are willing to deceive themselves, and thence arises the difficulty.

One man cannot make another sensible of the sweetness of Divine grace: he may speak to him of it very excellently, but all he says in that kind, is an unknown language to a natural man; he heareth many good words, but he cannot tell what they mean. *The natural man tastes † not the things of GOD, for they are spiritually discerned*, 1 Cor. ii. 14.

A spiritual man himself doth not fully conceive this sweetness that he tastes of; it is an infinite goodness, and he hath but a taste of it. The *peace of GOD*, which is a main fruit of this His goodness, *passeth all understanding*, says the Apostle, Phil. iv. 7: not only all natural understanding (as some modify

* Cf. 'The White Stone: or a learned and choice Treatise of Assurance, very useful for all, but especially Weak Believers. By N. Culverwell. Cambr. 1652.'

† οὐδέχεται, receives not.

it), but all understanding, even the supernatural understanding of those who enjoy it. And as the godly man cannot conceive it all, so as to that which he conceives he cannot express it all, and that which he doth express, the carnal mind cannot conceive of by his expression.

But he that hath indeed tasted of this goodness, O how tasteless are those things to him that the world calls sweet! As when you have tasted somewhat that is very sweet, it disrelisheth other things after it. Therefore can a Christian so easily either want, or use with disregard the delights of this earth. His heart is not upon them: for the delight that he finds in GOD carrieth it unspeakably away from all the rest, and makes them in comparison seem sapless to his taste.

Solomon tasted of all the delicacies, the choicest dishes that are in such esteem amongst men, and not only tasted, but ate largely of them, and yet, see how he goes over them, to let us know what they are, and passes from one dish to another, declaring *This also is vanity*, and of the next, *This also is vanity*, and so through all; and of all in general, *All is vanity and vexation of spirit, or feeding on the wind*, as the word may be rendered.*

III. We come, in the third place, to the inference: *If ye have tasted, &c.*, then, *lay aside all malice and guile, and hypocrisies and envies, and all evil-speakings*, ver. 1; for it looks back to the whole exhortation. Surely, if you have tasted of that kindness and sweetness of GOD in Christ, it will compose your spirits, and conform them to Him; it will diffuse such a sweetness through your soul, that there will be no place for *malice and guile*; there will be nothing but love, and meekness, and singleness of heart. Therefore, they who have bitter, malicious spirits, evidence they have not tasted of the love of GOD. As the Lord is good, so they who taste of His goodness are made like Him. *Be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as GOD for Christ's sake hath forgiven you*, Eph. iv. 32.

Again, *if ye have tasted*, then, *desire more*. And this will be the truest sign of it: he that is in a continual hunger and thirst after this graciousness of GOD, has surely tasted of it.

* This rendering we find in the versions of Aquila and Symmachus, ἀνέμου νομῆ καὶ βόσκησις.

My soul thirsteth for GOD, saith David, Psal. xliii. 2. He had tasted before; he remembers, ver. 4, that he *went to the house of GOD with the voice of joy*.

This is that happy circle wherein the soul of the believer moves: the more they love it, the more they shall taste of this goodness; and the more they taste, the more they shall still love and desire it.

But observe, *if ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious*, then, *desire the milk of the word*. This is the sweetness of the *Word*, that it hath in it the Lord's graciousness, gives us the knowledge of His love. This they find in it who have spiritual life and senses, and those *senses exercised to discern good and evil*, Heb. v. 14; and this engages a Christian to further desire of the word. They are fantastical deluding tastes, that draw men from the written Word, and make them expect other revelations. This graciousness is first conveyed to us *by the Word*; there first we taste it, and therefore, there still we are to seek it; to hang upon those breasts that cannot be drawn dry; there the love of GOD in Christ streams forth in the several promises. The heart that cleaves to the Word of GOD and delights in it cannot but find in it, daily, new tastes of His goodness; there it reads His love, and by that stirs up its own to Him, and so grows and loves, every day more than the former, and thus is tending from tastes to fulness. It is but little we can receive here, some drops of joy that enter into us; but there we shall enter into joy, as vessels put into a sea of happiness.

Ver. 4. To whom, coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of GOD, and precious,

5. Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to GOD by Jesus Christ.

THE spring of all the dignities of a Christian, and therefore the great motive of all his duties, is, his near relation to Jesus Christ. Thence it is, that the Apostle makes that the great subject of his doctrine, both to represent to his distressed brethren their dignity in that respect, and to press by it the necessary duties he exhorts unto. Having spoken of their spiritual life and growth in Him, under the resemblance of natural life, he prosecutes it here by another comparison very frequent in the Scriptures, and therefore makes use in it of

some passages of these Scriptures, that were prophetic of Christ and His Church. Though there be here two different similitudes, yet they have so near a relation one to another, and meet so well in the same subject, that he joins them together, and then illustrates them severally in the following verses,—a *Temple* and a *Priesthood*, comparing the saints to both.

We have in the former similitude: 1. The nature of the building; 2. The materials of it; 3. The structure or way of building it.

1. The *nature* of it is, a *Spiritual Building*.] Time and place, we know, received their being from GOD, and He was eternally before both; He is therefore styled by the prophet, *The high and lofty One that inhabiteth eternity*, Isa. lvii. 15. But having made the world He fills it, though not as contained in it, and so the whole frame of it is His palace or temple, but after a more special manner, the higher and statelier part of it, the highest heaven; therefore it is called His *holy place*, and *the habitation of His holiness and glory*. And on earth, the houses of His public worship are called *His houses*; especially the Jewish temple in its time, having in it such a relative typical holiness, which others have not. But besides all these, and beyond them all in excellency, He hath a house wherein He dwells more peculiarly than in any of the rest, even more than in Heaven, taken for the place only, and that is this *spiritual building*. And this is most suitable to the nature of GOD. As our Saviour says of the necessary conformity of His worship to Himself, *GOD is a Spirit, and therefore will be worshipped in spirit and in truth*, John iv. 24: so it holds of His house: He must have a spiritual one, because He is a Spirit; so GOD's temple is, His people.

And for this purpose chiefly did He make the world, the heaven and the earth, that in it He might raise this *spiritual building* for Himself to dwell in for ever, to have a number of His reasonable creatures to enjoy Him, and glorify Him in eternity. And from eternity He knew what the dimensions, and frame, and materials of it should be. The continuance of this present world, as now it is, is but for the service of this work, like the scaffolding about it; and therefore, when this spiritual building shall be fully completed, all the present frame

of things in the world, and in the Church itself, shall be taken away, and appear no more.*

This Building is, as the particular designation of its materials will teach us, *the whole invisible Church of GOD*, and each good man is a stone of this building. But as the nature of it is spiritual, it hath this privilege (as they speak of the soul), that it is *tota in toto, et tota in qualibet parte*: the whole Church is the spouse of Christ, and each believing soul hath the same title and dignity to be called so: thus, each of these stones is called a whole temple, *temples of the Holy Ghost*, 1 Cor. vi. 19; though, taking the Temple or Building in a completer sense, they are but each one a part, or a stone of it, as here it is expressed.

The whole excellency of this Building is comprised in this, that it is *spiritual*, a term distinguishing it from all other buildings, and preferring it above them. And inasmuch as the Apostle speaks immediately after of a priesthood and sacrifices, it seems to be called a *spiritual building*, particularly in opposition to that material temple wherein the Jews gloried, which was now null, in regard of its former use, and was soon after entirely destroyed. But while it stood, and the legal use of it stood in its fullest vigour, yet in this respect still it was inferior, that it was not a *spiritual house* made up of *living stones*, as this, but of a like matter with other earthly buildings.

This *spiritual house* is the palace of the Great King, or His temple. The Hebrew word for *palace* and *temple* is one. GOD's temple is a palace, and therefore must be full of the richest beauty and magnificence, but such as agrees with the nature of it, a spiritual beauty. In that Psalm wherein David wishes so many prosperities for his people, one is, that *their daughters may be as corner-stones, polished after the similitude of a palace*, Psal. cxliv. 12. Thus is the Church, which is called the *King's daughter*, Psal. xlv. 13; but her comeliness is invisible to the world, *she is all glorious within*. Through sorrows and persecutions, she may be smoky and black to the world's eye, as the *tents of Kedar*; but in regard of spiritual beauty, she is *comely as the curtains of Solomon*. And in this the Jewish temple resembles it aright, which had most of its riches and beauty in the inside. Holiness is the gold of this spiritual house, and it is inwardly enriched with that.

* Cf. Lect. on Isa. vi. 13.

The glory of the Church of GOD consists not in stately buildings of temples, and rich furniture, and pompous ceremonies; these agree not with its spiritual nature. Its true and genuine beauty is, to grow in spiritualness, and so to be liker itself, and to have more of the presence of GOD, and His glory filling it as a cloud. And it hath been observed, that the more the Church grew in outward riches and state, the less she grew, or rather the more sensibly she abated in spiritual excellencies. But the spiritualness of this Building will better appear in considering particularly,

2. The *materials* of it, as here expressed: *To whom coming, &c., ye also, as lively stones, are, &c.*] Now the whole Building is Christ mystical, Christ, together with the entire body of the Elect: He as the foundation, and they as the stones built upon Him; He, the *living stone*, and they likewise, by union with Him, *living stones*; He, *having life in Himself*, as He speaks, John vi., and they deriving it from Him; He, primitively living, and they, by participation. For therefore is He called here a *living stone*, not only because of His immortality and glorious resurrection, being a *Lamb that was slain, and is alive again for ever*, but because He is the principle of spiritual and eternal life unto us, a living foundation that transfuses this life into the whole building, and every stone of it, *In whom* (says the Apostle, Eph. ii. 21) *all the building is fitly framed together*. It is the Spirit that flows from Him, which enlivens it, and knits it together, as a living *body*; for the same word *συναρμολογούμενον* is used, Eph. iv. 16) for the Church under the similitude of a body. When it is said, Eph. ii. 20, *to be built upon the foundation of the prophets and Apostles*, it only refers to their doctrine concerning Christ; and therefore it is added, that He, as being the subject of their doctrine, is the *chief corner-stone*.* The foundation, then, of

* Jones of Nayland observes, in his *Short View*, &c.: 'To say that the Church of Christ is founded upon the *doctrines* taught by the Apostles is a gross mistake. *Doctrines* can no more confer authority of office to Church ministers than a statute-book in England can make a justice of the peace, whose power must come to him by personal deputation. A written law does nothing till there comes an executive

power, lawfully ordained, to administer and bring it to effect. Where is the text or doctrine that can make a priest? It is written, *No man taketh this honour to himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron*, who was called by an outward consecration from a person whom GOD had commissioned to consecrate; and the power thus given descended by succession to his posterity. The power of *absolution* was given by

the Church lies not in *Rome*, but in Heaven, and therefore is out of the reach of all enemies, and above the power of *the gates of hell*. Fear not, then, when you see the storms arise, and the winds blow against this spiritual Building, for *it shall stand; it is built upon an invisible immovable Rock*; and that great *Babylon*, Rome itself, that, under the false title and pretence of supporting this Building, is working to overthrow it, shall be utterly overthrown, and laid equal with the ground, and never be rebuilt again.

But this *Foundation-stone*, as it is commended by its quality, that it is a *living* and enlivening stone, having life and giving life to those that are built on it, so it is also further described by GOD'S choosing it, and by its own worth; in both opposed to men's disesteem, and therefore it is said here, to be *chosen of GOD, and precious*. GOD did indeed from eternity contrive this Building, and choose this same Foundation, and accordingly, in the fulness of time, did perform His purpose; so, the thing being one, we may take it either for His purpose, or the per-

Christ to the Christian ministry, and without this power there can be no such thing as a Church of Christ. The priesthood had the power of absolution under the law of Moses; and even the priests of heathenism were never considered as the representatives of the people, but of the god to whom they belong; to pronounce blessings and forgive sins in his name.—*Works*, v. 71. Again, in his *Essay on the Church*: 'As the Father hath sent Jesus Christ, so did He send His disciples, and gave them authority to send others; so that the Church which followed derived its authority from the Church which Christ first planted in the world; and the Church at this day must derive its authority, after the same manner, by succession from the Church which went before; the line extending from CHRIST Himself to the end of the world. Lo, said He, *I am with you alway, unto the end of the world*: certainly not with those very persons, who all soon died, but with those who should succeed and be accounted for the same; for a body corporate never dies till its succession is extinct.—*Ib.* p. 29. Hooker says: 'Out of *twelve patriarchs* issued the whole multitude of Israel according to the flesh. And, according to the mystery of heavenly birth, our Lord's *Apostles* we all acknowledge to

be the patriarchs of His whole Church. S. John therefore beheld sitting about the throne of God in heaven, *four and twenty presbyters*, the one half fathers of the old the other of the new Jerusalem. In which respect the Apostles likewise gave themselves the same title, 1 Peter v. 1, albeit that name were not proper but common unto them with others.—*E. P.* b. 5, c. 78, s. 3. Thus the primitive Christians continued steadfastly not only in the doctrine, but also in the fellowship of the Apostles: and in the Nicene Creed we profess belief in the Church as being *one, Catholic, and Apostolic*.

Alexander Knox well says: 'We are built upon the foundation of the *Apostles and Prophets*, and if so, it follows by the strictest analogy, that we are built also, in a certain sense, on all who have come after; that is, as the range of a building last laid on, is built on all the preceding ranges. The expression, *συν-αρμολογουμένη αἰξεί* evidently implies a duty in each fresh range of *living stones* to harmonise themselves with all the lower ranges; and consequently not to take the foundation only for their rule, but to attend strictly to the whole intermediate work, contributing to the harmonic advancement of the structure.'—*Remains*, 2nd ed. vol. i. pp. 423, 424.

formance of it, or both; yet it seems most suitable to the strain of the words, and to the passage quoted in the next verse which speaks of *laying the chief corner-stone in Sion* in opposition to the rejection of men, that we take it for GOD's actual employing of Jesus Christ in the work of our redemption. He alone was fit for that work; it was utterly impossible that any other should bear the weight of that service (and so of this Building), than He who was Almighty. Therefore the Spouse calls Him *the select*, or *choice of ten thousand*, yet He was *rejected of men*. There is an antipathy (so to speak) betwixt the mind of GOD and corrupt nature: *the things that are highly esteemed with men are abomination to GOD*; and thus we see here, that which is highly esteemed with GOD is cast out and *disallowed by men*. But surely there is no comparison; the choosing and esteem of GOD stands; and by that (judge men of Christ as they will), He is the foundation of this Building. And He is in true value answerable to this esteem: He is *precious*, which seems to signify a kind of inward worth, hidden from the eyes of men, blind unbelieving men, but well known to GOD, and to those to whom He reveals Him. And this is the very cause of His rejection by the most, the ignorance of His worth and excellency; as a precious stone that the skilful lapidary esteems of great value, an ignorant beholder makes little or no account of.

These things hold likewise in the other stones of this Building; they too, are *chosen* before time: all that should be of this Building, fore-ordained in GOD's purpose, all written in that book before-hand, and then, in due time, they are chosen, by actual calling, according to that purpose, hewed out and severed by GOD's own hand, out of the quarry of corrupt nature; dead stones in themselves, as the rest, but made living by His bringing them to Christ, and so made truly *precious*, and accounted precious by Him who hath made them so. All the stones in this Building are called *GOD's jewels*, Mal. iii. 17. Though they be vilified, and scoffed at, and despised by men, though they pass for fools and the refuse of the world, yet they may easily digest all that, in the comfort of this, if they are *chosen of GOD*, and *precious* in His eyes. This is the very lot of Christ, and therefore by that the more welcome, that it conforms them to Him,—suits these stones to their Foundation,

And if we consider it aright, what a poor despicable thing is the esteem of men! How soon it is past! *It is a small thing for me*, says the Apostle Paul, *to be judged of men*, 1 Cor. iv. 3. Now that GOD often chooses for this Building such stones as men cast away as good for nothing, see 1 Cor. i. 26. And where He says, Isa. lvii. 15, that He *dwells in the high and holy place*, what is His other dwelling? His habitation on earth, is it in great palaces and courts? No; but *with him also that is of a contrite and humble spirit*. Now these are the basest in men's account; yet He chooses them, and prefers them to all other palaces and temples. Isa. lxvi. 1, 2: *Thus saith the Lord, The Heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: Where is the house that ye build unto Me? and where is the place of My rest? For all those things hath Mine hand made, and all those things have been, saith the Lord: But to this man will I look, even to him that is poor, and of a contrite spirit, and trembleth at My word*. As if He said, You cannot gratify me with any dwelling, for I myself have made all, and a surer house than any you can make me, *The Heaven is my throne, and the earth my footstool*: but I, who am so high, am pleased to regard the lowly.

3. We have the *structure*, or way of building, *To whom coming.*] First *coming*, then *built up*. They that come unto Christ, come not only from *the world that lieth in wickedness*, but out of themselves. Of a great many that seem to come to Christ, it may be said, that they are not come to Him, *because they have not left themselves*.* This *coming to Christ* is believing on Him, which is the very resigning of the soul to Christ, and living by Him. *Ye will not come unto Me that ye may have life*, says Christ, John v. 40. He complains of it as a wrong done to Him; but the loss is ours. It is His glory to give us life who were dead; but it is our happiness to receive that life from Him. Now these stones *come unto* their Foundation; which imports the moving of the soul to Christ, being moved by His Spirit, and that the will acts, and willingly (for it cannot act otherwise), but still, as being actuated and drawn by the Father: *No man can come to me except the Father draw him*, John vi. 65. And the outward mean of drawing is by the Word; it is the sound of that harp that brings the stones of

* Cf. below on ch. iii. ver. 11. *Nondum te deseruisti.*

this spiritual building together.* And then, being united to Christ, they are *built up*; that is, as St. Paul expresses it, Eph. ii. 21, *they grow up unto a holy temple in the Lord*.

In times of peace the Church may dilate more, and build as it were into breadth, but in times of trouble it arises more in height, is built upwards; as in cities where men are straitened, they build usually higher than in the country. Notwithstanding the Church's afflictions, yet, still the building is going forward; it is built, as Daniel speaks of Jerusalem, *even in troublous times*. And it is this which the Apostle intends, as suiting with his foregoing exhortation: this passage may be read exhortatively too; but taking it rather as asserting their condition, it is for this end, that they may remember to be like it, and grow up. For this end he expressly calls them *living stones*; an adjunct not usual for stones, but here inseparable; and therefore, though the Apostle changes the similitude, from infants to stones, yet he will not let go this quality of living, as making chiefly for his purpose.

To teach us the necessity of growth in believers, they are therefore often compared to things that grow, to *trees planted* in fruitful growing places, as *by the rivers of water*; to *cedars in Lebanon*, where they are tallest; to *the morning light*; to *infants* on the breast; and here, where the word seems to refuse it, to *stones*; yet (it must, and well doth admit this unwonted epithet), they are called *living* and *growing stones*.

If, then, you would have the comfortable persuasion of this union with Christ, see whether you find your souls established upon Jesus Christ, finding Him as your strong foundation; not resting on yourselves, nor on any other thing either within you, or without you, but supported by Him alone; drawing life from Him, by virtue of that union, as from a living foundation, so as to say with the Apostle, *I live by faith in the Son of GOD, who loved me, and gave Himself for me*, Gal. ii. 20.

As these stones are built on Christ by faith, so they are cemented one to another by love; and, therefore, where that is not, it is but a delusion for persons to think themselves parts of this Building. As it is knit to Him, it is knit together in

* Dictus et Amphion, Thebanæ conditor arcis,
Saxa movere sono testudinis et prece blanda
Ducere quo vellet.—Hor. *A. P.* 394.

itself through Him; and if dead stones in a building support and mutually strengthen one another, how much more ought *living stones* in an active lively way so to do! The stones of this Building keep their place: the lower rise not up to be in the place of the higher. As the Apostle speaks of the parts of the body, so the stones of this Building in humility and love keep their station, and grow up in it, *edifying in love*, saith the Apostle, Eph. iv. 16, importing, that the want of this much prejudices edification.

These stones, because they are living, therefore grow in the life of grace and spiritualness, being a *spiritual building*; so that if we find not this, but our hearts are still carnal, and glued to the earth, *mindng earthly things*, wiser in those than in spirituals, this evidences strongly against us, that we are not of this Building. How few of us have that spiritualness that becomes the temples of the Holy Ghost, or the stones of that Building! Base lusts are still lodging and ruling within us, and so our hearts are as cages of unclean birds and filthy spirits.

Consider this as your happiness, to form part of this Building, and consider the unsolidness of other comforts and privileges. If some have called those stones happy, that were taken for the building of temples or altars, beyond those in common houses, how true is it here! Happy indeed the stones that GOD chooses to be living stones in this spiritual temple! Though they be hammered and hewed to be polished for it, by afflictions and the inward work of mortification and repentance, it is worth the enduring of all, to be fitted for this Building. Happy they, beyond all the rest of men, though they be set in never so great honours, as prime parts of politic buildings, states and kingdoms, in the courts of kings, yea, or kings themselves. For all other buildings, and all the parts of them, shall be demolished and come to nothing, from the foundation to the cope-stone; all your houses, both cottages and palaces; *the elements shall melt away, and the earth, with all the works in it, shall be consumed*, as our Apostle hath it (2 Pet. iii. 10). But this spiritual Building shall grow up to Heaven; and being come to perfection, shall abide for ever in perfection of beauty and glory. In it shall be found *no unclean thing*, nor unclean person, but only they *that are written in the Lamb's book of life*.

An holy Priesthood.] The worship and ceremonies of the Jewish Church were all shadows of Jesus Christ, and have

their accomplishment in Him, not only after a singular manner in His own person, but in a derived way, in His mystical body, His Church. The priesthood of the law represented Him as the great High Priest that *offered up Himself for our sins*, and that is a priesthood altogether incommunicable; neither is there any peculiar office of priesthood for offering sacrifice in the Christian Church, but His alone who is head of it.* But this dignity that is here mentioned, of a *spiritual priesthood*, offering up *spiritual sacrifices*, is common to all those who are in Christ. As they are living stones built on Him into a spiritual temple, so they are priests of that same temple made by Him (Rev. i. 6.) As He was, after a transcendent manner, temple, and priest, and sacrifice, so, in their kind, are Christians all these three through Him; and by His Spirit that is in them, their offerings through Him are made acceptable.

* S. Paul, in speaking of Christ as our *High Priest* over the house of God, implies that He has priests under Him, and accordingly styles himself a priest of the Gospel, *ἱερούργουντα τὸ Εὐαγγέλιον*, Rom. xv. 16. In writing to the Hebrews he contrasts the Levitical with the evangelical priesthood, showing that the latter is after the order of Melchisedec, and that our Saviour is the High Priest of that order; and asserting that 'we have an Altar whereof they have no right to eat which serve the tabernacle.' Eusebius says: 'Our Saviour Jesus, the Christ of God, does yet celebrate by His servants the functions of His priesthood, after the manner of Melchisedec.'—*Dem. Evang.* v. 3. 'As Christ in virtue of His sacrifice on the cross intercedes for us with His Father, so does the minister of Christ's priesthood here, that the virtue of the eternal sacrifice may be effectual to all the needs of the Church. We are ministers in that unchangeable priesthood, imitating the prototype Melchisedec, who "brought forth bread and wine, and was the priest of the most high God." As Christ is a priest in Heaven for ever, and yet does not sacrifice Himself afresh, nor yet without a sacrifice could He be a priest; but by a daily ministration and intercession represents His sacrifice to God, and offers Himself as sacrificed: so He does upon earth by the ministry of His servants. He hath therefore constituted and separated an order of men, who by "showing forth the Lord's death," by sa-

cramental representation, may pray unto God, and apply the proper Sacrifice to all the purposes which it first designed. For whatsoever was offered in the Sacrifice is given in the Sacrament.'—*Bp. Taylor*, vols. ii. 643-4; iii. 214; vii. 38. 'As the legal sacrifices were types and shadows of the great Sacrifice on the cross, and had a relation to Christ that was to come, so the Christian sacrifice of bread and wine looks back, and has a relation to Christ that was crucified. There was among the Jews an ancient tradition that in the time of the Messiah all sacrifices should cease but that of bread and wine.'—Robert Nelson on *The Christian Sacrifice*. See Mede, Patrick, and Jolly, on the same. Jones, of Nayland, observes: 'The priesthood of the Gospel, which Christ began and continued, and perpetuated, with its offering of bread and wine, is the only true priesthood; earlier than that of the law in time, and superior in dignity. The Jews had the passover in figure, as we have it in truth; for *Christ our passover is sacrificed for us*; and we *keep that feast* as a memorial of our *redemption*, as they commemorated their deliverance from Egypt by the offering of the Paschal Lamb.'—*Lect.* i. and iii. on the *Ep. to the Hebrews*. See also Mr. Percival on 'The Christian Ministry truly a Priesthood after the order of Melchisedec.'—*Brit. Mag.* vi. 281, 402; vii. 43, 290; xii. 46; and Bp. Nixon on the Church Catechism, 4th ed. Lect. 52.

We have here : 1. The office ; 2. The service of that office ; 3. The success of that service.

1. The Office. The death of Jesus Christ, as being every way powerful for reconcilment and union, did not only break down the partition-wall of guiltiness that stood betwixt GOD and man, but the wall of ceremonies that stood betwixt the Jews and the Gentiles : it made all that believe one with GOD, *and made of both one*, as the Apostle speaks—united them one to another. The way of salvation was made known, not to one nation only, but to all people : so that whereas the knowledge of GOD was before confined to one little corner, it is now diffused through the nations ; and whereas the dignity of their priesthood staid in a few persons, all they who believe are now thus dignified to be priests unto GOD the Father. And this was signified by the rending of the vail of the Temple at our Saviour's death ; not only that those ceremonies and sacrifices were to cease, as being all fulfilled in Him, but that the people of GOD, who were before by that vail held out in the outer court, were to be admitted into the Holy Place, as being all of them priests, and fitted to offer sacrifices.

The priesthood of the law was holy, and its holiness was signified by many outward things suitable to their manner, by *anointings*, and *washings*, and *vestments* ; but in this spiritual priesthood of the Gospel, holiness itself is instead of all those, as being the substance of all. The children of GOD are all anointed, and purified, and clothed with holiness.

2. There is here the Service of this Office, namely, *to offer*. There is no priesthood without sacrifice, for these terms are correlative, and offering sacrifices was the chief employment of the legal priests. Now, because the priesthood here spoken of is altogether spiritual, therefore the sacrifices must be so too, as the Apostle here expresses it.

To offer up spiritual sacrifices.] We are saved the pains and cost of bringing bullocks and rams, and other such sacrifices ; and these are in their stead. As the Apostle speaks (Heb. vii. 12) of the High-priesthood of Christ, that *the priesthood being changed, there followed of necessity a change of the law* ; so, in this priesthood of Christians, there is a change of the kind of sacrifice from the other. All sacrifice is not taken away, but it is changed from the offering of those things formerly in use, to *spiritual sacrifices*.

Now these are every way preferable; they are easier and cheaper to us, and yet more precious and *acceptable to GOD*; as it follows here in the text. Even in the time when the other sacrifices were in request, these spiritual offerings had ever the precedence in GOD's account, and without them He hated and despised all burnt-offerings and the largest sacrifices, though they were then according to His own appointment. How much more should we abound in spiritual sacrifice, who are eased of the other! How much more holds that answer now, that was given even in those times to the inquiry, *Wherewith shall I come before the Lord? &c.* (Mic. vi. 6). You need not all that trouble and expense, *thousands of rams, &c.*: that is at hand which GOD requires most of all, namely, *to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy GOD.* So Psal. l. 23, *Whoso offereth praise glorifieth me.* That which is peculiarly spoken of Christ, holds in Christians by conformity with Him.

But though the spiritual sacrificing is easier in its own nature, yet, to the corrupt nature of man, it is by far the harder. He would rather choose still all the toil and cost of the former way, if it were in his option. This was the sin of the Jews in those times, that they leaned the soul upon the body's service too much, and would have done enough of that to be dispensed from this spiritual service. Hence are the Lord's frequent reproofs and complaints of this, Psal. l.; Isa. i., &c. Hence the willingness, in Popery, for outward work, for penances and satisfactions of body and purse,—anything of that kind, if it might serve, rather than the inward work of repentance and mortification, the spiritual service and sacrifices of the soul. But the answer to all those from GOD is that of the Prophet: *Who hath required these things at your hands? Isa. i. 12.*

Indeed, the sacred writers press works of charity, if they be done with the right hand, and the left hand not so much as acquainted with the business, as our Saviour speaks, *Let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doth* (Matt. vi. 3). They must be done with a right and single intention, and from a right principle moving to them, without any vain opinion of *meriting* by them with GOD, or any vain desire of gaining applause with men, but merely out of love to GOD, and to man for His sake. Thus they become one of these *spiritual sacri-*

fices, and therefore ought by no means to be neglected by Christian priests, that is, by any who are Christians.

Another spiritual sacrifice is, *the prayers of the saints*. In the Revelation of St. John they are represented as *the odours of incense offered in golden censers*, Rev. v. 8;* and in like manner David says, *Let my prayer be set forth before Thee as incense, and the lifting up of my hands as the evening sacrifice*, Psal. cxli. 2. It is not the composition of prayer, or the eloquence of expression, that is the sweetness of it in GOD'S account, and makes it a sacrifice of a pleasing smell or sweet odour to Him, but the breathing forth of the desire of the heart; that is what makes it a spiritual sacrifice; otherwise, it is as carnal, and dead, and worthless in GOD'S account, as the carcasses of beasts. Incense can neither smell nor ascend without fire; no more doth prayer, unless it arises from *a bent of spiritual affection*;† it is that which both makes it smell, and sends it heavenwards, makes it never leave moving upwards till it come before GOD, and smell sweet in His nostrils, which few, too few, of our prayers do.

Praise also is a *sacrifice*; to make respectful and honourable mention of the name of GOD, and of His goodness; to bless Him humbly and heartily. See Heb. xiii. 15, and Psal. l. 14, 23. *Offer unto GOD thanksgiving. Whoso offereth praise, glorifieth me.* And this is that sacrifice that shall never end, but continues in Heaven to eternity.

Then, *a holy course of life* is called the *sacrifice of righteousness*, Psal. iv. 6, and Phil. iv. 18. So also, Heb. xiii. 16, where the Apostle shows what sacrifices succeed to those which, as he hath taught at large, are abolished. Christ was sacrificed for us, and that offering alone was powerful to take away sin; but our gratulatory sacrifices, praise and alms, are as incense burnt to GOD, of which as the bystanders find the sweet smell, so the holy life of Christians smells sweet to those with whom they live. But the wicked, as putrefied carcasses, are of a noisome smell to GOD and man. *They are corrupt; they have done abominable works*, Psal. xiv. 4.

In a word, that sacrifice of ours which includes all these,

* Cf. Rev. viii. 3, 4; and p. 207; also Hooker, Serm. vii.: 'Our hearts are those golden censers from which the fume of this sacred incense must ascend.'

† ἀγάπην ἐκτενῆ, 1 Peter iv. 8.

and without which none of these can be rightly offered, is, *Ourselves*, our whole selves. Our *bodies* are to be presented *a living sacrifice*, Rom. xii. 1; and they are not that without our souls. It is our heart given, that gives all the rest, for that commands all. *My son, give me thy heart*, and then the other will follow, *thine eyes will delight in my ways*. This makes the eyes, ears, tongue, and hands, and all, to be holy, as GOD's peculiar property; and being once given and consecrate to Him, it becomes sacrilege to turn them to any unholy use. This makes a man delight to hear and speak of things that concern GOD, and to think on Him frequently, to be holy in his secret thoughts, and in all his ways. In everything we bring Him, every thanksgiving and prayer we offer, His eye is upon the heart: He looks if it be along with our offering, and if He miss it, He cares not for all the rest, but throws it back again.

The heart must be offered withal, and the whole heart, all of it entirely given to Him. *Se totum obtulit Christus pro nobis*;* Christ offered up His whole self for us. In another sense, which crosses not this, the heart must not be *whole* but *broken*, Psal. li. 17. But if thou find it unbroken, yet give it Him, with a desire that it may be broken. And if it be broken, and if, when thou hast given it Him, He break it more, yea, and melt it too, yet thou shall not repent thy gift; for He breaks and melts it, that He may refine it, and make it up in a new and excellent frame, and may impress His own image on it, and make it holy, and so like to Himself.

Let us then give Him ourselves, or nothing; and to give ourselves to Him is not His advantage, but ours. As the philosopher said to his poor scholar, who, when others gave him great gifts, told him: *He had nothing but himself to give; It is well*, said he, *and I will endeavour to give thee back to thyself better than I received thee.*† Thus doth GOD with us, and thus doth a Christian make himself his daily sacrifice: he renews his gift of himself every day to GOD, and receiving it every day bettered again, still he hath the more delight in giving it, as being fitter for GOD, the more it is sanctified by former sacrificing.

* See *De Imit.* iv. 8. 2.

† Socrati cum multa multi pro suis quisque facultatibus offerrent, Æschines pauper auditor, &c. *Sen. De Benef.* i. 8.

Now that whereby we offer all other spiritual sacrifices, and even ourselves, is love. That is the holy fire that burns up all, sends up our prayers, and our hearts, and our whole selves a whole burnt-offering to GOD; and, as the fire of the altar, it is originally from Heaven,* being kindled by GOD'S own love to us; and by this, the Church (and so each believer) ascends like a *straight pillar of smoke* (as the word is, Cant. i. 6), going even up to GOD *perfumed with aloes and all the spices*, all the graces of the Spirit received from Christ, but above all, with His own merits.

How far from this are the common multitude of us, though professing to be Christians! Who considers his holy calling? As the peculiar holiness of the ministry should be much in their eye and thoughts who are called to it, as *they* should study to be answerably eminent in holiness, so, all you that are Christians, consider, you are priests unto GOD; being called a *holy priesthood*, thus you ought to be. But if we speak what we are indeed, we must say rather, we are an unholy priesthood, a shame to that name and holy profession. Instead of the sacrifice of a godly life, and the incense of prayer and praise, in families and alone, what is there with many, but the filthy vapours of profane speaking and a profane life, as a noisome smell arising out of a dunghill?

But you that have once offered up yourselves unto GOD, and are still doing so with all the services you can reach, continue to do so, and be assured that how unworthy soever yourselves and all you offerings be, yet they shall not be rejected.

3. The third thing here observable is, the Success of that service: *Acceptable to GOD by Jesus Christ.*] The children of GOD do delight in offering sacrifices to Him; but if they might not know that they were well taken at their hands, this would discourage them much; therefore this is added. How often do the godly find it in their sweet experience, that when they come to pray, He welcomes them, and gives them such evidences of His love, as they would not exchange for all worldly pleasures! And when this doth not so presently appear at other times, yet they ought to believe it.

* The fire which once fell from Heaven, Levit. ix. 24, was to be continually kept burning upon the altar, and never suffered to go out, and the use of all other fire was forbidden in sacrifices.—Levit. vi. 12; x. 1. See also 2 Maccabees i. 19.

He accepts themselves and their ways when offered in sincerity, though never so mean; though they sometimes have no more than a sigh or a groan, it is most properly a spiritual sacrifice.

Stay not away because thou, and the gifts thou offerest, are inferior to the offering of others. No, none are excluded for that; only give what thou hast, and act with affection, for that He regards most. Under the law, they who had not a lamb, were welcome with a pair of pigeons. So that the Christian may say: *What I am, Lord, I offer myself unto Thee, to be wholly Thine; and had I a thousand times more of outward or inward gifts, all should be Thine; had I a greater estate, or more wit, or learning, or power, I would endeavour to serve Thee with all. What I have, I offer Thee, and it is most truly Thine; it is but of Thy own that I give Thee.* No one needs forbear sacrifice for poverty, for what GOD desires is, the heart, and there is none so poor but hath a heart to give Him.

But meanness is not all; there is a guiltiness on ourselves and on all we offer; our prayers and services are polluted. But this hinders not neither; for our acceptance is not for ourselves, but for the sake of One who hath no guiltiness at all: *Acceptable by Jesus Christ.* In Him our persons are clothed with righteousness, and in His clothing we are, as Isaac said of Jacob in his brother's garments, *as the smell of a field that the Lord hath blessed*, Gen. xxvii. 27. And all our other sacrifices, our prayers and services, if we offer them by Him, and put them into His hand to offer to the Father, then doubt not they will be accepted in Him; for this expression *by Jesus Christ* is relative both to our offering and our acceptance. We ought not to offer anything but *by Him*, Heb. xiii. 15; and so we are well-pleasing to the Father. For He is His well-beloved Son, in whom His soul is delighted; not only delighted and pleased with Himself but, *in Him*, with all things and persons that appear in Him, and are presented by Him.

And this alone answers all our doubts. For we ourselves, as little as we see that way, yet may see so much in our best services, so many wanderings in prayer, so much deadness, &c., as would make us still doubtful of acceptance; so that we might say with Job, ch. ix. 16, *Although He had answered me, yet would I not believe that He had hearkened to me*; were it not for this, that our prayers and all our sacrifices pass through

Christ's hand. He is that *Angel that hath much sweet odours,** to mingle with the prayers of the saints, Rev. viii. 3, 4. He purifies them with His own merits and intercession, and so makes them pleasing unto the Father. How ought our hearts to be knit to Him, *by whom* we are brought into favour with GOD, and kept in favour with Him, *in whom* we obtain all the good we receive, and *in whom* all we offer is accepted! In Him are all our supplies of grace and our hopes of glory.

Ver. 6. Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture: Behold I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on Him shall not be confounded.

THAT which is the chief of the works of GOD is therefore very reasonably the chief subject of His word, as both most excellent in itself, and of most concernment for us to know; and this is, the saving of lost mankind by His Son. Therefore is *His name as precious ointment, or perfume*, diffused through the whole Scriptures: all these holy leaves smell of it, not only those that were written after His coming, but those that were written before. *Search the Scriptures*, says He Himself, *for they testify of me* (John v. 39), namely, the Scriptures of the Old Testament, which alone were then written; and to evidence this, both Himself and His Apostles make so frequent use of their testimony, and we find so much of them inserted into the New, as being both one in substance; their lines meeting in the same Jesus Christ as their centre.

The Apostle having, in the foregoing verse, expressed the happy estate and dignity of Christians under the double notion, 1. of a spiritual house or temple, 2. of a spiritual priesthood,—here amplifies and confirms both from the writings of the Prophets; the former, vv. 6, 7, 8; the latter, ver. 9. The places that he cites touching this Building are most pertinent, for they have clearly in them all that he spoke of it, both concerning the foundation and the edifice: as the first, in these words of Isaiah (ch. xxviii. ver. 16), *Behold I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, &c.*

Let this commend the Scriptures much to our diligence and affection, that their great theme is our Redeemer, and the

* *θυμιάματα*, incense, perfumes exhaled by fire; the same word used in ch. v. ver. 8, where the four and twenty presbyters fall down before the Lamb, having golden vessels full of incense which are the prayers of the saints.

redemption wrought by Him; that they contain the doctrine of His excellencies, and are the lively picture of His matchless beauty. Were we more versed in them, we should daily see more of Him in them, and so of necessity love Him more. But we must look within them: the letter is but the case; the spiritual sense is what we should desire to see. We usually huddle them over, and see no further than their outside, and therefore find so little sweetness in them; we read them, but we *search* them not, as He requires. Would we dig into those golden mines, we should find treasures of comfort that cannot be spent, but which would furnish us in the hardest times.

The prophecy here cited, if we look upon it in its own place, we shall find inserted in the middle of a very sad denunciation of judgment against the Jews. And this is usual with the Prophets, particularly with this evangelical prophet Isaiah, to uphold the spirits of the godly, in the worst times, with this one great consolation, the promise of the Messiah, as weighing down all alike, both temporal distresses and deliverances. Hence are those sudden ascents (so frequent in the Prophets) from their present subject to this great *Hope of Israel*. And if this expectation of a Saviour was so pertinent a comfort in all estates, so many ages before the accomplishment of it, how wrongfully do we undervalue it being accomplished, if we cannot live upon it, and answer all with it, and sweeten all our griefs, with this advantage, that there is a *foundation-stone laid in Sion* on which they that are builded shall be sure not to be ashamed!

In these words there are five things: 1. This Foundation-stone; 2. The laying of it; 3. The building on it; 4. The firmness of this building; and 5, the greatness and excellency of the work.

1. For the *Foundation*, called here a *chief corner-stone*. Though the Prophet's words are not precisely rendered, yet the substance and sense of them are the same. In Isaiah, both expressions, a *foundation* and a *corner-stone*, are employed (ch. xxviii. ver. 16), the corner-stone in the foundation being the main support of the building, and throughout the corner-stones uniting and knitting the building together; and therefore this same word, a *corner*, is frequently taken in Scripture for *princes*, or heads of people (see Judg. xx. 2; 1 Sam. xiv. 38), because good governors and government are that which

upholds and unites the societies of people in states or kingdoms as one building. And Jesus Christ is indeed the alone head and king of His Church, who gives it laws, and rules it in wisdom and righteousness; the alone Rock on which His Church is built; not Peter (if we will believe St. Peter himself, as here he teacheth us), much less his pretended successors; He is the foundation and corner-stone that knits together the walls of Jews and Gentiles, *having made of both one*, as St. Paul speaks (Eph. ii. 14), and unites the whole number of believers into one everlasting Temple, and bears the weight of the whole fabric.

Elect] or chosen out for the purpose, and altogether fit for it; Isaiah hath it *A stone of trial, or a tried stone*. Things amongst men are best chosen after trial, but Jesus Christ was certainly known by the Father as most fit for that work to which He chose Him before He tried Him, as after, upon trial in His life, and death, and resurrection, He proved fully answerable to His Father's purpose in all that was appointed Him.

All the strength of angels combined had not sufficed for that business; but the wise Architect of this Building knew both what it would cost, and what a foundation was needful to bear so great and so lasting a structure as He intended. Sin having defaced and demolished the first building of Man in the integrity of his creation, it was GOD's design, out of the very ruins of fallen man, to raise a more lasting edifice than the former, one that should not be subjected to decay, and therefore He fitted for it a Foundation that might be everlasting. The sure founding is the main thing requisite for a lasting building; therefore, that it might stand *for the true honour of His majesty* (which Nebuchadnezzar vainly boasted of his Babel), He chose His own Son, *made flesh*. He was GOD, that He might be a strong foundation; He was Man, that He might be suitable to the nature of the stones whereof the Building was to consist, that they might join and cement together.

Precious.] Inestimably precious, by all the conditions that can give worth to any; by rareness, and by inward excellency, and by useful virtues. *Rare* He is, out of doubt; there is not such a person in the world again; therefore He is called by the same Prophet (Isa. ix. 6) **WONDERFUL**, full of wonders:—the power of GOD and the frailty of man dwelling together in His person; *the Ancient of days* becoming an infant: He

that *stretched forth the Heavens* bound up in swaddling clothes in that His infancy, and in His full age stretched forth on the cross; altogether *spotless* and *innocent*, and yet suffering not only the unjust cruelties of men, but the just wrath of GOD His Father; *the Lord of Life*, and yet dying! His *excellency* appears in the same things, in that He is the Lord of life, *GOD blessed for ever*, equal with the Father: the sparkling brightness of this precious stone is no less than this, that He is *the brightness of the Father's glory* (Heb. i. 3); so bright, that men could not have beheld Him appearing in Himself; therefore, He veiled it with our flesh; and yet through that it shined and sparkled so, that the Apostle St. John says of himself and of those others who had their eyes opened, and looked right upon Him, *He dwelt amongst us*, and He had a tent like ours,* and yet through that *we saw His glory, as the glory of the only-begotten Son of GOD, full of grace and truth* (John i. 14),—the Deity filling His human nature with all manner of grace in its highest perfection. And Christ is not only thus excellent in Himself, but of precious *virtue*, which He lets forth and imparts to others; of such virtue, that a touch of Him is the only cure of spiritual diseases. Men tell of strange virtues of some stones; but it is certain that this Precious Stone hath not only virtue to heal the sick, but even to raise the dead. Dead bodies He raised in the days of His abode on earth, and dead souls He still doth raise by the power of His word. The prophet Malachi calls Him *the Sun of Righteousness* (ch. iv. ver. 2), which hath in it the rareness and excellency we speak of. He is singular in this, that as there is but one sun in the world, so but one Saviour; and the lustre of this Precious Stone is such as outshines the sun in its fullest brightness. And then, for His useful virtue, the Prophet adds, that *He hath healing under His wings*. This His worth is unspeakable, and remains infinitely beyond all these resemblances.

2. There is here *the laying* of this Foundation: it is said to be *laid in Sion*; that is, it is laid in the Church of GOD. And it was first laid in *Sion*, literally, that being then the seat of the Church and of the true religion: He was laid there, in His manifestation in the flesh, and suffering, and dying,

* The words *ἐσκήνωσεν ἐν ἡμῖν*, rendered in our version *dwelt among us*, literally mean *tabernacled in us*, i.e. dwelt in our nature as the Shekinah dwelt in the Tabernacle of old.

and rising again ; and afterwards, being preached through the world, He became the foundation of His Church in all places where His name was received ; and so was *a stone growing great, till it filled the whole earth*, as Daniel hath it, ch. ii. ver. 35.

He saith, *I lay* ; by which the Lord expresseth this to be His own proper work, as the Psalmist speaks of the same subject. *This is the Lord's doing ; and it is marvellous in our eyes* (Psal. cxviii. 23). So Isaiah, speaking of this promised Messiah, *The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this*, ch. ix. ver. 7.

And it is not only said, *I lay*, because GOD the Father had the first thought of this great work,—the model of it was in His mind from eternity, and the accomplishment of it was by His almighty power in the morning of His Son's birth, and in His life, and death, and resurrection ; but also, to signify the freeness of His grace, in giving His Son to be a foundation of happiness to man, without the least motion from man, or motive in man, to draw Him to it. And this seems to be signified by the unexpected inserting of these prophetic promises of the Messiah, in the midst of complaints of the people's wickedness, and threatening them with punishment ; intimating that there is no connexion betwixt this work and anything on man's part, to procure it : as if GOD said, Although you do thus provoke me to destroy you, yet, of Myself I have other thoughts, there is another purpose in my mind. And it is observable to this purpose, that that clearest promise of the Virgin's Son is given, not only unrequired, but being refused by that profane king Ahaz, Isa. vii. 10-13.

This, again, that the Lord Himself is the Layer of this Corner-stone, teaches us the firmness of it ; which is likewise expressed in the Prophet's words very emphatically, by redoubling the same word, *Musad, Musad ; fundamentum, fundamentum*.

So Psal. ii. 6, *I have set my king upon my holy hill of Sion :—who then shall dethrone Him ? I have given Him the heathen for His inheritance, and the ends of the earth for His possession ; and who will hinder Him to take possession of His right ? If any offer to do so, what shall they be, but a number of earthen vessels fighting against an iron sceptre, and so certainly breaking themselves in pieces ? Thus here, I lay this foundation-stone ; and if I lay it, who shall remove it ? and what I build upon it, who shall be able to cast down ? For it is the glory of this great Master-builder, that the whole fabric which is of*

His building, cannot be ruined; and for that end hath He laid an unmovable foundation; and for that end are we taught and reminded of its firmness, that we may have this confidence concerning the Church of GOD that is built upon it. To the eye of nature, the Church seems to have no foundation; as Job speaks of the earth, that *it is hung upon nothing*, and yet, as the earth remaineth firm, being established in its place by the word and power of GOD, the Church is most firmly founded upon the *Word made flesh*—Jesus Christ, as its *chief cornerstone*. And as all the winds that blow cannot remove the earth out of its place, so neither can all the attempts of men, no, nor of *the gates of Hell prevail against the Church*, Matt. xvi. 18. It may be beaten with very boisterous storms, *but it cannot fall, because it is founded upon this Rock*, Matt. vii. 25. Thus it is with the whole *house*, and thus with every *stone* in it; as here it follows, *He that believeth shall not be confounded*.

3. There is next, *the building on this Foundation*. To be built on Christ is plainly to believe in Him. But in this the most deceive themselves; they hear of great privileges and happiness in Christ, and presently imagine it is all theirs without any more ado; as that madman of Athens, who wrote up all the ships that came into the haven for his own.* We consider not what it is to believe in Him, nor what is the necessity of this believing, in order that we may be partakers of the salvation that He hath wrought. It is not they that have heard of Him, or that have some common knowledge of Him, or that are able to discourse of Him, and speak of His person and nature aright, but *they that believe in Him*. Much of our knowledge is like that of the poor philosopher, who defineth riches exactly, and discourseth of their nature, but possesseth none; or like that of the geometrician, who can measure land exactly in all its dimensions, but possesseth not a foot thereof. And truly it is but a lifeless unsavoury knowledge that men have of Christ by all books and study, till He reveal Himself and persuade the heart to *believe in Him*. Then, indeed, when it sees Him, and is made one with Him, it says of all the reports it heard, I

* This incident is related by Ælian, *Hist. Var.* iv. 25, and by Athenæus, lib. xii.; and quoted by Montaigne, b. ii. *Essay XII.*, and Rochefoucauld, *Maxim* 96. The Athenian madman was one Thrasyllus, who fancied that all the ships which entered the harbour

belonged to him, and received them with the greatest joy after a successful voyage. When his brother Crito contrived to set him right on this point, like Horace's man of Argos, he bitterly lamented the loss of his happy delusion, his *gratis error*.

heard much, yet *the half was not told me*. There is in lively faith, when it is infused into the soul, a clearer knowledge of Christ and His excellency than before, and with it, a recumbency of the soul upon Him, as the foundation of its life and comfort; a resolving to rest on Him, and not to depart from Him upon any terms. Though I be beset on all hands, be accused by the law, and by mine own conscience, and by Satan, and have nothing to answer for myself, yet here I will stay, for I am sure in Him there is salvation, and nowhere else. All other refuges are but lies (as it is expressed in the words before these in the Prophet, Isa. xxviii. 15), poor base shifts that will do no good. GOD hath laid this precious Stone in Sion, for this very purpose, that weary souls may rest upon it; and why should not I make use of it according to His intention? He hath not forbid any, how wretched soever, to believe, but commands it, and Himself works it where He will, even in the vilest sinners.

Think it not enough that you know this Stone is laid, but see whether you are built on it by faith. The multitude of imaginary believers lie round about it, but they are never the better nor the surer for that, any more than stones that lie loose in heaps near unto a foundation, but are not joined to it. —There is no benefit to us by Christ without union with Him; no comfort in His riches without an interest in them, and a title to them, by virtue of that union. Then is the soul right, when it can say, *He is altogether lovely*, and as the Spouse (Cant. iii. 16), *He is mine, my well-beloved*. This union is the spring of all spiritual consolations. And faith, by which we are thus united, is a Divine work. He that laid this Foundation in Sion with His own hand, works likewise with the same hand, faith in the heart, by which it is knit to this corner-stone. It is not so easy as we imagine *to believe*. See Eph. i. 19. Many that think they believe are, on the contrary, like those of whom the Prophet there speaks, as hardened in sin and carnally secure, whom he represents as *in covenant with hell and death*, walking in sin, and yet promising themselves impunity. Isa. xxviii. 18.

4. There is *the firmness* of this Building, namely, *He that believeth on Him shall not be confounded*. This firmness is answerable to the nature of the foundation. Not only the whole frame, but every stone of it abideth sure. It is a

simple mistake, to judge the persuasion of perseverance to be self-presumption: they that have it are far from building it on themselves, but their foundation is that which makes them sure; because it doth not only remain firm itself, but indissolubly supports all that are once built on it. In the Prophet whence this is cited, it is, *He that believeth shall not make haste*, but the sense is one: they that are disappointed and ashamed in their hopes, run to and fro, and seek after some new resource; this they shall not need to do who come to Christ. The believing soul makes haste to Christ, but it never finds cause to hasten from Him; and though the comfort it expects and longs for be for a time deferred, yet it gives not over, knowing that in due time it shall rejoice, and shall not have cause to blush and think shame of its confidence in Him. David expresseth this distrust, by *making haste*, Psal. xxxi. 22, and cxvi. 11, *I said in my haste*, that is, *I was too hasty when I said so*.* Hopes frustrated, especially where they have been raised high, and continued long, do reproach men with folly, and so shame them. And thus do all earthly hopes serve us, when we lean much upon them. We find usually those things that have promised us most content, pay us with vexation; and they not only prove broken reeds, deceiving our trust, but hurtful, running their broken splinters into our hand that leaned on them. This sure Foundation is laid for us, that our souls may be established on it, and be as *Mount Sion that cannot be removed*, Psal. cxxv. 1. Such times may come as will shake all other supports, but this holds out against all, Psal. xlvi. 2. *Though the earth be removed, yet will not we fear*. Though the frame of the world were cracking about a man's ears, he may hear it unaffrighted who is built on this Foundation. Why then do we choose to *build upon the sand*? Believe it, wheresoever we lay our confidence and affection besides Christ, it shall sooner or later repent us and shame us; either happily in time, while we may yet change them for Him, and have recourse to Him; or miserably, when it is too late. Remember that we must die and *must appear before the judgment-seat of GOD*, and that the things we dote on here have neither power to stay us here, nor have we power to take them along with us, nor, if we could, would they at all profit us there; and therefore, when

* Cf. Psalm lxxvii. 10, *And I said, This is my infirmity, &c.*

we look back upon them all at parting, we shall wonder what fools we were to make so poor a choice. And in *that great day wherein all faces shall gather blackness* (Joel ii. 6), and be filled with confusion, that have neglected to make Christ their stay when He was offered them, then it shall appear how happy they are who have trusted in Him; *they shall not be confounded*, but shall *lift up their faces*, and be acquitted in Him. In their present estate they may be founded* and exercised, but then *they shall not be confounded*, nor ashamed,—there is a double negation in the original,—*by no means*; they shall *be more than conquerors through Him who hath loved them*, Rom. viii. 37.

5. The last thing observable is, the greatness and excellency of this work, intimated in that first word, *Behold*, which imports this work to be very remarkable, and calls the eyes to fix upon it.

The Lord is marvellous in the least of His works; but in this He hath manifested more of His wisdom and power, and let out more of His love to mankind, than in all the rest. Yet we are foolish, and childishly gaze about us upon trifles, and let this great work pass unregarded, scarce afford it half an eye. Turn your wandering eyes this way; look upon this *precious Stone*, and behold Him, not in mere speculation, but so behold Him as to lay hold on Him. For we see He is therefore here set forth, that we may *believe on Him*, and so *not be confounded*; that we may attain this blessed union, that cannot be dissolved. All other unions are dissoluble: a man may be plucked from his dwelling-house and lands, or they from him, though he have never so good a title to them; may be removed from his dearest friends, the husband from the wife, if not by other accidents in their lifetime, yet surely by death, the great dissolver of all those unions, and of that straitest one, of the soul with the body; but it can do nothing against this union, but, on the contrary, perfects it. *For I am persuaded*, says St. Paul, *that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord*, Rom. viii. 38, 39.

There is a twofold mistake concerning faith: on the one

* 'Founded,' i.e. *melted and poured out* in the furnace of trial and adversity; in opposition to 'confounded,' which implies *the mingling together of destruction*.

side, they that are altogether void of it, abusing and flattering themselves in a vain opinion that they have it; and, on the other side, they that have it, misjudging their own condition, and so depriving themselves of much comfort and sweetness that they might find in their believing.

The former is the worse and yet by far the commoner evil. What one says of wisdom, is true of faith, *Many would seek after it and attain it, if they did not falsely imagine that they have attained it already.** There is nothing more contrary to the lively nature of faith, than for the soul not to be at all busied with the thoughts of its own spiritual condition, and yet this very character of unbelief passes with a great many for believing. They doubt not, that is, indeed they consider not what they are; their minds are not at all on these things; are not awakened to seek diligently after Jesus, so as not to rest till they find Him. They are well enough without Him; it suffices them to hear there is such a one, but they ask not themselves, Is He mine, or no? Surely, if that be all,—not to doubt,—the brutes believe as well as they. It were better, out of all question, to be labouring under doubtings; as it is a more hopeful condition, to find a man groaning and complaining than speechless and breathless, and not stirring at all.

There be in spiritual doubtings two things; there is a solicitous care of the soul concerning its own estate, and a diligent inquiry into it, and that is laudable, being a true work of the Spirit of GOD: but the other thing in them is, perplexity and distrust arising from darkness and weakness in the soul. Where there is a great deal of smoke and no clear flame, it argues much moisture in the matter, yet it witnesseth certainly that there is fire there; and therefore, dubious questioning of a man concerning himself is a much better evidence, than that senseless deadness which most take for believing. Men that know nothing in sciences have no doubts. He never truly believed, who was not made first sensible and convinced of unbelief.† This is the Spirit's first errand in the world, to con-

* Puto multos potuisse ad sapientiam pervenire, nisi putassent se jam pervenisse.—Seneca *de Tranquillitate*, cap. i. *penult.*

† Leighton probably had in mind the French proverb, *Qui rien ne sçait, de rien ne doute.* 'Never be afraid to doubt,' is Coleridge's comment, 'if only

you have the disposition to believe, and doubt in order that you may end in believing the truth.' See Aristotle's *Metaphysics*, l. iii. c. 1. 'To be in doubt or to be ignorant is painful,' says Dr. Johnson, 'but it is dangerous to quiet our uneasiness by the delusive opiate of hasty persuasion.' 'An im-

vince it of sin; and the sin is this, that *they believe not*, John xvi. 8, 9. If the faith that thou hast, grew out of thy natural heart of itself, be assured it is but a weed. The right plant of faith is always set by GOD'S own hand, and it is watered and preserved by Him; because exposed to many hazards, He watches it night and day. Isa. xxvii. 3, *I the Lord do keep it, I will water it every moment, lest any hurt it; I will keep it night and day.*

Again, how impudent is it in the most, to pretend they believe, while they wallow in profaneness! If faith unite the soul unto Christ, certainly it puts it into participation of His Spirit; *for if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of His*, says St. Paul. This faith in Christ brings us into communion with GOD. Now, *GOD is light*, says St. John, and he therefore infers, *If we say we have fellowship with GOD, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth*, 1 John i. 6. The lie appears in our practice, an unsuitableness in our carriage; as one said of him that signed his verse wrong, *Fecit solæcismum manu.**

patience of doubt,' observes Bacon, 'and an unadvised haste to assertion without due and mature suspension of the judgment, is an error of the understanding. For the two ways of Contemplation are not unlike the two ways of Action spoken of by the ancients; the one plain and smooth in the beginning, but in the end impassable; the other rough and troublesome in the entrance, but after a while fair and even. So it is in contemplation. If a man will begin with certainties, he shall end in doubts; but if he can be content to begin with doubts, and have patience awhile, he shall end in certainties.'—*Adv. of Learning*, b. i. Sibbes observes: 'Nothing is so certain as that which is certain after doubts: *Nil tam certum quam quod ex dubio certum*. Shaking settles and roots.'—*Works*, vol. i. p. 54. Cf. vol. iii. p. 436, and vol. vii. p. 85. See especially the following admirable work: 'A TREATISE OF KNOWLEDGE AND LOVE COMPARED. I. Against Hasty Judging and False Conceit of Knowledge, and for necessary Suspension. 2. The Excellency of Divine Love, and the Happiness of being Known and Loved of GOD. By RICHARD BAXTER, who, by GOD'S blessing on long and

hard studies, hath learned to know that he knoweth but little, and to suspend his judgment of uncertainties, and to take great, necessary, certain things for the food of his faith, and comfort, and the measure of his Church-Communion. London: 1689.' 4to. In the Dedication it is described as a treatise 'for *necessary Doubting* and a *humble Understanding*, and for *Christian Love*, and against *pretended knowledge* and *rash judging*.'

* The story of the man that 'signed his verse wrong,' or, in other words, used wrong action in reciting on the stage, is quoted from Barthius' *Adversaria*, in Spencer's *Similies*, &c. p. 189, No. 748: 'There was a ridiculous actor in Smyrna who, exclaiming *O cælum* (O heaven!), pointed with his finger towards the ground; whereupon Polemo, the chief man in the place, went away saying, *This fool hath made a solecism with his hand, he hath spoken false Latin with his finger*. And such are they who teach well and do ill; who have heaven at their tongue's end, and earth at their finger's end; who live not according to their preaching. But He that sits in the heavens will laugh them to scorn, and hiss them off the stage, if they do

But there be imaginary believers who are a little more refined, who live after a blameless, yea, and a religious manner, as to their outward behaviour, and yet are but appearances of Christians, have not the living work of faith within, and all these exercises are *dead works*, in their hands. Amongst these, some may have such motions within them as may deceive themselves, while their external deportment deceives others; they may have some transient touches of desire to Christ, upon the unfolding of His excellences in the preaching of the word, and upon some conviction of their own necessity, and may conceive some joy upon thoughts of apprehending Him; and yet all this proves but an evanishing fancy, an embracing of a shadow. And because men who are thus deluded, meet not with Christ indeed, do not really find His sweetness, therefore, within a while, they return to the pleasures of sin, and *their latter end proves worse than their beginning*, 2 Pet. ii. 20. Their hearts could not possibly be steadfast, because there was nothing to fix them on, in all that work wherein Christ Himself was wanting.

But the truly believing soul that is brought unto Jesus Christ, and fastened upon Him by GOD'S own hand, abides stayed on Him, and departs not. And in these persons, the very belief of the things that are spoken concerning Christ in the Gospel, the persuasion of Divine truth, is of a higher nature than the common consent that is called historical; they have another knowledge and evidence of *the mysteries of the kingdom* than natural men can have. This is indeed the ground of all, the very thing that causes a man to rest upon Christ, when he hath a persuasion wrought in his heart by the Spirit of GOD, that Christ is an able Redeemer, a sufficient Saviour, *able to save all that come to Him*, Heb. vii. 25. Then, upon this, the heart resolves upon that course: Seeing I am persuaded of this, that *whoso believes in Him shall not perish, but have everlasting life* (or, as it is here, *shall not be confounded*), I am to deliberate no longer; this is the thing I must do, I must lay my soul upon Him, upon one who is an

not mend their action.' See also p. 98, No. 401 in Spencer. Cf. the Epigram of Lucilius on Flaccus the Rhetorician in the Greek Anthology, where the same expression occurs, τῇ χειρὶ σολοκίζει.

S. Jerome says: Apud Christianos solacismus est magnus et vitium, turpe quid vel narrare vel facere.—*In Helvid.* 16.

Almighty Redeemer: and it does so. Now, these first actings of faith have in themselves an evidence that distinguishes them from all that is counterfeit, a light of their own, by which the soul wherein they are may discern them, and say, This is the right work of faith; especially when GOD shines upon the soul, and clears it in the discovery of His own work within it.

And further, they may find the influence of faith upon the affections, *purifying* them, as our Apostle says of it, Acts xv. 9. Faith knits the heart to a holy Head, a pure Lord, the Spring of purity, and therefore cannot choose but make it pure: it is a beam from Heaven, that raises the mind to a heavenly temper. Although there are remains of sin in a believing soul, yet it is a hated, wearisome guest there. It exists there, not as its delight, but as its greatest grief and malady, which it is still lamenting and complaining of; it had rather be rid of it than gain a world. Thus the soul is purified from the love of sin.

So then, where these are—a spiritual apprehension of the promises, a cleaving of the soul unto Christ, and such a delight in Him as makes sin vile and distasteful, so that the heart is set against it, and, as the needle touched with the loadstone, is still turned towards Christ, and looks at Him in all estates,*—the soul that is thus disposed hath certainly interest in Him; and therefore ought not to affect an humour of doubting, but to conclude, that how unworthy soever in itself, yet being in Him, *it shall not be ashamed*: not only it shall never have cause to think shame of Him, but all its just cause of shame in itself shall be taken away; it shall be covered with His righteousness, and appear so before the Father. Who must not think, If my sins were to be set in order, and appear against me, how would my face be filled with shame! Though there were no more, if some thoughts that I am guilty of were laid to my charge, I were utterly ashamed and undone. Oh! there is nothing in myself but matter of shame, but yet, in

* ' Even as the needle that directs the hour,
Touched with the loadstone, by the secret power
Of hidden nature points unto the pole:
Even so the wavering powers of my soul,
Touched by the virtue of Thy Spirit, flee
From what is earth, and point alone to Thee.'
Quarles' *Job Mil.* med. 4.

Christ there is more matter of glorying, who endured shame, that we might not be ashamed. We cannot distrust ourselves enough, nor trust enough in Him. Let it be right faith, and there can be no excess in believing. Though I have sinned against Him, and abused His goodness, yet I will not leave Him; for *whither should I go?* He, and none but He, *hath the words of eternal life.* Yea, though He being so often offended, should threaten to leave me to the shame of my own follies, yet I will stay by Him, and wait for a better answer, and I know I shall obtain it; this assurance being given me for my comfort, that *whosoever believes in Him shall not be ashamed.*

Ver. 7. Unto you, therefore, which believe, He is precious; but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner.

8. And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

BESIDES all the opposition that meets faith within, in our hearts, it hath this without, that it rows against the great stream of the world's opinion; and therefore hath need, especially where it is very tender and weak, to be strengthened against that. The multitude of unbelievers, and the considerable quality of many of them in the world, are continuing causes of that very multitude; and the fewness of them that truly believe doth much to the keeping of them still few. And as this prejudice prevails with them that believe not, so it may sometimes assault the mind of a believer, when he thinks how many, and many of them wise men in the world, reject Christ. Whence can this be? Particularly the believing Jews, to whom this epistle is addressed, might think it strange, that not only the Gentiles, who were strangers to true religion, but their own nation, that was the select people of GOD, and had the light of His oracles kept in amongst them only, should yet so many of them, yea, and the chief of them, be despisers and haters of Jesus Christ; and that they who were best versed in the law, and so seemed best able to judge of the Messiah foretold, should have persecuted Christ all His life and at last put Him to a shameful death.

That they may know that this makes nothing against Him,

nor ought to invalidate their faith at all, but that it rather indeed testifies with Christ and so serves to confirm them in believing, the Apostle makes use of those prophetic Scriptures, which foretell the unbelief and contempt with which the most would entertain Christ withal; as old Simeon speaks of Him, when He was come, agreeably to those former predictions, that He should be a *sign of contradiction*, Luke ii. 34; that, as He was the promised sign of salvation to believers, so He should be a very mark of enmities and contradictions to the unbelieving world. The passages the Apostle here useth suit with his present discourse and with the words cited from Isaiah in the former verse, continuing the resemblance of *a corner-stone*: they are taken partly from the one hundred and eighteenth Psalm, partly out of the eighth chapter of Isaiah.

Unto you, &c.] Wonder not that others refuse Him, but believe the more for that, because you see the word to be true even in their not believing of it; it is fulfilled and verified by their very rejecting it as false.

And whatsoever are the world's thoughts concerning Christ, that imports not, for they know Him not; but you that do indeed believe, I dare appeal to yourselves, to your own faith that you have of Him, whether He is not precious to you, whether you do not really find Him fully answerable to all that is spoken of Him in the word, and to all that you have accordingly believed concerning Him.

We are here to consider: I. The opposition of the persons: and then, II. The opposition of the things spoken of them.

I. The persons are opposed under the names of *believers*, and *disobedient*, or *unbelievers*; for the word (*ἀπειθοῦσι*) is so near, that it may be taken for unbelief, and it is by some so rendered: and the things are fully as near to each other as the words that signify them—*disobedience* and *unbelief*.

1. Unbelief is itself the grand disobedience. For *this is the work of GOD*, that which the Gospel mainly commands, *that ye believe*, John vi. 29; therefore the Apostle calls it *the obedience of faith*, Rom. i. 5. And there is nothing indeed more worthy of the name of obedience, than the subjection of the mind to receive and to believe those supernatural truths which the Gospel teaches concerning Jesus Christ; to obey, so as to have, as the Apostle speaks, the *impression* of that

Divine pattern stamped upon the heart; *to have the heart delivered up*, as the word there is, *and laid under it to receive it*, Rom. vi. 17.* The word here used for disobedience signifies properly *unpersuasion*; and nothing can more properly express the nature of unbelief than that; and it is the very nature of our corrupt hearts; we are *children of disobedience* or *unpersuasibleness*, Eph. ii. 2, altogether incredulous towards GOD, who is Truth itself, and pliable as wax in Satan's hand, *who works in* such persons what he will, as there the Apostle expresses. They are most easy of belief to him, who is *the very father of lies*, as our Saviour calls him, John viii. 44, *a liar and a murderer from the beginning*, murdering by lies, as he did in the beginning.

2. Unbelief is radically all other disobedience; for all disobedience flows from unbelief. This we least of all suspect, but it is the bitter root of all that ungodliness that abounds amongst us. A right and lively persuasion of the heart concerning Jesus Christ alters the whole frame of it, *casts down its high lofty imaginations, and brings*, not only the outward actions, but the very *thoughts unto the obedience of Christ*, 2 Cor. x. 5.

II. As for the things spoken concerning these disobedient unbelievers, these two testimonies taken together have in them these three things: 1. Their rejection of Christ; 2. Their folly; 3. Their misery in so doing.

1. Their rejection of Christ; they did not receive Him, as the Father appointed and designed Him, as the Foundation and *chief corner-stone*, but slighted Him, and threw Him by, as unfit for the building; and this did not only the ignorant multitude, but *the builders*, they that professed to have the skill and the office, or power, of building, the Doctors of the Law, the Scribes and Pharisees, and Chief Priests, who thought to carry the matter by the weight of their authority, as overbalancing the belief of those that followed Christ. *Have any of the rulers believed in Him! But this people who know not the law, are cursed*, John vii. 48, 49.

We need not wonder then, that not only the powers of the world are usually enemies to Christ, and that the contrivers of policies, those [Babel-] builders, leave out Christ in their building, but that the pretended builders of the Church of

* ὑπηκούσατε δὲ ἐκ καρδίας εἰς ὃν παρεδόθητε τύπον διδασχῆς.

GOD, though they use the name of Christ, and serve their turn with that, yet reject Himself, and oppose the power of His spiritual kingdom. There may be wit and learning, and much knowledge of the Scriptures, amongst those that are haters of the Lord Christ * and of the power of godliness, and corrupters of the worship of GOD. It is the spirit of humility and obedience, and saving faith, that teaches men to esteem Christ, and build upon Him.

2. But the vanity and folly of those Builders' opinion appears in this, that they are overpowered by the great Architect of the Church: His purpose stands. Notwithstanding their rejection of Christ, He is still made the head corner-stone. They cast Him away by their miscensures and reproaches put upon Him, and by giving Him up to be crucified and then cast into the grave, causing a stone to be rolled upon this *Stone* which they had so rejected, that it might appear no more, and so thought themselves sure. But even from thence did He arise, and *became the head of the corner*. (The disciples themselves spake, you know, very doubtfully of their former hopes: *We believed this had been He that would have delivered Israel*; but He corrected their mistake, first by His word, showing them the true method of that great work, *Ought not Christ first to suffer these things, and so enter into glory?* and then really, by making Himself known to them as risen from the dead.) When He was by these rejected, and lay lowest, then was He nearest His exaltation; as Joseph in the prison was nearest his preferment. And thus is it with the Church of Christ; when it is brought to the lowest and most desperate condition, then is deliverance at hand; it prospers and gains in the event, by all the practices of men against it. And as this Corner-stone was fitted to be such, by the very rejection of it, even so is it with the whole building; it rises the higher, the more men seek to demolish it.

3. The unhappiness of them that believe not is expressed in the other word, *He is to them a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence*. Because they will not be saved by Him, they shall stumble and fall, and be broken to pieces on Him, as it is in Isaiah, and in the Evangelists. But how is this? Is He who

* Leighton perhaps wrote, 'the Lord's Christ,' Acts iv. 26, or 'the Lord Jesus Christ;' but see below, p. 294, 'our Lord Christ.'

came to save become a destroyer of men? He whose name is Salvation, proves He destruction to any? Not He in Himself: His primary and proper use is the former, to be a foundation for souls to build and rest upon; but they who, instead of building upon Him, will stumble and fall on Him, what wonder, being so firm a stone, though they be broken by their fall! Thus we see the mischief of unbelief, that as other sins disable the law, this disables the very Gospel to save us, and turns life itself into death to us. And this is the misery, not of a few, but of many in Israel. Many that hear of Christ by the preaching of the Gospel, shall lament that ever they heard that sound, and shall wish to have lived and died without it, finding so great an accession to their misery, by the *neglect of so great salvation*. They are said to *stumble at the word*, because the things that are therein testified concerning Christ, they labour not to understand and prize aright; but either altogether slight them, and account them foolishness, or misconceive and pervert them.

The Jews stumbled at the meanness of Christ's birth and life, and the ignominy of His death, not judging of Him according to the Scriptures; and we, in another way, think we have some kind of belief that He is the Saviour of the world, yet, not making the Scripture the rule of our thoughts concerning Him, many of us undo ourselves, and stumble and break our necks upon this rock, mistaking Christ and the way of believing; looking on Him as a Saviour at large, and judging that enough; not endeavouring to make Him ours, and to embrace Him upon the terms of that new covenant whereof He is Mediator.

Whereunto also they were appointed.] This the Apostle adds, for the further satisfaction of believers in this point, how it is that so many reject Christ, and stumble at Him; telling them plainly that the secret purpose of GOD is accomplished in this; GOD having determined to glorify His justice on impenitent sinners, as He shows His rich mercy in them that believe.* Here it were easier to lead you into a deep

* 'The meaning of these words, saith Dr. Hammond, is this, that they who disobey the Gospel, standing out obstinately against it, were appointed by God to stumble and fall at that Stone, Christ being *set for the falling* as well as the *rising again of many in Israel*; and the Gospel being *a savour of death to them that perish*. This passage cannot signify that the unbelieving Jews

than to lead you forth again. I will rather stand on the shore, and silently admire it, than enter into it. This is certain, that the thoughts of GOD are all no less just in themselves than deep and unsoundable by us. His justice appears clear, in that man's destruction is always the fruit of his own sin. But to give causes of GOD'S decrees without Himself, is neither agreeable with the primitive being of the nature of GOD, nor with the doctrine of the Scriptures.* This is sure, that GOD is not bound to give us further account of these things, and we are bound not to ask it. Let these two words, as St. Austin says, answer all: *What art thou, O man, that disputest with GOD?* and, *O, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of GOD! how unsearchable His Judgments, and His Ways past finding out!* Rom. ix. 20; xi. 33.

Our only sure way to know that our names are not in that black line, and to be persuaded that He hath chosen us to be saved by His Son, is this, to find that we have chosen Him, and are built on Him by faith, which is the fruit of His love, who first chooseth us; and that we may read in our esteem of Him.

He is precious.] Or, *your honour.* The difference is small. You account Him your glory and your gain; He is not only *precious* to you, but *preciousness* itself. He is the thing that you make account of, your jewel, which if you keep, though you be robbed of all besides, you know yourselves to be rich enough.

To you that believe.] Faith is absolutely necessary to make this due estimate of Christ.

1. The most excellent things, while their worth is undiscerned and unknown, affect us not. Now, Faith is the proper seeing faculty of the soul, in relation to Christ: that inward light must be infused from above, to make Christ visible to us; without it, though He is beautiful, yet we are blind; and therefore cannot love Him for that beauty. But by Faith, we are enabled to see Him who is *fairer than the children of men,*

were appointed to disobedience, but only that, being disobedient to the Gospel so clearly revealed, they were appointed, as the punishment of that disobedience, to fall and perish; for so the Hebrew word *chasal*, and the Greek

πρόσκομμα and *σκάνδαλον* import, viz., the ruin and the fall of those who stumble at this Stone. The words afford no countenance to the doctrine of Reprobation.—Whitby, *Disc.* i. c. 1.

* Cf. above, p. 20.

Psal. xlv. 2, yea, to see in Him *the glory of the only-begotten Son of GOD*, John i. 14; and then, it is not possible but to account Him *precious*, and to bestow the entire affection of our hearts upon Him. And if anyone say to the soul, *What is thy beloved more than another?* (Cant. iii. 9), it willingly lays hold on the question, and is glad of an opportunity to extol Him.

2. Faith, as it is that which discerns Christ, so it alone appropriates Him, makes Him our own. And these are the two reasons of our esteeming and effecting anything, its own worth, and our interest in it.* Faith begets this esteem of Christ by both: first it discovers to us His excellencies, which we could not see before; and then it makes Him ours, gives us entire possession of Christ, all that He hath and is. As it is Faith that commends Christ so much, and describes His comeliness in that Song of songs, so that word is the voice of Faith, that expresses propriety, *My well-beloved is mine, and I am His*, Cant. ii. 16. And these together make Him most precious to the soul. Having once possession of Him, then it looks upon all His sufferings as endured particularly for it, and the benefit of them all as belonging to itself. Surely, it will say, I cannot choose but account Him precious, who suffered shame that I might not be ashamed, and suffered death that I might not die; who took that bitter cup of the Father's wrath and drank it out, that I might be free from it?

Think not that you believe, if your hearts be not taken up with Christ, if His love do not possess your soul, so that nothing is precious to you in respect of Him; if you cannot despise and trample upon all advantages that either you have or would have, for Christ, and count them, with the great Apostle, *loss and dung in comparison of Him*, Phil. iii. 8. And if you do esteem Him, labour for increase of faith, that you may esteem Him more; for as faith grows, so will He still be more precious to you. And if you would have it grow, turn that spiritual eye frequently to Him who is the proper object of it. For even they who are believers may possibly abate of their love and esteem of Christ, by suffering faith to lie dead within them, and not using it in beholding and applying of Christ; and the world, or some particular vanities, may in-

* Aristotle's dictum referred to above, p. 73.

ensibly creep in, and get into the heart, and cost them much pains ere they can be thrust out again. But when they are daily reviewing those excellencies that are in Christ, which first persuaded their hearts to love Him, and are discovering still more and more of them, His love will certainly grow, and will chase away those follies that the world dotes upon, as unworthy to be taken notice of.

Ver. 9. But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should show forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvellous light.

It is a matter of very much consolation and instruction to Christians, to know their own estate, what they are as they are Christians. This *Epistle* dwells much and often upon this point for both those ends; that the reflecting upon their dignities in Christ may uphold them with comfort under suffering for Him; and also, that it may lead them in doing and walking as becomes such a condition. Here it hath been represented to us by a building, a spiritual temple, and by a priesthood conformable to it.

The former is confirmed and illustrated by testimonies of Scripture in the preceding verses; the latter in this verse, in which, though it is not expressly cited, yet it is clear that the Apostle hath reference to Exod. xix. 5, 6, where this dignity of priesthood, together with the other titles here expressed, is ascribed to all the chosen people of GOD. It is there a promise made to the nation of the Jews, but under the condition of obedience, and therefore it is most fitly here applied by the Apostle to the believing Jews, to whom particularly he writes.

It is true, that the external priesthood of the law is abolished by the coming of this great High Priest, Jesus Christ being the body of all those shadows; but this promised dignity of spiritual priesthood is so far from being annulled by Christ that it is altogether dependent on Him, and therefore fails in those that reject Christ, although they be of that nation to which this promise was made. But it holds good in all, of all nations, that believe, and particularly, says the Apostle, *it is verified in you*. You that are believing Jews, by receiving Christ receive withal this dignity.

As the legal priesthood was removed by Christ's fulfilling all that is prefigured, so He was rejected by them that were, at His coming, in possession of that office: as the standing of that their priesthood was inconsistent with the revealing of Jesus Christ, so they who were then in it being ungodly men, their carnal minds had a kind of antipathy against Him. Though they pretended themselves builders of the Church, and by their calling ought to have been so, yet they threw away the Foundation-stone that GOD had chosen and designed, and, in rejecting it, manifested that they themselves were rejected of GOD. But on the contrary, you who have laid your souls on Christ by believing, have this your choosing Him as a certain evidence that GOD hath chosen you to be His *peculiar people*, yea, to be so dignified as to be a *kingly priesthood*, through Christ.

We have here to consider: 1. The estate of Christians, in the words that here describe it; 2. The opposition of it to the state of unbelievers; 3. The end of it.

First. The state of Christians described as *A chosen generation*. So in Psal. xxiv. The Psalmist there speaks first of GOD's universal sovereignty, then of His peculiar choice. *The earth is the Lord's* (ver. 1), but there is a select company appointed for His *holy mountain*, there described; and the description is closed thus, *This is the generation of them that seek Him*. Thus Deut. x. 14, 15, and Exod. xix. 5, whence this passage is taken, *For all the earth is mine*, and that nation which is a figure of the elect of all nations, GOD's *peculiar people*, beyond all others in the world.* As men who have great variety of possessions yet have usually their special delight in some one beyond all the rest, and choose to reside most in it, and bestow most expense on it to make it pleasant; so doth the Lord of the whole earth choose out to Himself from the rest of the world, a number that are *a chosen generation*.

Choosing, here, is the work of effectual calling, or the severing of believers from the rest; for it signifies a difference in their present estate, as do likewise the other words joined with

* 'If ye will obey My voice indeed, and keep My covenant, then shall ye be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the earth is Mine; and ye shall be unto Me a kingdom of priests and an holy nation.'—Exod. xix. 5, 6.

it. But this election is altogether conformable to that of GOD's eternal decree, and is no other than the execution or performance of it; GOD's framing of this His building being just according to the idea of it which was in His mind and purpose before all time: it is the drawing forth and investing of those into this Christian, this kingly priesthood, whose names were expressly written up for it in the Book of Life.

Generation.] This imports them to be of one race or stock. As the Israelites, who were by outward calling the children of GOD, were all the *seed of Abraham according to the flesh*; so, they that believe in the Lord Jesus are *children of the promise*, Gal. iv. 28; and all of them are, by their new birth, one people or generation. They are of one nation, belonging to the same blessed land of promise, all citizens of the New Jerusalem, yea, all children of the same family, whereof Jesus Christ, the *root of Jesse*, is the stock, who is the great *King*, and the *great High Priest*. And thus they are a *royal priesthood*. There is no devolving of His royalty or priesthood on any other, as it is in Himself; for His proper dignity is supreme and incommunicable, and there is no succession in His order: He *lives for ever*, and *is priest for ever*, Psal. cx. 4, and *king for ever* too, Psal. xlv. 6. But they that are descended from Him do derive from Him, by that new original, this double dignity, in that way that they are capable of it, to be likewise kings and priests, as He is both. They are of the seed-royal, and of the holy seed of the priesthood, inasmuch as they partake of a new life from Christ. Thus, in Rev. i. 5, 6, first, there is His own dignity expressed, then His dignifying us: *Who is Himself the first-begotten among the dead, and the prince of the kings of the earth*; and then it follows, *And hath made us kings and priests unto GOD and His Father*.

A royal priesthood.] That the dignity of believers is expressed by these two together, by *priesthood* and *royalty*, teaches us the worth and excellency of that holy function taken properly, and so, by analogy, the dignity of the ministry of the Gospel, which GOD hath placed in His Church, instead of the priesthood of the law; for therefore doth this title of spiritual priesthood fitly signify a great privilege and honour that Christians are promoted to, and it is joined with that of kings, because the proper office of priesthood was so honourable.

Before it was established in one family, the chief, the first-born of each family, had a right to this, as a special honour ;* and amongst the heathens, in some places, their princes and greatest men, yea, their kings, were their priests ; and universally, the performing of their holy things was an employment of great honour and esteem amongst them. Though human ambition hath strained this consideration too high, to the favouring and founding of a monarchical prelacy in the Christian world, yet, that abuse of it ought not to prejudice us of this due and just consequence from it, that the holy functions of GOD'S house have very much honour and dignity in them. And the Apostle, we see, 2 Cor. iii., prefers the ministry of the Gospel to the priesthood of the law. So then, they mistake much who think it a disparagement to men that have some advantages of birth or wit more than ordinary, to bestow them thus, and who judge the meanest persons and things good enough for this *high calling*. Surely this conceit cannot have place but in an unholy, irreligious mind, that hath either no thoughts, or very mean thoughts, of GOD. If they who are called to this holy service would themselves consider this aright, it would not puff them up, but humble them : comparing their own worthlessness with this great work, they would wonder at GOD'S dispensation, that should thus have honoured them. As St. Paul speaks of himself, Eph. iii. 8, *Unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, &c.*, so, the more a man rightly extols this his calling, the more he humbles himself under the weight of it ; and this would make him very careful to walk more suitably to it in eminency of holiness, for in that consists its true dignity.

There is no doubt that this kingly priesthood is the common dignity of all believers : *this honour have all the saints*. They are kings, have victory and dominion given them over the

* Bishop Pearson observes : ' The priesthood did not begin in Aaron, but was translated and conferred upon his family before his consecration. We read of " the priests who came near to the Lord," Exod. xix. 22 ; of " young men of the Children of Israel who offered burnt-offerings, and sacrificed peace-offerings of oxen unto the Lord," ib. xxiv. 5 ; which, without question, were no other than the first-born, to

whom the priesthood did belong. The Hebrew word signifying *young men*, by all the Targums is rendered *first-born*, and so the Arabic and Persian translations.' The Levites were chosen in the place of the first-born, Numb. iii. 12 ; thus, both in the patriarchal and Mosaic, as well as in the Christian dispensations, *presbyter* or *elder* came to have a *priestly* significance.

powers of darkness and the lusts of their own hearts, that held them captive, and domineered over them before. Base, slavish lusts, not born to command, yet are the hard taskmasters of unrenewed minds; and there is no true subduing of them, but by the power and Spirit of Christ. They may be quiet for awhile in a natural man, but they are then but asleep; as soon as they awake again, they return to hurry and drive him with their wonted violence. Now this is the benefit of receiving the kingdom of Christ into a man's heart, that it makes him a king himself. All the subjects of Christ are kings, not only in regard of that pure crown of glory they hope for, and shall certainly attain, but in the present, they have a kingdom which is the pledge of that other, overcoming the world, and Satan, and themselves, by the power of faith. *Mens bona regnum possidet,** A good mind is a kingdom in itself, it is true; but there is no mind truly good but that wherein Christ dwells. There is not any kind of spirit in the world so noble as that spirit that is in a Christian, the very spirit of Jesus Christ, that great king, the *Spirit of glory*, as our Apostle calls it below, ch. iv. This is a sure way to ennoble the basest and poorest among us. This royalty takes away all attainders, and leaves nothing of all that is past to be laid to our charge, or to dishonour us.

Believers are not shut out from GOD, as they were before, but, being in Christ, are brought near unto Him, and have free access to the throne of His grace. Heb. x. 21, 22. They resemble, in their spiritual state, the legal priesthood very clearly: I. In their consecration; II. In their service; and, III. In their laws of living.

I. In their consecration. *First*, the Levitical priests were

* Seneca, *Thyestes*, ii. 380. This Sir Edward Dyer's, 'My mynde to me a passed into a proverb, and was adopted kyngdome is,' and a passage in Shakspeare's *King Henry VI.*:—
as his motto by the Emperor Nerva. It suggested that beautiful old song of

'K. Thou talk'st as if thou wert a king.
K. H. Why so I am in mind; and that's enough.
K. But, if thou be a king, where is thy crown?
K. H. My crown is in my heart, not on my head:
Not decked with diamonds and Indian stones,
Nor to be seen: my crown is called Content;
A crown it is, that seldom kings enjoy.'

Greene, another Elizabethan writer, has a sweet sonnet on Content, ending with the line—

'A mind content both crown and kingdom is.'

washed; therefore this is expressed, Rev. i. 5, *He hath washed us in His blood*, and then follows, *and hath made us kings and priests*. There would have been no coming near unto GOD in His holy services as His priests, unless we had been cleansed from the guiltiness and pollution of our sins. This, that pure and purifying Blood doth; and it alone. No other laver can do it; no water but that *fountain opened for sin and for uncleanness*, Zech. xiii. 1. No blood, none of all that blood of legal sacrifices (Heb. ix. 12), but only the Blood of that spotless Lamb that *takes away the sin of the world*, John i. 29. 2. So with this we have that other ceremony of the priest's consecration, which was by *sacrifice*, as well as by washing; for Christ at once offered up Himself as our sacrifice, and let out His blood for our washing. With good reason is that prefixed there, Rev. i. 5, *He hath loved us*, and then it follows, *washed us in His blood*. That precious stream of His heart-blood, that flowed for our washing, told clearly that it was a heart full of unspeakable love that was the source of it. 3. There is *anointing*, namely, the graces of the Spirit, conferred upon believers, flowing unto them from Christ. For *it is of His fulness that we all receive grace for grace* (John i. 16); and the Apostle St. Paul says (2 Cor. i. 21), that *we are established and anointed in Christ*. It was poured on Him as our head, and runs down from Him unto us; hence He is called *Christ*, and we *Christians*, as partakers of His anointing. The consecrating oil of the priests was made of the richest ointments and spices, to show the preciousness of the graces of GOD'S Spirit, which are bestowed on these spiritual priests; and as that holy oil was not for common use, nor for any other persons to be anointed withal save the priests only, so is the Spirit of grace a peculiar gift to believers. Others might have costly ointments amongst the Jews, but none of that same sort with the consecration-oil. Natural men may have very great gifts of judgment, and learning, and eloquence, and moral virtues, but they have none of this precious oil, namely, the Spirit of Christ communicated to them; no, all their endowments are but common and profane. That holy oil signified particularly, eminency of light and knowledge in the priests; therefore, in Christians there must be light. They that are grossly ignorant of spiritual things are surely not of this order;

this *anointing* is said *to teach us all things*, 1 John ii. 27. That holy oil was of a most fragrant sweet smell, by reason of its precious composition; but much more sweet is the smell of that Spirit wherewith believers are anointed, those several odoriferous graces, which are the ingredients of their anointing oil, that heavenly-mindedness, and meekness, and patience, and humility, and the rest that diffuse a pleasant scent into the places and societies where they come; their words, their actions, and their deportment smelling sweet of them. 4. The *garments* wherein the priests were inaugurated, and which they were after to wear in their services, are outshined by that purity and holiness wherewith all the saints are adorned; but still more by that Imputed Righteousness of Christ, *those pure robes* that are put upon them, wherein they appear before the Lord, and are accepted in His sight. These priests are indeed *clothed with righteousness*, according to that of the Psalmist, Psal. cxxxii. 9. 5. The priests were to have the *offerings* put into their hands; from thence *filling of the hand* signifies consecrating to the priesthood. And thus doth Jesus Christ, who is the consecrator of these priests, put into their hands by His Spirit the offerings they are to present unto GOD. He furnishes them with prayers, and praises, and all other oblations, that are to be offered by them; He gives them themselves, which they are to offer a living sacrifice, rescuing them from the usurped possession of Satan and sin.

II. Let us consider their services, which were divers. To name the chief: 1. They had charge of the sanctuary, and the vessels of it, and the lights, and were to keep the lamps burning. Thus the heart of every Christian is made a temple to the Holy Ghost, and he himself, as a priest consecrated unto GOD, is to keep it diligently, and the furniture of Divine Grace in it; to have the light of spiritual knowledge within him, and to nourish it by drawing continually new supplies from Jesus Christ. 2. The priests were to bless the people. And truly it is this spiritual priesthood, *the Elect*, that procure blessings upon the rest of the world, and particularly on the places where they live. They are daily to offer the incense of prayer, and other *spiritual sacrifices* unto GOD, as the Apost!e expresseth it above, verse 5, and not to neglect those holy exercises together or apart. And as the priests offered not

only for themselves, but for the people, so Christians are to extend their prayers, and to entreat the blessings of GOD for others, especially for the public estate of the Church. As the Lord's priests, they are to offer up those praises to GOD that are His due from the other creatures, which praise Him indeed, yet cannot do it after the manner in which these priests do; therefore they are to offer as it were their sacrifices for them, as the priests did for the people. And because the most of men neglect to do this, and cannot do it indeed because they are unholy, and are not of this priesthood, therefore should they be so much the more careful of it, and diligent in it. How few of those whom the Heavens call to by their light and revelation that they enjoy, do offer that sacrifice which becomes them, by acknowledging *the glory of GOD which the Heavens declare!* This, therefore, is as it were put into the hands of these priests, namely, the godly, to do.*

III. Let us consider their course of life. We shall find rules given to the legal priests stricter than to others, of avoiding legal pollutions, &c. And from these, this spiritual priesthood must learn an exact, holy conversation, keeping themselves from the pollutions of the world; as here it follows: *A holy nation*, and that of necessity; if a priesthood, then holy. They are purchased indeed to be *a peculiar treasure* to GOD (Exod. xix. 5), purchased at a very high rate. He spared not His only Son, nor did the Son spare Himself: so that these priests ought to be the Lord's peculiar portion. All believers are His *clergy*; and as they are His portion, so He is theirs.†

* The excellent R. Boyle, in his treatise *Of the Usefulness of Natural Philosophy*, pt. i. Essay 3, observes: 'The world is a temple and man is the priest, ordained by being qualified to celebrate Divine service not only *in* it, but *for* it. Man as born the priest of nature, and as the most obliged and capable member of it, is bound to return thanks and praises to his Maker, not only for himself, but for the whole creation. In which sense we may reconcile those two current assertions, *that GOD made all things for His own glory*, and *that GOD made all things for man, and man for Himself*. For Man, as a representer of the Macrocosm or great world, presents with his own adorations the homage of all the crea-

tures to their Creator, though they be ignorant of what is done, as infants under the law were unconscious of the sacrifices offered on their account. And in this relation may the creatures answer the solemn invitation made them in the 148th Psalm, and in numerous other Scriptures.'

† The clergy (*κληρικοί*, *clerici*) are so called from *κλήρος*, *a lot or portion*, because they are allotted and consecrated to GOD, and He is their lot and inheritance.—Numb. viii. 14; xviii. 20. They are thus distinguished from the other members of the Church, who are called the laity (*λαϊκοί*) as being the chosen *people* of GOD. Cf. S. Jerome and S. Chrys., quoted in Bp. Wordsworth's *Theophilus Anglicanus*, p. 76.

The priests had no assigned inheritance among their brethren, and the reason is added, for *the Lord is their portion*, Deut. x. 9; and truly so they needed not envy any of the rest, they had the choicest of all, the Lord of all. Whatsoever a Christian possesses in the world, yet, being of this spiritual priesthood, he is *as if he possessed it not* (1 Cor. vii. 30), lays little account on it. That which his mind is set upon is, how he may enjoy GOD, and find clear assurance that he hath Him for his portion.

It is not so mean a thing to be a Christian as we think; it is a holy, an honourable, a happy state. Few of us can esteem it, or do labour to find it so. No, we know not these things, our hearts are not on them, to make this dignity and happiness sure to our souls. Where is that true greatness of mind, and that holiness to be found, that become those who are *kings* and *priests* unto GOD? that contempt of earthly things, and minding of Heaven that should be in such? But surely, as many as find themselves indeed partakers of these dignities, will study to live conformably to them, and will not fail to love that Lord Jesus who hath purchased all this for them, and exalted them to it; yea, humbled Himself to exalt them.

The *second* thing to be considered in this *verse* is, the opposition of the estate of Christians to that of unbelievers. We best discern, and are most sensible of the evil or good of things by comparison. In respect of outward condition, how many be there that are vexing themselves with causeless murmurings and discontents, who, if they would look upon the many in the world that are in a far meaner condition than they, would be cured of that evil! It would make them not only content, but cheerful and thankful. But the difference here expressed is far greater and more considerable than any that can be in outward things. Though the estate of a Christian is very excellent and precious, and, when rightly valued, hath enough in itself to commend it, yet it doth and ought to raise our esteem of it the higher, when we compare it both with the misery of our former condition, and with the continuing misery of those that abide still and are left to perish in that woeful estate. We have here both these parallels. The happiness and dignity to which they are chosen and called is opposed to

the rejection and misery of them that continue unbelievers and rejecters of Christ.

Not only natural men, but even they that have a spiritual life in them, when they forget themselves, are subject to look upon the things that are before them with a natural eye, and to think hardly, or at least doubtfully, concerning GOD'S dispensations, beholding the flourishing and prosperities of the ungodly, together with their own sufferings and distresses. Thus, Psal. lxxiii. But when they turn the other side of the medal, and view them with a right eye, and by a true light, they are no longer abused with those appearances. When they consider unbelievers *as strangers, yea, enemies to GOD,* and slaves to Satan, held fast in the chains of their own impenitency and unbelief, and by these bound over to eternal death, and then see themselves called to the liberties and dignities of the sons of GOD, partakers of the honour of the only-begotten Son, on whom they have believed, made by Him *kings and priests unto GOD the Father,* then, surely they have other thoughts. It makes them no more envy, but pity the ungodly, and account all their pomp and all their possessions what they are indeed, no other than a glistening misery, and account themselves happy in all estates. It makes them say with David, *The lines have fallen to me in a pleasant place, I have a goodly heritage.* It makes them digest all their sufferings and disgraces with patience, yea, with joy, and think more of praising than complaining, more of showing forth His honour who hath so honoured them; especially, when they consider the freeness of His grace, that it was that alone which made the difference, calling them altogether undeservedly from that same darkness and misery in which unbelievers are deservedly left.

Now the *Third* thing here to be spoken to, is, the *End* of their calling,—*to show forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvellous light.* And that we may the more prize the reasonableness* of that happy estate to which GOD hath called them, it is expressed in other terms;

* i.e. *excellence*. Again in this Commentary, on ch. v. ver. 5, 'reasonable' occurs in the sense of *excellent*. As this use of the word has no precedent, it can only be conjectured that the original word was misread by the copyist.

which therefore we will first consider, and then *the end* of their calling.

To magnify the grace of GOD the more, we have here :
1. Both the terms of this motion or change,—*from whence* and *to what* it is ; 2. The principle of it, the calling of GOD.

(1.) For the terms of this motion: *From darkness.*] There is nothing more usual, not only in Divine but in human writings, than to borrow outward sensible things to express things intellectual ; and amongst such expressions there is none more frequent than that of *light* and *darkness* transferred, to signify the good and the evil estate of man as sometimes for his outward prosperity or adversity, but especially for things proper to his mind. The mind is called *light*, because the seat of truth, and truth is most fitly called *light*, being the chief beauty and ornament of the rational world, as light is of the visible. And as the light, because of that its beauty, is a thing very refreshing and comfortable to them that behold it (as Solomon says, *It is a pleasant thing to see the sun*), so is truth a most delightful thing to the soul that rightly apprehends it.

This may help us to conceive of the spiritual sense in which it is here taken. The estate of lost mankind is indeed nothing but darkness, being destitute of all spiritual truth and comfort, and tending to utter and everlasting darkness.*

* 'This natural or material world in which we live as to the body, proceeds derivatively from the spiritual world, and subsists by continual influx from it ; it is as a spiritual thing formed into a palpable and material thing, as an essence clothing itself with a form, or as a soul making to itself a body. Therefore this world and all things in it, as far forth as they stand in the Divine order, do correspond to heaven and heavenly things ; but now (through the fall of man), standing in evil as well as good, the dark, evil, or hellish world has gained a form in outward nature. Hence it is, that so many evil men, evil beasts, and poisonous things, together with all the disorders of the natural world, bear its impressions and properties. *Error and darkness*, saith the wise man, *had their beginning together with sinners*. Man is a little image of heaven or hell, and also of this outward world.

At death he puts off his part in this material kingdom, and passes into one of the other two, being its servant which he obeys, and to which he unites himself here by his will and affections.'

'Men had lost the true original language of nature (which expresseth things according to their qualities and properties) before the Flood ; and this ignorance they fell into on their losing the knowledge of nature in its correspondence to Divine and heavenly things ; for Nature in its proper order is the book of God, and exhibits spiritual things in material forms. The knowledge of correspondences being so little understood is one main cause of the obscurity of the Scriptures of the Old Testament, which were chiefly written by the rules of this science. And not Scripture alone, but man also, as an image of the spiritual and natural

And it is so, because by sin the soul is separate from GOD, who is the first and highest LIGHT, the primitive TRUTH. As He is light in Himself (as the Apostle St. John tells us, *GOD is light, and in Him there is no darkness at all*, expressing the excellency and purity of His nature), so He is light relatively to the soul of man: *The Lord is my light*, says David, Psal. xxvii. 1.

And the soul being made capable of Divine light, cannot be happy without it. Give it what other light you will, still it is in darkness, so long as it is without GOD, He being the peculiar light and life of the soul. And as truth is united with the soul in apprehending it, and light with the visive faculty, so, in order that the soul may have GOD as its light, it must of necessity be in union with GOD. Now sin hath broken that union, and so cut off the soul from its light, and plunged it into spiritual darkness.

Hence all that confusion and disorder in the soul, which is ever the companion of darkness:—*Tohu vabohu*,—as it was at first, when *darkness was on the face of the deep*, Gen. i. 2. Being ignorant of GOD and of ourselves, it follows that we love not GOD, *because we know Him not*; yea (though we think it a hard word), we are *haters of GOD*; for not only doth our darkness import ignorance of Him, but an enmity to Him, because He is light, and we are darkness. And being ignorant of ourselves, not seeing our own vileness, because we are in the dark, we are pleased with ourselves, and having left GOD, do love ourselves instead of GOD. Hence arise all the wickednesses of our hearts and lives, which are no other than, instead of obeying and pleasing GOD, a continual sacrificing to those *Gillulim*,* those base *dunghill-gods*, our own lusts. For this the Apostle Paul gives as the root of all evil dispositions, 2 Tim. iii. 2; because, in the first place, men are *lovers of themselves*, therefore they are *covetous, boasters, proud, &c.*, and *lovers of pleasures more than of GOD*. And this self-love cannot subsist without gross ignorance, by which our minds

worlds, contains in himself the correspondences of both; of the former in his interior, and of the latter in his exterior or bodily part, and so is called the Microcosm or little world.—Hartley of Winwick.

* Some of the abominable idols of the heathen were thus expressively designated in holy Scripture. Thus in Deut. xxix. 17, in the margin of our version, the word is rendered *dungy gods*.

are so darkened that we cannot withal see what we are ; for if we did, it were not possible but we should be far of another mind, very far out of loving and liking with ourselves. Thus our souls being filled with darkness are likewise full of uncleanness, as that goes along too with darkness ; they are not only dark as dungeons, but withal filthy as dungeons use to be. So, in Eph. iv. 18, 19, the Gentiles *having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of GOD*, therefore, *have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness*. Again, in this state they have no light of solid comfort. Our great comfort here is not in anything present, but in hope ; now, being *without Christ, and without GOD*, we are *without hope*, Eph. ii. 12.

Into His marvellous Light.] As the estate from whence we are called by grace is worthily called *darkness*, so that to which it calls us deserves as well the name of *light*. Christ, likewise, who came to work our deliverance, is frequently so called in Scripture ; as John i. 9, *That was the true Light*, and elsewhere ; not only in regard of His own nature, being GOD equal with the Father, and therefore Light, as He is *GOD of GOD*, and therefore *Light of Light* ; but relatively to men, as John i. 4, *That life was the light of men*. So He is styled *The Word*, and *the Wisdom of the Father*, not only in regard of His own knowledge, but as revealing Him unto us. See John i. 18, and 1 Cor. i. 24, compared with ver. 30. And He is styled by Malachi (ch. iv. ver. 2) *The Sun of Righteousness*. Now, the sun is not only a luminous body, but a luminary, giving light unto the world, Gen. i. 15.

He is our *Light*, opposed to all kind of darkness. He is so, in opposition to the dark shadows of the ceremonial law, which possibly are here meant, as part of that darkness from which the Apostle writes that these Jews were delivered also by the knowledge of Christ : when He came, *the day broke and the shadows flew away*. He is our *light*, as opposed likewise to the darkness of the Gentile superstitions and idolatries ; therefore these two are joined by old Simeon, *A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of His people Israel*, Luke ii. 34. And to all who believe, of both Jews and Gentiles, He is *light* as opposed to the ignorance, slavery, and misery, of their natural estate, teaching them by His Spirit the things of GOD, and

re-uniting them with GOD, who is the light of the soul. *I am*, says He, *the Light of the world; he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness*, John viii. 12.

And it is that mysterious union of the soul with GOD in Christ which a natural man so little understands, that is the cause of all that spiritual light of grace that a believer does enjoy. There is no right knowledge of GOD, to man once fallen from it, but in His Son; no comfort in beholding GOD but through Him; nothing but just anger and wrath to be seen in GOD'S looks but through Him, *in whom He is well pleased*. The Gospel shows us *the light of the knowledge of the Glory of GOD*, but it is *in the face of Jesus Christ*, 2 Cor. iv. 6. Therefore the kingdom of light, as opposed to that of darkness, is called *The kingdom of His dear Son*, or, the *Son of His love*, Col. i. 13.

There is a spirit of light and knowledge flows from Jesus Christ into the souls of believers, that acquaints them with the *mysteries of the kingdom of GOD*, which cannot otherwise be known. And this spirit of knowledge is withal a *spirit of holiness*; for purity and holiness are likewise signified by this *light*. He removed that huge dark body of sin that was betwixt us and the Father, and eclipsed Him from us. The light of His countenance *sanctifieth by truth*; it is a light that hath heat with it, and hath influence upon the affections, warms them towards GOD and Divine things. This *Darkness* here is indeed the shadow of death, and they that are without Christ are said, till He visit them, *to sit in darkness and in the shadow of death*, Luke i. 79; so, this *Light* is *life*, John i. 4; it doth enlighten and enliven, begets new actions and motions in the soul, imparts the right notion that a man hath of things as they are, works upon him, and stirs him accordingly, discovers a man to himself, and lets him see his own natural filthiness, makes him loathe himself, and fly from himself,—run out of himself. And the excellency he sees in GOD and His Son Jesus Christ by this new light, inflames his heart with their love, fills him with estimation of the Lord Jesus, and makes the world and all things in it that he esteemed before base and mean in his eyes. Then from this light arise *spiritual joy* and *comfort*, which are frequently signified by *light*, as in that verse of the Psalmist (wherein the

latter clause expounds the former), *Light is sown for the righteous, and joy for the upright in heart*, Psal. xcvi. 11. As this *kingdom of GOD's dear Son*, that is, this kingdom of *light*, hath righteousness in it, so it hath *peace and joy in the Holy Ghost*, Rom. xiv. 17. It is a false prejudice the world hath taken up against religion, that it is a sour melancholy thing: there is no truly lightsome and comfortable life but it. All others, have they what they will, live in darkness; and is not that truly sad and comfortless? Would you think it a pleasant life, though you had fine clothes and good diet, never to see the sun, but still to be kept in a dungeon with them? Thus are they who live in worldly honour and plenty, but still without GOD; they are in continual darkness with all their enjoyments.

It is true the light of believers is not here perfect, and therefore their joy is not perfect either: it is sometimes overclouded; but the comfort is this, that it is an everlasting light, it shall never go out in darkness, as it is said in Job xviii. 5 of *the light of the wicked*; and it shall within awhile be perfected: there is a bright morning without a cloud that shall arise. The saints have not only light to lead them in their journey, but much purer light at home, *an Inheritance in light*, Col. i. 12. The land where their inheritance lieth is full of light, and their inheritance itself is light; for the VISION OF GOD for ever is that inheritance. That city *hath no need of the sun, nor of the moon, to shine in it, for the glory of the Lord doth lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof*, Rev. xxi. 23. As we said, that Increased Light is the happiness of the soul, the beginnings of it are our happiness begun; they are beams of it sent from above, to lead us to the fountain and fulness of it. *With Thee*, says David, *is the fountain of life, and in Thy light shall we see light*, Psal. xxxvi. 9.

There are two things spoken of this Light, to commend it—*His marvellous light*: that it is after a peculiar manner GOD's, and then, that it is *marvellous*.

All light is from Him, the light of sense and that of reason; therefore He is called the *Father of lights*, Jam. i. 17. But this *light of Grace* is after a peculiar manner His, being a light above the reach of nature, infused into the soul into a supernatural way, the light of the elect world, where GOD specially

and graciously resides. Natural men may know very much in natural things, and, it may be, may know much in supernatural things, after a natural manner. They may be full of school-divinity, and be able to discourse of GOD and His Son Christ, and the mystery of redemption, &c., and yet they want this peculiar light, by which Christ is made known to believers. They may speak of Him, but it is in the dark; they see Him not, and therefore they love Him not. The light they have is as the light of some things that shine only in the night, a cold glow-worm light that hath no heat with it at all. Whereas a soul that hath some of *this* light, GOD's peculiar light, communicated to it, sees Jesus Christ, and loves and delights in Him, and walks with Him. A little of this light is worth a great deal, yea, more worth than all that other common, speculative, and discoursing knowledge that the greatest doctors can attain unto. It is of a more excellent kind and original; it is from Heaven, and you know that one beam of the sun is of more worth than the light of ten thousand torches together. It is a pure, undecaying, heavenly light, whereas the other is gross and earthly (be it never so great), and lasts but awhile. Let us not therefore think it incredible, that a poor unlettered Christian may know more of GOD in the best kind of knowledge, than any the wisest and most learned natural man can do; for the one knows GOD only by man's light, the other knows Him by His own light, and that is the only right knowledge. As the sun cannot be seen but by its own light, so neither can GOD be savingly known but by His own revealing.

Now this Light being so peculiarly *GOD's*, no wonder if it be *marvellous*. The common light of the world is so, though, because of its commonness, we think not so of it. The LORD is marvellous in wisdom and in power, in all His works of creation and providence; but above all, in the workings of His grace. This light is unknown to the world, and so *marvellous* in the rareness of beholding it that there be but a few that partake of it. And to them that see it is *marvellous*; because in it they see so many excellent things that they knew not before: as if a man were born and brought up, till he came to the years of understanding, in a dungeon, where he had never

seen light, and were brought forth on a sudden;* or, not to need that imagination, take the man that was born blind, at his first sight after Christ had cured him,—what wonder, think we, would seize upon him, to behold on a sudden the beauty of this visible world, especially of that sun, and that light that makes it both visible and beautiful! But much more matter of admiration is there in this *Light*, to the soul that is brought newly from the darkness of corrupt nature! Such persons see as it were a new world, and in it such wonders of the rich grace and love of GOD, such matchless worth in Jesus Christ the Sun of Righteousness, that their souls are filled with admiration.† And if this light of *Grace* be so *marvellous*, how much more *marvellous* shall the light of *Glory* be in which it ends!

Hence, 1. Learn to esteem highly of the Gospel, in which this light shines unto us: the Apostle calls it, therefore, *The*

* Leighton alludes here most probably to a remarkable passage from a treatise of Aristotle's, now lost, quoted by Cicero:—

‘These men (the Epicurean philosophers) talk so wildly and absurdly about this world, that they seem to me never to have contemplated the wonderful magnificence of the Heavens. Aristotle puts this in a very striking way: “If there were men who had always dwelt under ground, in spacious and commodious mansions, adorned with statues and pictures, and furnished with everything that the so-called happy abound with; and if, without stirring from thence, they should be informed of a certain divine power and majesty, and then, after some time, that the earth should open and they come forth from their dark abode to the surface, where they might at once behold the earth, sea, and sky; observe the vast extent of the clouds and the mighty power of the winds; see the sun and witness his grandeur, and watch the day springing

from his glorious light; and then, again, when night has obscured the earth, if they should contemplate the heavens bespangled with stars; the wondrous changes of the moon in her increase and wane, the rising and setting of the stars, and the unfailing regularity of their courses;—when, I say, they should behold all these wonders, they could not but conclude that there is a God, and that these are His mighty works.”’

Cicero excellently observes upon this passage: ‘Yes, if we should be suddenly brought from a state of eternal darkness to see the light, how beautiful would the Heavens seem! But because we are accustomed to this glorious spectacle, we are not affected by it, nor disposed to search into the causes of phenomena which are always before our eyes; as if the novelty rather than the excellence of things ought to excite our admiration and curiosity.’—*De Natura Deorum*, ii. 37, 38.

† ‘Two worlds are ours: ’tis only sin
Forbids us to descry
The mystic heaven and earth within,
Plain as the sea and sky.

‘Thou, who hast given me eyes to see
And love this sight so fair,
Give me a heart to find out Thee,
And read Thee everywhere.’—*Christian Year*.

glorious Gospel, 2 Cor. iv. 4. Surely we have no cause to be ashamed of it, but of ourselves, that we are so unlike it.

2. Think not, you who are grossly ignorant of GOD, and His Son Christ, and the mysteries of salvation, that you have any portion as yet in His grace; for the first character of His renewed image in the soul, as it was His first work in the material world, is light. What avails it us to live in the noon-day light of the Gospel if our hearts be still shut against it, and so within we be nothing but darkness?—as a house that is close shut up and hath no entry for light, though it is day without, still it is night within.

3. Consider your delight in the works of darkness, and be afraid of that great condemnation, *This is the condemnation of the world, that light is come into it, and men love darkness rather than light*, John iii. 19.

4. You that are indeed partakers of this happy change, let your hearts be habitations of light. *Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them.* Eph. v. 11. Study much to increase in spiritual light and knowledge, and withal in holiness and obedience: if your light be this light of GOD, truly spiritual light, these will accompany it. Consider the rich love of GOD, and account His light *marvellous*, as in itself, so in this respect, that He hath bestowed it on you. And seeing *you were once darkness, but now are light in the Lord*, I beseech you,—nay the Apostle, and in Him the Spirit of GOD beseeches you, *Walk as children of the light.* Eph. v. 8.

(2.) But, to proceed to speak to the other parts of this verse, as to the principle of this change, *the calling of GOD*.

It is known and confessed to be a chief point of wisdom in a man, to consider what he is, from whom he hath that his being, and to what end. When a Christian hath thought on this in his natural being as he is a man, he hath the same to consider over again of his spiritual being as he is a Christian, and so a new creature. And in this notion, all the three are very clearly represented to him in these words: 1. What he is,—first, by these titles of dignity in the first words of this verse; and again, by an estate of light in the last clause of it. 2. Whence a Christian hath this excellent being is very clearly expressed here, *He hath called you.* That GOD who is the

author of all kind of being hath given you this, *called you from darkness to His marvellous light*. If you be a *chosen generation*, it is He that hath *chosen you* (ch. i. ver. 2). If you be a *royal priesthood*, you know that it is He that hath anointed you. If a *holy nation*, He hath sanctified you (John xvii. 17). If a *peculiar* or *purchased people*, it is He that hath bought you (1 Cor. vi. 20). All are included in this *calling*, and they are all one thing. 3. To what end, to *show forth His praises*. Of the first of these, in all the several expressions of it, we have spoken before; now are to be considered the other two.

He hath called you.] Those who live in the society, and profess the faith of Christians, are *called unto Light*, the light of the Gospel that shines in the Church of GOD. Now, this is no small favour and privilege, while many people are left in *darkness and in the shadow of death*, to have this light arise upon us, and to be in the region of it, the Church, the *Goshen* of the world; for by this outward light we are invited to this happy state of saving inward light, and the former is here to be understood as the means of the latter. These Jews who were called to the profession of the Christian faith, to whom our Apostle writes, were even in that respect called unto a light hidden from the rest of their nation, and from many other nations in the world: but because the Apostle doth undoubtedly describe here the lively spiritual state of true believers, therefore this calling doth further import the effectual work of conversion, making the daylight of salvation, not only without but within them, *the day-star to arise in their hearts*, as he speaks, 2 Pet. i. 19. When the sun is arisen, yet if a man be lying fast in a dark prison, and in a deep sleep too, it is not day to him; he is not *called to light*, till some one open the doors, and awake him, and bring him forth to it. This GOD doth, in the *calling* here meant. That which is here termed *calling*, in regard of the way of GOD's working with the soul, is, in regard of the power of it, called a *rescuing* and *bringing forth* of the soul: so the Apostle St. Paul speaks of it, Col. i. 13, *Delivered from the power of Darkness, and translated to the kingdom of His dear Son*. That delivering and translating, is this *calling*; and it is *from the power of Darkness*, a forcible power that detains the soul captive. As

there are chains of eternal darkness upon damned spirits, which shall never be taken off, wherein they are *said to be reserved to the judgment of the great day*, so there are chains of spiritual darkness upon the unconverted soul, that can be taken off by no other hand but the powerful hand of GOD. He calls the sinner to *come forth*, and withal causes by the power of that His voice, the bolts and fetters to fall off, and enables the soul to *come forth* into the light. It is an operative word that effects what it bids, as that in the creation, *He said, Let there be light, and it was light*, to which the Apostle hath reference, 2 Cor. iv. 6, when he says, *GOD, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined into your hearts*. GOD calls man. He works with him indeed as with a reasonable creature, but surely He likewise works as Himself, as an Almighty Creator. He works strongly, and sweetly,* with an Almighty easiness. One man may call another to this light, and if there be no more, he may call long enough to no purpose; as they tell of Mahomet's miracle that misgave,—he called a mountain to come to him, but it stirred not.† But His call that shakes and removes the mountains, doth, in a way known to Himself, turn and wind the heart which way He pleaseth. *The voice of the Lord is powerful and full of majesty*, Psal. xxix. 4. If He speaks once to the heart, it cannot choose but follow Him, and yet, most willingly chooses that. The workings of grace, (as oil, to which it is often compared,) do insensibly and silently penetrate and sink into the soul, and dilate themselves through it. That word of His own calling disentangles the heart from all its nets, as it did the disciples from theirs, to follow Christ. That call which brought St. Matthew presently from his receipt of custom, puts off the heart from all its customs, and receipts too; makes it reject gains and pleasures, and all that hinders it, to go after Christ.‡ And it is a call that touches the soul

* Fortiter et suaviter disponit omnia. — *Sap.* viii. 1.

† There appears to be no other record of this but the Mozarabic proverb current among the Moors in Spain, *Si no va el otero a Mahoma, vaya Mahoma al otero*, and long since naturalised amongst us. Bacon thus relates this traditional story: 'Mahomet made the people believe that he would call a hill to him, and from the top of it offer up

his prayers for the observers of his law. The people assembled; Mahomet called the hill to come to him again and again; and when the hill stood still, he was never a whit abashed, but said, "*If the hill will not come to Mahomet, Mahomet will go to the hill.*"'—*Essay XII.*

‡ Cf. the Author's *Exposition of S. Matthew*, ix. 9, where he comments upon 'our Saviour's usual word of calling—*Follow Me.*' And see above, p. 17.

so as the touch of Elijah's mantle, that made Elisha follow him. *Go back*, said he, *for what have I done unto thee?* Yet he had done so much, as made him forsake all to go with him. 1 Kings xix. 20. And this every believer is most ready to acknowledge, who knows what the rebellion of his heart was, and what his miserable love of darkness was, that the gracious, yet mighty call of GOD, was what drew him out of it: and therefore he willingly assents to that (which is the *Third* thing to be considered), that it becomes him, as being the end of his calling, *to show forth His praise*, who hath so mercifully and so powerfully called him from so miserable to so happy an estate.

For, 1. This is GOD's end in calling us, to communicate His goodness to us, that so the glory of it may return to Himself. The highest agent cannot work but for the highest end; so that, as the Apostle speaks, when GOD would confirm His covenant by an oath *He sware by Himself*, because He could swear by no greater, so in all things, He must be the end of His own actions, because there is no greater nor better end, yea, none by infinite odds so great or good. Particularly in the calling and exalting of a number of lost mankind to so great honour and happiness, both in designing that great work and in performing it He aims at the opening up and declaring of His *rich grace*, for the glory of it; as the Apostle St. Paul tells us, once and again, Eph. i. 6, 12.

2. As this is GOD's end it ought to be ours, and therefore ours because it is His. And for this very purpose, both here and elsewhere are we put in mind of it, that we may be true to His end and intend it with Him. This is His purpose in calling us, and therefore it is our great duty, being so called—*to declare His praises*. All things and persons shall pay this tribute, even those who are most unwilling; but the happiness of His chosen is, that they are active in it, others are passive only. Whereas the rest have His praise wrested from them, they do declare it cheerfully, as the glorious angels do. As the Gospel brings them glad tidings of peace from GOD, and declares to them that love and mercy that is in Him, they smother it not but answer it; they declare it and set forth the glory of it, with their utmost power and skill.

There be in this two things: 1. Not only that they speak upon all occasions to the advantage of His grace, but that the

frame of their actions be such as doth tend to the exalting of GOD. And, 2. That in those actions they do intend this end, or set up this for their aim.

1. Their words and actions being conformable to that high and holy estate to which they are called, do commend and praise their Lord, who hath called them to it. The virtues which are in them tell us of *His virtues*,* as brooks lead us to their springs. When a Christian can quietly repose his trust on GOD in a matter of very great difficulty, wherein there is no other thing to stay him but GOD alone, this declares that there is strength enough in GOD that bears him up, that there must be in Him that real *abundance of goodness and truth* that the word speaks of Him, Ex. xxxiv. 6. *Abraham believed, and gave glory to GOD* (Rom. iv. 20): this is what a believer can do, to declare the truth of GOD; he relies on it. *He that believes sets to his seal that GOD is true*, John iii. 33. So, also their *holiness* is for His praise. Men hear that there is a GOD who is infinitely holy, but they can see neither Him nor His holiness; yet, when they perceive some lineaments of it in the faces of His children which are in no others, this may convince them that its perfection, which must be somewhere, can be nowhere else than in their Heavenly Father. When these which are His peculiar plants bring forth the fruits of holiness, which naturally they yielded not, it testifies a supernatural work of His hand who planted them, and the more they are fruitful the greater is His praise. *Herein*, says our Saviour, *is your heavenly Father glorified, that ye bring forth much fruit*, John xv. 8. Were it not for the conscience of this duty to GOD, and possibly the necessity of their station and calling, it may be, some Christians had rather altogether lock up and keep within themselves any grace they have than let it appear at all, considering the hazards which they and it run in the discovery; and, it may be, could take some pleasure in the world's mistakes and disesteem of them. But seeing both piety and charity require the acting of graces in converse with men, that which hypocrisy doth for itself a real Christian may, and should do for GOD.†

* The marginal reading, *His Virtues*, is the literal translation of the original τὰς ἀρετὰς τοῦ καλέσαντος, rendered *His Praises* in the text of our Bible.

† See *The Imitation of Christ*, l. iii. c. 7, 'Of concealing Grace under the guard of Humility.' S. Fr. de Sales observes: 'True humility never makes a

2. The other thing mentioned as making up this rule will give the difference; that not only what we speak and do should be such as agrees with this end, but that in so speaking and doing our eye be upon this end; that all our Christian conversation be directly intended by us not to cry up our own virtues, but to glorify GOD and His virtues,—*to declare His praises who hath called us.*

Let your light, says our Saviour (Matt. v. 16), *shine*, and *shine before men* too; that is not forbidden; yea, it is commanded, but it is thus commanded, *Let your light so shine before men, that they seeing your good works*—yourselves as little as may be, your works more than yourselves (as the sun gives us its light, and will scarce suffer us to look upon itself),—*may glorify*—Whom? You? No, but—*your Father which is in Heaven.* *Let your light shine*, it is given for that purpose, but let it shine always to the glory of the *Father of lights*. Men that seek themselves may share in the same public kind of actions with you; but let your secret intention (which GOD eyes most) sever you. This is the impress that a sincere and humble Christian sets upon all his actions, *To the glory of GOD*. He useth all he hath, especially all his graces, to His praise who gives all, and is sorry he hath no more for this use, and is daily seeking after more, not to bring more esteem to himself, but more honour to GOD. It is a poor booty to hunt after that, namely, an airy vain breath of men: the best things in them, their solidest good, is altogether vanity; how much more that which is lightest and vainest in them! This is the mind that is in every Christian, in all his ways to deny himself, and to be willing to abase himself to exalt his Master; to be of St. Paul's temper, who regarded not himself at all, honour or dishonour, prison or liberty, life or death, content he was with anything, so *Christ might be magnified*, Phil. i. 20.

And as every godly mind must be thus affected, so especially the ministers of the Gospel, they who are not only called with others to partake of this *marvellous light*, but are in a special manner to hold it forth to others. How do pure affections become them, and ardent desires to promote His glory

parade of herself, nor uses many humble expressions; for she desires to conceal not only all other virtues, but herself most of all. Humility, which conceals

virtues in order to preserve them, discovers them nevertheless when charity requires it.—*Vie dévote*, pte. 3. c. 5.

who hath so called them ! A rush for your praise or dispraise of us ; only receive Jesus Christ, and esteem highly of Him, and it is enough. *We preach not ourselves*, says the Apostle, *but Christ Jesus the Lord*, 2 Cor. iv. 5. That is our errand, not to catch either at base gain or vain applause for ourselves, but to exalt our Lord Jesus in the hearts of men. And to those who are so minded, there is a reward abiding them, of such riches and honour as they would be very loath to exchange for anything to be had amongst men.

But, in his station, this is the mind of everyone who loves the Lord Jesus, most heartily to make a sacrifice of himself, and all he is and hath,—means, and esteem, and life, and all, to His glory who humbled Himself so low to exalt us to these dignities, to *make us kings and priests unto GOD*.

It is most just, seeing we have our crowns from Him, and that He hath set them on our heads, that we take them in our hands, and *cast them down before His throne*. All our graces (if we have any) are His free gift, and are given as the rich garments of this spiritual priesthood, only to attire us suitably for this spiritual sacrifice of His praises ; as the costly vesture of the High Priest under the law was not appointed to make him gay for himself, but to decore * him for his holy service, and to commend, as a figure of it, the perfect holiness wherewith our great High Priest, Jesus Christ, was clothed. What good thing have we that is not from the hand of our good GOD ? And receiving all from Him, and after a special manner spiritual blessings, is it not reasonable that all we have, but those spiritual gifts especially, should declare His praise, and His only ? David doth not grow big with vain thoughts, and lift up himself because GOD had lifted him up, but exclaims, *I will extol Thee, because Thou hast lifted me up*, Psal. xxx. 1. The visible heavens, and all the beauty and the lights in them, speak nothing but His glory who framed them (as the Psalmist teacheth us, Psal. xix. 1) ; and shall not these spiritual lights, *His called ones*, whom He hath made lights so peculiarly for that purpose, these *stars in His right hand*, do it much more ? † Oh ! let it be thus with us ! The more He gives, be still the more humble, and let Him have the return of more glory, and let it go entire to Him ; it is all His due ; and in doing

* i.e. to adorn. † Cf. Dan. xii. 3 ; 1 Cor. xv. 41 ; Heb. xi. 12 ; Rev. i. 16, 20.

thus, we shall still grow richer; for where He sees the most faithful servant, who purloins nothing, but improves all to his Master's advantage, surely him He will trust with most.

And as it is thus both most due to GOD, and most profitable for ourselves, in all things to seek His praises, so it is the most excellent and generous intent to have the same thought with GOD, the same purpose as His, and to aim no lower than at His glory: whereas it is a base, poor thing for a man to seek himself, far below that royal dignity that is here put upon Christians, and that priesthood joined with it. Under the law they who were squint-eyed were incapable of the priesthood: truly, this squinting out to our own interest, the looking aside to that, in GOD's affairs especially, so deforms the face of the soul that it makes it altogether unworthy the honour of this spiritual priesthood. Oh! this is a large task, an infinite task. The several creatures bear their part in this; the sun says somewhat and moon and stars, yea, the lowest have some share in it; the very plants and herbs of the field speak of GOD; and yet the very highest and best, yea, all of them together, the whole concert of heaven and earth, cannot show forth all His praise to the full.* No, it is but a part, the smallest part of that glory, which they can reach.

We all pretend to these dignities, in that we profess ourselves Christians; but if we have a mind to be resolved of the truth in this, (for many, many are deceived in it!) we may, by asking ourselves seriously, and answering truly to these questions:—1. Whether are my actions and the course of my life such as give evidence of the grace of GOD, and so speak His praise? If not, surely I am not of this number that GOD hath thus called and dignified. And this test, I fear, would degrade many. 2. If my life be somewhat regular and Christian-like, yet, whether do I in it all, singly and constantly, without any selfish or sinister end, desire and seek the glory of GOD alone? Otherwise, I may be like this *chosen generation*, but I am not one of them. And this, out of doubt, would make the number yet far less. Well, think on it; it is a miserable condition,

* 'And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, heard I saying, Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto Him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the

Lamb for ever and ever.'—Rev. v. 13. See S. F. de Sales' *De l'Amour de Dieu*, l. 5. c. 9, entitled: 'Comme la bienveillance nous fait appeler toutes les créatures à la louange de Dieu.'

for men either to be grossly staining and dishonouring the holy religion they profess, or in seeming to serve and honour GOD to be serving and seeking themselves; it is the way to lose themselves for ever. Oh! it is a comfortable thing to have an upright mind, and to love GOD for Himself: and *love seeks not its own things*, 1 Cor. xiii. 5. They are truly happy, who make this their work sincerely, though weakly, to advance the praises of their GOD in all things, and who, finding the great imperfection of their best diligence in this work here, are still longing to be where they shall do it better.

Ver. 10. Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God; which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

THE LOVE OF GOD to His children is the great subject both of His word and of their thoughts, and therefore is it that His word (the rule of their thoughts and their whole lives) speaks so much of that Love, to that very end that they may think much, and esteem highly of it, and walk answerably to it. This is the scope of St. Paul's doctrine to the Ephesians, and the top of his desires for them. (See ch. iii. ver. 17.) And this is our Apostle's aim here. As he began this Epistle to the believing Jews with opposing their election in heaven to their dispersion on earth, the same consideration runs through the whole of it. Here he is representing to them the great fruit of that love, the happy and high estate to which they are called in Christ; that the choosing of Christ and of believers, is as one act, and they as one entire object of it,—one glorious Temple, He the foundation and head corner-stone, and they the edifice;—one honourable fraternity, He the King of kings and great High Priest, and they likewise through Him made kings and priests unto God the Father, *a royal priesthood*; He the *Light of the world*, and they through Him the *children of light*. Now that this their dignity, which shines so bright in its own innate worth, may yet appear the more, the Apostle here sets it off by a double opposition, *first*, of the misery under which others are, and *secondly*, of that misery under which they themselves were before their calling. And this being set on both sides, is as a dark shadowing round about their happiness here described, setting off the lustre of it.

Their former misery, expressed in the former verse by

darkness, is here more fully and plainly set before their view in these words. They are borrowed from the prophet Hosea, ch. ii. ver. 23, where (as is usual with the Prophets) he is raised up by the Spirit of GOD from the temporal troubles and deliverances of the Israelites, to consider and foretell that great restoration wrought by Jesus Christ, in purchasing a new people to Himself, made up of both Jews and Gentiles who believe; and therefore the prophecy is fit and applicable to both. So that the debate is altogether needless, whether it concerns the Jews or Gentiles; for in its spiritual sense, as relating to the kingdom of Christ, it foretells the reconciling* of the Gentiles, who were not before *the people of GOD*, and of the Jews likewise, who by their apostacies, and the captivities and dispersions which came upon them as just punishments of those apostacies, were degraded from the outward dignities they had as the people of GOD, and withal were spiritually miserable and captives by nature, and so in both respects lay on the same level with† the Gentiles, and stood as much in need of this restitution as they. St. Paul useth this prophecy as concerning the calling of the Gentiles, Rom. ix. 25. And here, St. Peter writing, as is most probable, particularly to the dispersed Jews, applies it to them, as being, in the very reference it bears to the Jews, truly fulfilled in those alone who were believers; faith making them a part of the true Israel of GOD, to which the promises do peculiarly belong; as the Apostle St. Paul argues at large, in the ninth chapter of his Epistle to the Romans.

Their former misery, and their present happiness, we have here under a double expression; they were: 1. *Not a people*; 2. *Destitute of mercy*. *Not the people of GOD*, says the Prophet; *not a people*, says our Apostle: being not GOD'S people, they were so base and miserable as not to be worthy of the name of a people at all; as it is taken, Deut. xxxii. 21.

There is a divine kind of being, a life that the soul hath by a peculiar union with GOD, and therefore, in that sense, the soul without GOD is dead, as the body is without the soul, Eph. ii. 1. Yea, as the body, separated from the soul, is not

* The making up of the Gentiles.—1st ed. Thus the heading of the chapter in our English Bible is: 'God's promises of reconciliation with the people.'

† Laid equal with—1st ed.

only a lifeless lump, but putrefies and becomes noisome and abominable, thus the soul, separated from GOD, is subject to a more loathsome and vile putrefaction.* See Psal. xiv. 3. So that men who are yet unbelievers, *are not*, as the Hebrews expressed death. Multitudes of them *are not a people*, but a heap of filthy carcasses. Again, take our natural misery in the notion of a captivity, which was the judgment threatened against the Jews, to make them in this sense *not a people*; and so their captivity is often spoken of by the Prophets as a death, and their restoration † as their resurrection, Ezek. xxxvii. And as a captive people is civilly dead (as they speak), so a soul captive to sin and the Prince of darkness is spiritually dead, wanting happiness and well-being, which if it never attain, it had better, for itself, not be at all. There is nothing but disorder and confusion in the soul without GOD, the affections hurrying it away tumultuously.

Thus, captive sinners *are not*; *they are dead*; they want that happy being that flows from GOD to the souls which are united to Himself, and, consequently, they must want that society and union one with another which results from the former, even from the same union that believers have with GOD, and the same being that they have in Him; which makes them truly worthy to be called a people, and particularly the people of GOD. His people are the only people in the world worthy to be called *a people*; the rest are but refuse and dross. Although in the world's esteem, which judges by its own rules in favour of itself, the people of GOD be as no body, no people, a company of silly creatures: yea, *we are made*, says the great Apostle, *as the filth of the world, and the off-scouring of all things* (1 Cor. iv. 13); yet in His account who hath chosen them, who alone knows the true value of things, His people are *the only people*, and all the rest of the world as *nothing* in His eyes. He dignifies and beautifies them, and loves in them that beauty which He hath given them.

But under that term is comprised, not only that new being of believers in each one of them apart, but that tie and union

* *Duæ sunt mortes, et totidem resurrectiones. Prima mors animæ, secunda corporis. Mors animæ separatio a Deo: mors corporis separatio animæ a corpore, &c.*—S. Bern. *De Div. Serm.*

116. 'As the whole life of the body is the soul, so the happy life of the soul is God.'—S. Aug. *De Lib. Arbit.* ii. 41.

† Reduction—1st ed.

that is amongst them as *one people*, being incorporated together, and living under the same government and laws, without which a people are but as the beasts of the field, or *the fishes of the sea, and the creeping things, that have no ruler over them*, as the Prophet speaks, Habak. i. 14. That regular living in society, and union in laws and polity, makes many men to be one people; but the civil union of men in states and kingdoms is nothing comparable to the mysterious union of the people of GOD with Him, and one with another. That commonwealth hath a firmer union than all others. Believers are knit together in Christ as their Head, not merely as a civil or political head ruling them, but as a natural head enlivening them, giving them all one life. Men in other societies, though well ordered, yet are but as a multitude of trees, regularly planted indeed, but each hath his own root; but the faithful are all branches of one root. Their union is so mysterious, that it is compared to the very union of Christ with His Father, as it is indeed the product of it, John xvii. 21.

People of GOD.] *I will say to them, Thou art my people, and they shall say, Thou art my GOD*, Hos. ii. 23. That mutual interest and possession is the very foundation of all our comfort. He is the first chooser; He first says, *My people*; calls them so, and makes them to be so; and then they say, *My GOD*. It is therefore a relation that shall hold, and shall not break, because it is founded upon His choice who changes not. The tenor of an external covenant with a people (as the Jews particularly found), is such as may be broken by man's unfaithfulness, though GOD remain faithful and true; but the New Covenant of Grace makes all sure on all hands, and cannot be broken; the Lord not only keeping His own part, but likewise performing ours in us and for us, and establishing us, that as He departs not from us first, so we shall not depart from Him. *I will betroth thee to me for ever*, saith He, ver. 19. It is an indissoluble marriage, that is not in danger of being broken either by divorce or death.

My people.] There is a treasure of instruction and comfort wrapped up in that word, not only more than the profane world can imagine (for they indeed know nothing at all of it), but more than they who are of the number of His people are able to conceive,—a deep unfathomable. *My people*; they His

portion, and He theirs! He accounts nothing of all the world beside them, and they nothing of all beside Him. For them He continues the world. Many and great are the privileges of His people, contained in that great charter, the Holy Scriptures, and rich is that land where their inheritance lies; but all is in this reciprocal, that *He is their GOD*. All His power and wisdom are engaged for their good. How great and many soever are their enemies, they may well oppose this to all, *He is their GOD*. They are sure to be protected and prospered, and in the end to have full victory. *Happy, then, is that people whose GOD is the LORD.*

Which had not obtained mercy.] *The mercies of the Lord* to His chosen are *from everlasting*; yet, so long as His decree of mercy runs hid, and is not discovered to them in the effects of it, they are said *not to have received, or obtained, mercy*. When it begins to act and work in their effectual calling, then they find it to be theirs. It was in a secret way moving forward towards them before, as the sun after midnight is still coming nearer to us, though we perceive not its approach till the dawning of the day.

But now have obtained mercy.] The former word, *the people of GOD*, teaches us how *great* the change is that is wrought by the calling of GOD: this teaches us: 1. how *free* it is. *The people of GOD*, that is the good attained in the change: *obtained mercy*, that is the spring whence it flows. This is indeed implied in the words of the change: of *no people*—such as have no right to such a dignity at all, and in themselves no disposition for it—to be made *His people*, can be owing to nothing but free grace, such mercy as supposes nothing, and seeks nothing, but misery in us, and works upon that. As it is expressed to have been very free to this people of the Jews, in choosing them before the rest of the world, Deut. vii. 7, 8, so it is to the spiritual Israel of GOD, and to every one particularly belonging to that company. Why is it that He chooseth one of a family, and leaves another, but because it pleaseth Him? *He blots out their transgressions for His own Name's sake*. 2. And as it is free mercy, so it is *tender mercy*. The word in the Prophet (Jer. xxxi. 20) signifies *tenderness*, or bowels of compassion; and such are the mercies of our GOD towards us, the bowels of a father. *Like as a father pitieth*

his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him, Psal. ciii. 13; and if you think not that tenderness enough, those of a mother, yea, more than a mother, Isa. xlix. 15. 3. It is *rich mercy*; it delights to glorify itself in the greatest misery; it pardons as easily the greatest as the smallest of debts. 4. It is a *constant unalterable mercy*, a stream still running.

Now in both these expressions the Apostle draws the eyes of believers to reflect on their former misery, and to view it together with their present state. This is very frequent in the Scriptures. See Ezek. xvi.; Eph. ii. 1; 1 Cor. vi. 11, &c. And it is of very great use; it works the soul of a Christian to much humility, and love, and thankfulness, and obedience. It cannot choose but force him to abase himself, and to magnify the free grace and love of GOD. And this may be one reason why it pleaseth the Lord to suspend the conversion of some persons for many years of their life, yea, to suffer them to stain those years with grievous and gross sins, in order that the riches and glory of His grace, and the freeness of His choice, may be the more legible both to themselves and others. Likewise, those apprehensions of the wrath due to sin, and the sights of hell, as it were, which He brings some unto, either at or after their conversion, make for this same end.* That glorious description of the *New Jerusalem*, Rev. xxi. 16, is abundantly delightful in itself; and yet, the fiery lake spoken of there makes all that is spoken of the other sound much the sweeter.

But universally, all the godly have this to consider, that they *were strangers and enemies to GOD*, and to think, Whence was it that I, a lump of the same polluted clay with those that perish, should be taken, and purified, and moulded by the Lord's own hand for a vessel of glory? Nothing but free mercy makes the difference; and where can there be love, and praises, and service found to answer this? All is to be ascribed to the mercy, gifts, and calling of Christ. And His ministers, with St. Paul, acknowledge that *because they have received mercy, they faint not*. 2 Cor. iv. 1.

But alas! we neither enjoy the comfort of this mercy as obtained, nor are grieved for wanting it, nor stirred up to seek

* Leighton himself had experience of this, as may be seen in his *Life*. See also the cases of S. Francis of Assisi S. Francis de Sales, Frère Laurent, Cowper, &c. there quoted.

after it, if not yet obtained. What do we think? Seems it a small thing in your eyes to be shut out from the presence of GOD, and to bear the weight of His wrath for ever, that you thus slight His mercy, and let it pass by you unregarded? Or shall an imagined obtaining divert you from the real pursuit of it? Will you be willingly deceived, and be your own deceivers in a matter of so great importance? You cannot think too highly of the riches of Divine mercy; it is above all your thoughts; but remember and consider this, that there is a *peculiar people* of His own, to whom alone all the riches of it do belong. And therefore, how great soever it is, unless you find yourselves of that number, you cannot lay claim to the smallest share of it.

And you are not ignorant what is their character, what a kind of people they are, who have such a knowledge of GOD as Himself gives. *They are all taught of GOD*, enlightened and sanctified by His Spirit, a holy people, as He is a holy GOD: such as have the riches of that Grace by which they are saved in most precious esteem, and have their hearts by it inflamed with His love, and therefore their thoughts taken up with nothing so much as studying how they may obey and honour Him; rather choosing to displease all the world than offend Him, and accounting nothing too dear, yea, nothing good enough to do Him service. If it be thus with you, then you have indeed *obtained mercy*.

But if you be such as can wallow in the same puddle with the profane world, and take a share of their ungodly ways, or if, though your outward carriage be somewhat more smooth, you *regard iniquity in your hearts*, have your hearts ardent in the love and pursuit of the world, but frozen to GOD; if you have some bosom idol that you hide and entertain, and cannot find in your heart to part with some one beloved sin, whatsoever it is, for all the love that GOD hath manifested to man in the *Son of His love, Jesus Christ*; in a word, if you can please and delight yourself in any way displeasing unto GOD, (though His people, while they are here, have spots, yet these are not the spots of His people that I am now speaking of,) I can give you no assurance that as yet you have obtained mercy; on the contrary, it is certain that *the wrath of GOD is yet abiding on you*, and if you continue in this state, you are in apparent

danger of perishing under it. You are yet children of spiritual darkness, and in the way to utter and everlasting darkness. Know ye what it is to be destitute of this mercy? It is a woeful state, though you had all worldly enjoyments, and were at the top of outward prosperity, to be shut out from the mercy and love of GOD.

There is nothing doth so kindly work repentance as the right apprehension of the mercy and love of GOD. The beams of that love are more powerful to melt the heart than all the flames of Mount Sinai, all the threatenings and terrors of the law. Sin is the root of our misery; and therefore it is the proper work of this mercy to rescue the soul from it, both from the guilt and the power of it at once. Can you think there is any suitableness in it, that the peculiar people of GOD should despise His laws, and practise nothing but rebellions? that those in whom He hath magnified His mercy should take pleasure in abusing it? or that He hath washed any with the blood of His Son, to the end that they may still *wallow again in the mire*? As if we were redeemed not *from sin*, but *to sin*; as if we should say, *We are delivered to do all these abominations*, as the Prophet speaks, Jer. vii. 10. Oh! let us not dare thus to abuse and indignify the free grace of GOD, if we mean to be saved by it; but let as many as would be found amongst those that obtain mercy, walk as His people, whose peculiar inheritance is His mercy. And seeing this *grace of GOD hath appeared unto us*, let us embrace it, and let it effectually *teach us to deny ungodliness and worldly lusts*, Tit. ii. 11, 12.

And if you be persuaded to be earnest suitors for this mercy, and to fly unto Jesus, who is the *true mercy-seat*, then be assured it is yours. Let not the greatest guiltiness scare you and drive you from it, but rather drive you the more to it; for the greater the weight of that misery is under which you lie, the more need you have of this mercy, and the more will be the glory of it in you. It is a strange kind of argument used by the Psalmist, and yet a sure one,—it concludes well and strongly, Psal. xxv. 7, *Lord, pardon my iniquity, for it is great*. The soul oppressed with the greatness of its sin lying heavy upon it, may, by that very greatness of it pressing upon it, urge the forgiveness of it at the hands of Free Mercy. It

is for *Thy Name's sake*,—that makes it strong; the force of the inference lies in that. Thou art nothing, and worse than nothing? True; but all that ever obtained this mercy were once so: they were *nothing* of all that which it hath made them to be; they were *not a people*, had no interest in GOD, were strangers to mercy, yea, *heirs of wrath*; yea, they had not so much a desire after GOD, until this mercy prevented them, and showed itself to them, and them to themselves, and so moved them to desire it, and caused them to find it, caught hold on them and plucked them out of the dungeon. And it is unquestionably still the same mercy, and fails not; ever expending, and yet never all spent, yea, not so much as at all diminished; flowing, as the rivers, from one age to another, serving each age in the present, and yet no whit the less to those that come after. He who exercises it is *The LORD, forgiving iniquity, transgression, and sin* to all that come unto Him, and yet, still *keeping mercy for thousands* that come after.

You who have obtained this mercy, and have the seal of it within you, it will certainly conform your hearts to its own nature; it will work you to a merciful compassionate temper of mind to the souls of others who have not yet obtained it. You will indeed, as the Lord doth, hate sin; but as He doth likewise, you will pity the sinner.* You will be so far from misconstruing and grumbling at the long-suffering of GOD (as if you would have the bridge cut because you are over, as St. Augustine speaks), that on the contrary, your great desire will be to draw others to partake of the same mercy with you, knowing it to be rich enough; and you will, in your station, use your best diligence to bring in many to it, from love both to the souls of men and to the glory of GOD.

And withal, you will be still admiring and extolling this mercy as it is manifested unto yourselves, considering what it is and what you were before it visited you. The Israelites confessed (at the offering of the first fruits), to set off the bounty of GOD, *A Syrian ready to perish was my father*; and they

* 'He who makes GOD and not man the guide of his life, ought to love good, and consequently to hate evil. He who liveth after the love of GOD ought to hate the wicked with a perfect hatred, yet, not to hate the man for his vice, but hate the vice and love the man;

for the vice being cured, he shall find no object for his hate, but all for his love. He that is resolved to love GOD and his neighbour according to GOD and not man, is called a *man of good-will*.'—S. Aug. *De Civ. Dei*, xiv. 6. Cf. Seneca *de Irâ*, i. 14.

confessed their captivity in Egypt; but far poorer and baser is our natural condition, and far more precious is that land to the possession of which this free mercy bringeth us.

Do but call back your thoughts, you that have indeed escaped it, and look but into that pit of misery whence the hand of the Lord hath drawn you out, and you cannot fail to love Him highly, and still kiss that gracious hand, even while it is scourging you with any affliction whatsoever; because it hath once done this for you, namely, plucked you out of everlasting destruction. And the thoughts of this change will teach us to praise Him; so David, Psal. xl. 2, 3, *He hath brought me up out of an horrible pit*: then follows, *He hath put a new song in my mouth, even praise unto our GOD*; not only redeemed me from destruction, but withal crowned me with glory and honour. Psal. ciii. 4. He not only doth forgive all our debts, and let us out of prison, but enriches us with an estate that cannot be spent, and dignifies us with a crown that cannot wither, made up of nothing of ours. These two considerations will stretch and tune the heart very high, namely, to think from what a low estate Grace brings a man, and how high it doth exalt him; in what a beggarly, vile condition the Lord finds us, and yet, that He doth not only free us thence but puts such dignities on us. *He raises up the poor out of the dust, and lifts the needy out of the dunghill, that he may set him with princes, even with the princes of his people*, Psal. cxiii. 7. Or, as Joshua the high-priest was stripped of his filthy garments, and had a fair mitre set upon his head (Zech. iii. 3-5), so those of this priesthood are dealt withal.

Now, that we may be the deeper in the sense and admiration of this mercy, it is indeed our duty to seek earnestly after the evidence and strong assurance of it; for things work on us according to our notice and apprehensions of them, and therefore, the more right assurance we have of mercy, the more love, and thankfulness, and obedience, will spring from it. Therefore it is, that the Apostle here represents this great and happy change of estate to Christians as a thing that they may know concerning themselves, and that they ought to seek the knowledge of, that so they may duly affected with it. And it is indeed a happy thing, to have in the soul an extract of that great archive and act of grace towards it that hath stood in

Heaven from eternity. It is surely both a very comfortable and very profitable thing, to find and to read clearly the seal of mercy upon the soul, which is holiness, that by which a man is marked by GOD, as a part of His peculiar possession that He hath chosen out of the world. And when we perceive anything of this, let us look back, as here the Apostle would have us to do, and reflect how GOD has *called us from darkness to His marvellous light.*

Ver. 11. Dearly beloved, I beseech you, as Strangers and Pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul.

THE right spiritual knowledge that a Christian hath of GOD and of himself differenceth itself from whatsoever is likest to it, by the power and influence it hath upon the heart and life. And in this, it hath the lively impression of that doctrine of the Holy Scriptures that teaches it; wherein we still find throughout, that the high mysteries of religion are accompanied with practical truths, which not only agree with them, but are drawn out of them, and not violently drawn, but naturally flowing from them, as pure streams from a pure spring. Thus, in this Epistle, we find the Apostle intermixing his Divine doctrine with most useful and practical exhortations, ch. i. ver. 13, 22 : and in the beginning of this chapter again ; and now in these words.

And upon this model ought both the ministers of the Gospel to form their preaching, and the hearers their ear. Ministers are not to instruct only, or to exhort only, but to do both. To exhort men to holiness and the duties of a Christian life, without instructing them in the doctrine of faith and bringing them to Jesus Christ, is to build a house without a foundation. And on the other side, to instruct the mind in the knowledge of Divine things, and neglect the pressing of that practice and power of godliness, which is the undivided companion of true faith, is to forget the building that ought to be raised upon that foundation once laid, which is likewise a point of very great folly. Or, if men, after laying that right foundation, do proceed to the superstructure of vain and empty speculations, it is but to *build hay and stubble* instead of those solid truths that direct the soul in the way to happiness, which are of more solidity and worth than *gold, and silver, and precious*

stones, 1 Cor. iii. 12. Christ, and the doctrine that reveals Him, is called by St. Paul, *the mystery of the faith*, 1 Tim. iii. 9, and, ver. 16, *the mystery of godliness*: as Christ is the object of faith, so is He the spring and fountain of godliness. The Apostle having, we see, in his foregoing discourse unfolded the excellency of Christ and of Christians in Him, proceeds here to exhort them to that pure and spiritual temper of mind and course of life that becomes them as Christians.

Those hearers are to blame and do prejudice themselves, who are attentive only to such words and discourse as stir the affections for the present, and find no relish in the doctrine of faith, and the unfolding of those mysteries that bear the whole weight of religion, and are the ground both of all Christian obedience and all exhortations and persuasives to it. Those temporary, sudden stirrings of the affections, without a rightly-informed mind, and some measure of due knowledge of GOD in Christ, do no good. It is the wind of a word of exhortation that stirs them for the time against their lusts, but the first wind of temptation that comes carries them away; and thus the mind is but tossed to and fro, like a wave of the sea, with all kind of winds, not being *rooted and grounded in the faith of Christ* (as it is Col. ii. 7), and so not *rooted in the love of Christ* (Eph. iii. 17), which are the conquering graces that subdue unto a Christian his lusts and the world. See 1 John v. 4; 2 Cor. v. 14, 15. Love makes a man dead to himself and to the world, and to *live to Christ who died for him*.

On the other part, they are no less, yea, more to blame, who are glad to have their minds instructed in the mysteries of the Christian faith, and out of a mere natural desire to know, are curious to hear such things as inform them: but when it comes to the urging of holiness and mortifying their lusts, *these are hard sayings*,—they had rather there were some way to receive Christ and retain their lusts too, and to bring them to agreement. To hear of the mercies of GOD, and the dignities of His people in Christ, is very pleasing; but to have this follow upon it, *Abstain from fleshly lusts*, this is an importune, troublesome discourse. But it must be so, for all that: those who will share in that mercy and happiness must *abstain from fleshly lusts*.

Dearly beloved, I beseech you.] There is a faculty of

reproving required in the ministry, and sometimes a necessity of very sharp rebukes, cutting ones. They who have much of the *spirit of meekness* may have a *rod* by them too, to use upon necessity. 1 Cor. iv. 21. But surely the way of meekness is that they use most willingly, as the Apostle there implies; and out of all question, with ingenuous minds, the mild way of sweet entreaties is very forcible; as oil that penetrates and sinks in insensibly, or (to use that known resemblance), they prevail as the sun-beams which, without any noise, made the traveller cast his cloak, which all the blustering of the wind could not do, but made him rather gather it closer, and bind it faster about him.* We see the Apostles are frequent in this strain of entreaties, *I beseech you*, as in Rom. xii. 1. Now this word of entreaty is strengthened much by the other, *Dearlly beloved*. Scarcely can the harshest reproofs, much less gentle reproofs, be thrown back that have upon them the stamp of love. That which is known to come from love cannot readily but be so received too. And it is thus expressed for that very purpose, that the request may be the more welcome: *Beloved*. It is the advice of a friend, one that truly loves you and aims at nothing in it but your good. It is because I love you that I entreat you, and entreat you, as you love yourselves, *to abstain from fleshly lusts that war against your souls*. And what is our purpose when we exhort you to believe and repent, but that you may be happy in the forgiveness of your sins? Why do we desire you to embrace Christ, but that through Him ye may have everlasting life? Howsoever you take these things, it is our duty incessantly to put you in mind of them; and to do it with much love and tenderness of affection to your souls; not only pressing you by frequent warnings and exhortings, but also by frequent prayers and tears for your salvation.

Abstain.] It was a very wise abridgment that Epictetus made of Philosophy, into those two words, *Bear and forbear*.†

* Thus Dryden gives the moral of Æsop's striking *Fable*:—

‘To threats the stubborn sinner oft is hard,
Wrapt in his crimes, against the storm prepared;
But when the milder beams of mercy play,
He melts, and throws his cumbrous cloak away.’

† *Ἀνέχου καὶ ἀπέχου* was the sum of the Stoic philosophy: to bear with the troubles and to abstain from the pleasures of life; or, as M. Antoninus uses

These are truly the two main duties that our Apostle recommends to his Christian brethren in this Epistle. It is one and the same strength of spirit that raises a man above both the troubles and pleasures of the world, and makes him despise and trample upon both.

We have, first, briefly to explain what these *fleshly lusts* mean; then, to consider the exhortation of *abstaining from* them.

Unchaste desires are particularly called by this name indeed, but to take it for these only in this place, is doubtless too narrow. That which seems to be the true sense of it here, takes in all undue desires and use of earthly things, and all the corrupt affections of our carnal minds.

Now in that sense, these *fleshly lusts* comprehend a great part of the body of sin. All those three, which St. John speaks of, 1 Ep. ii. 16, the world's accursed trinity, are included under this name here of *fleshly lusts*. A crew of base, imperious masters they are, to which the natural man is a slave; *servicing divers lusts*, Tit. iii. 3. Some are more addicted to the service of one kind of lust, some to that of another; but all are in this unhappy, that they are strangers, yea, enemies to GOD, and, as the brute creatures, servants to their flesh;—either covetous, with their eye still upon the earth, like the beasts of the field, or voluptuous, swimming in pleasures, as the fishes in the sea, or like the fowls of the air, soaring in vain ambition. All the *strifes* that are raised about these things, all *malice* and *envyings*, all *bitterness* and *evil-speaking* (Eph. iv. 31), which are *works of the flesh*, and tend to the satisfying of its wicked desires, we are here entreated to abstain from.

To abstain from these lusts is, to hate and fly from the very thoughts and first motions of them; and if surprised by these, yet to kill them there, that they bring not forth; and to suspect ourselves even in those things that are not sinful, and to keep afar off from all inducements to those polluted ways of sin.

In a word, we are to abstain not only from the serving of our flesh in things forbidden, as unjust gain or unlawful plea-

it (*lib. v. 3*), to bear with the failings of men, and to forbear injuring them. A. Gellius tells us that Epictetus had this maxim continually in his mouth.

sure, but also from immoderate desire of, and delighting in, any earthly thing, although it may be in itself lawfully, yea, necessarily in some degree, desired and used. Yea, to have any feverish, pressing thirst after gain, even just gain, or after earthly delights, though lawful, is to be guilty of those fleshly lusts, and a thing very unbeseeming the dignity of a Christian. To see them that are *clothed in scarlet embracing a dunghill* (Lam. iv. 4) is a strange sight. Therefore the Apostle having so cleared that immediately before, hath the better reason to require this of them, that they *abstain from fleshly lusts*.

Let their own slaves serve them; you are redeemed and delivered from them, a free people, yea, kings; and suits it with royal dignity to obey vile lusts? You are priests consecrated to GOD, and will you tumble yourselves and your precious garments in the mire? It was a high speech of a heathen, *That he was greater, and born to greater things, than to be a servant to his body.** How much more ought he that is *born again* say so, being born heir to *a crown that fadeth not away!*

Again, as the honour of a Christian's estate is far above this baseness of serving his lusts, so the happiness and pleasantness of his estate set him above the need of the pleasures of sin. The Apostle said before, *If ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious, desire the sincere milk of the word;* desire that word wherein ye may taste more of His graciousness. And as that exhortation fitly urgeth the appetite's desire of the word, so it strongly persuades to this abstinence from fleshly lusts; yea, to the disdain and loathing of them. If you have the least experience of the sweetness of His love, if you have but tasted of the crystal river of His pleasures, the muddy, puddle-pleasures of sin will be hateful and loathsome to you; yea, the very best earthly delights will be disrelished, and will seem unsavoury to your taste. The embittering of the breasts of the world to the godly by afflictions, doth something indeed towards weaning them from them; but the *breasts of consolation* that are given them in their stead, wean much more effectually.†

The true reason why we remain servants to these lusts, some

* Major sum et ad majora genitus, quam ut mancipium sim mei corporis.—Sen. Ep. 65.

† 'Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, all ye

that love her: rejoice for joy with her, all ye that mourn for her: that ye may suck and be satisfied with the breasts of her consolations.'—Isa. lxxvi. 10, 11.

to one, some to another, is, because we are still strangers to the love of GOD, and those pure pleasures that are in Him. Though the pleasures of this earth be poor and low, and most unworthy our pursuit, yet so long as men know no better they will stick by those they have, such as they are. The philosopher gives this as the reason why men are so much set upon sensual delights, because they know not the higher pleasures that are proper to the soul;* and they must have it some way. It is too often in vain to speak to men in this strain, to follow them with the Apostle's entreaty, *I beseech you, abstain from fleshly lusts*, unless they who are spoken to be such as he speaks of in the former words, such as *have obtained mercy*, and *have tasted of the graciousness and love of Christ, whose loves are better than wine*, Cant. i. 2. Oh, that we would seek the knowledge of this love! for, *seeking it, we should find it*; and finding it, there would need no force to pull the delights of sin out of our hands; we should throw them away of our own accord.

Thus a carnal mind prejudices itself against religion, when it hears that it requires an abstinence from fleshly lusts, and bereaves men of their mirth and delight in sin; but they know not that it is to make way for more refined and precious delights. There is nothing of this kind taken from us but by a very advantageous exchange it is made up. *In the world ye shall have affliction, but in me ye shall have peace*, said our Saviour. Is not want of the world's peace abundantly paid with peace in Him? Thus, fleshly lusts are cast out of the hearts of believers as rubbish and trash, to make room for spiritual comforts. We are barred *fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness*, to the end that *we may have fellowship with GOD and his Son Jesus Christ*, 1 John i. 3, 7. This is to make men *eat angels' food* indeed, as was said of the manna. The serving of the flesh sets man below himself, down amongst the beasts, but the consolations of the Spirit, and communion with GOD, raise him above himself, and associate him with the angels.† But let us speak to the Apostle's own dissuasives from these lusts, taken: 1. From the condition of Christians; 2. From the condition of those lusts.

1. From the condition of Christians: *As strangers and*

* Aristotle, *Eth. Nic.* 10. 6. 4.

† S. Aug. Homil. in Evang. S. Joan. xviii. 7.

pilgrims. These dispersed Jews were strangers scattered in divers countries, ch. i. ver. 1, but that is not intended here; they are called *strangers* in that spiritual sense which applies in common to all the saints. Possibly, in calling them thus, he alludes to their outward dispersion, but he means, by the allusion, to express their spiritual alienation from the world, and interest in the New Jerusalem.

And this he uses as a very pertinent enforcement of his exhortation. Whatsoever others do, the serving of the flesh, and love of the world, are most incongruous and unseemly in you. Consider what you are. If you were citizens of this world, then you might drive the same trade with them, and follow the same lusts; but seeing you are chosen and called out of this world, and invested into a new society, made free of another city, and are therefore here but travellers passing through to your own country, it is very reasonable that there be this difference betwixt you and the world, that while they live as at home, your carriage be such as becomes strangers; not glutting yourselves with their pleasures, not surfeiting upon their delicious fruits, as some unwary travellers do abroad, but as wise strangers, living warily and soberly, and still minding most of all your journey homewards, suspecting dangers and snares in your way, and so *walking with holy fear*, as the Hebrew word for a *stranger* imports.

There is, indeed, a miserable party even within a Christian: the remainder of corruption, that is no *stranger* here, and therefore keeps friendship and correspondence with the world, and will readily betray him if he watch not the more. So that he is not only to fly *the pollutions of the world* that are round about him, and to choose his steps that he be not ensnared from without; but he is to be upon a continual guard against the lusts and corruption that are yet within himself, to curb and control them, and give them resolute and flat refusals when they solicit him, and to stop up their essays and opportunities of intercourse with the world, and such things as nourish them, and so to do what he can to starve them out of the holds they keep within him, and to strengthen that new nature which is in him; to live and act according to it, though, in doing so, he shall be sure to live as a stranger here, and a despised, mocked, and hated stranger.

And it is not, on the whole, the worse that it should be so. If men in foreign countries be subject to forget their own at any time, it is surely then when they are most kindly used abroad, and are most at their ease: and thus a Christian may be in some danger when he is best accommodated, and hath most of the smiles and caresses of the world; so that, though he can never wholly forget his Home that is above, yet his thoughts of it will be less frequent and his desires of it less earnest, and it may be, he may insensibly slide into the customs and habitudes of this world, as men will do that are well seated in some other country. But by the troubles and unfriendliness of the world he gains this, that when they abound most upon him, he then feels himself a stranger, and remembers to behave as such, and thinks often with much delight and strong desires on his own country, and the rich and sure Inheritance that lies there, and the ease and rest he shall have when he comes thither.

And this will persuade him strongly to fly all polluted ways and lusts, as fast as the world follows them. It will make him abhor *the pleasures of sin*, and use the allowable enjoyments of this earth warily and moderately, never engaging his heart to them as worldlings do, but always keeping that free,—free from that earnest desire in the pursuit of worldly things, and that deep delight in the obtaining of them, which the men of the earth bestow upon them. There is a diligence in his calling, and a prudent regard of his affairs, not only permitted to a Christian, but required of him. But yet, in comparison of his great and *high calling* (as the Apostle terms it), he follows all his other business with a kind of coldness and indifferency, as not accounting very much which way they go; his heart is elsewhere.* The traveller provides himself as he can with entertainment and lodging where he comes; if it be commodious, it is well, but if not, it is no great matter. If he find but necessaries, he can abate delicacies very well; for where he finds them in his way he neither can, nor, if he could, would choose to stay there. Though his INN were dressed with the richest hangings and furniture; yet it is not his HOME; he must and would leave it.† This is the character of ungodly men, *they*

* See S. Bernard's striking sermon *gesima, Serm. 7.*
on the Christian Pilgrim.—*In Quadra-*

† *Quemadmodum qui domi non*

mind earthly things, Phil. iii. 19; they are drowned in them over head and ears, as we say.

If Christians would consider how little, and for how little a while, they are concerned in anything here, they would go through any state and any changes of state, either to the better or the worse, with very composed equal minds, always moderate in their necessary cares, and never taking any care at all for the flesh *to fulfil the lusts of it*, Rom. xiii. 14.

Let them that have no better home than this world to lay claim to, live here at home, and serve their lusts; they that have all *their portion in this life*, no more good to look for than what they can catch here, let them take their time of the poor profits and pleasures that are here; but you that have your whole estate, all your riches and pleasures laid up in Heaven, and *reserved there for you*, let your hearts be there, and your *conversation* there. This is not the place of your rest, nor of your delights, unless you would be willing to change, and to have *your good things here*, as some foolish travellers, who spend the estate they should live on at home, in a little while braving it abroad amongst strangers. Will you, with *profane Esau, sell your birthright for a mess of pottage*,—sell eternity for a moment, and such pleasures as a moment of them is more worth than an eternity of the other?

2. The Apostle argues from the condition of those lusts. It were quarrel enough against *fleshly lusts*, that they are so far below the soul that they cannot content, no, nor at all reach the soul; they are not a suitable, much less a satisfying good to it. Although sin hath unspeakably abused the soul of man, yet its excellent nature and original does still cause a vast disproportion betwixt it and all those gross base things of the earth which concern the flesh, and go no further. But this is not all: these fleshly lusts are not only of no benefit to the soul, but they are its pernicious enemies; *they war against it*. And their war against it is all made up of stratagem and sleight, for they cannot hurt the soul, but by itself. They promise it some contentment, and so gain its consent to serve them, and undo itself. They

agunt, sed peregrinantur, si quid in lectat; si quid incommodi, facile per-
diversoriis aut in via commodi sese ferunt, sic cogitantes, hic prandeo, alibi
obtulerit, non admodum adjiciunt ani- cœnaturus.—Erasmus, *De Præparatione*
mum, quippe mox relicturi quod de- *ad Mortem*, p. 7. Basil, 1533.

embrace the soul that they may strangle it.* The soul is too much diverted from its own proper business, by the inevitable and incessant necessities of the body; and therefore it is the height of injustice and cruelty, to make it likewise serve the extravagant and sinful desires of the flesh; so much time for sleep, and so much for eating and drinking, and dressing and undressing, and by many, the greatest part of the time that remains is spent in labouring and providing for these. Look on the employments of most men: all the labour of the husbandmen in the country, and of tradesmen in the city, the multitude of shops and callings, what is the end of them all, but the interest and service of the body? † And in all these the immortal soul is drawn down to drudge for the mortal body, the house of clay wherein it dwells. And in the sense of this, those souls that truly know and consider themselves in this condition do often groan under the burden, and desire the day of their deliverance. But the service of the flesh in the *inordinate lusts* of it is a point of far baser slavery and indignity to the soul, and doth not only divert it from spiritual things for the time, but habitually indisposes it to every spiritual work, and makes it earthly and sensual, and so unfits it for heavenly things. Where these lusts, or any one of them have dominion, the soul cannot at all perform any good; can neither pray, nor hear, nor read the word aright; and in so far as any of them prevail upon the soul of a child of GOD, they do disjoint and disable it for holy things. Although they be not of the grossest kind of lusts, but such things as are scarcely taken notice of in a man, either by others or by his own conscience, some irregular desires or entanglements of the heart, yet *these little foxes will destroy the vines* (Cant. ii. 15); they will prey upon the graces of a Christian, and keep them very low. Therefore it concerns us much to study our hearts, and to be exact in calling to account the several affections that are in them; otherwise, even such as *are called of GOD*, and *have obtained mercy* (for such the Apostle speaks to), may have such lusts within them as will much abate the flourishing of their graces, and the spiritual beauty of the soul.

* Voluptates præcipuè exturba, et invisissimas habe. Latronum more quos *Philetas* Ægyptii vocant, in hoc nos amplectuntur, ut strangulent.—Sen. *Ep.* 51.

† Omnes istæ artes quibus aut exercitatur civitas, aut strepit, corporis negotium gerunt; cui omnia olim tanquam servo præstabantur, nunc tanquam domino parantur.—Sen. *Ep.* 90.

The godly know it well in their sad experience, that their own hearts do often deceive them, harbouring and hiding such things as deprive them much of that liveliness of grace and those comforts of the Holy Ghost, that otherwise they would be very likely to attain unto.

This *warring against the soul*, which means their mischievous and hurtful nature, hath this also included under it, that these lusts, as breaches of GOD'S law, do subject the soul to His wrath. So that by this, the Apostle might well urge his point:—besides that these lusts are unworthy of you, the truth is, if you Christians serve your lusts you kill your souls. So Rom. viii. 13.

Consider, when men are on their death-beds, and near their entering into eternity, what they then think of all their toiling in the earth, and serving of their own hearts and lusts in any kind; when they see that of all these ways nothing remains to them, but the guiltiness of their sin, and the accusations of conscience, and the wrath of GOD.

Oh! that you would be persuaded to esteem your precious souls, and not wound them as you do, but war for them against all those lusts that war against them. The soul of a Christian is doubly precious, being, besides its natural excellency, ennobled by grace, and so twice descended of Heaven: and therefore it deserves better usage than to be turned into a scullion to serve the flesh. The service of Jesus Christ is that which alone fits it; it is only honourable for the soul to serve so high a lord, and only due to serve Him who bought it at so high a rate.

Ver. 12. Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles, that whereas they speak against you as evil doers, they may, by your good works which they shall behold, glorify God in the day of visitation.

THESE two things that a natural man makes least account of, are of all things in highest regard with a Christian—his own soul and GOD'S glory: so that there be no stronger persuasives to him in anything than the interest of these two. And by these the Apostle urgeth his present exhortation to holiness and blamelessness of life. For the substance of his advice or request in this and the former verse is the same: a truly *honest conversation* is that only which is spiritual, not defiled with *the carnal lusts and pollutions of the world*.

The abstaining from those lusts doth indeed comprehend, not only the rule of outward carriage, but the inward temper of the mind; whereas this *honest conversation* doth more expressly concern our external deportment amongst men; as it is added, *honest among the Gentiles*, and so tending to the glory of GOD. So that these two are inseparably to be regarded, the inward disposition of our hearts, and the outward conversation and course of our lives.

I shall speak to the former first, as the spring of the latter. *Keep thine heart with all diligence*,—all depends upon that,—*for from thence are the issues of life*, Prov. iv. 23. And if so, then the regulating of the tongue, and eyes, and feet, and all will follow, as there it follows, ver. 24–27. That the impure streams may cease from running, the corrupt spring must be dried up. Men may convey them in a close and concealed manner, making them run, as it were under ground, as they do filth under vaults and in ditches (*sentinas et cloacas*); but till the heart be renewed and purged from base lusts, it will still be sending forth, some way or other, the streams of iniquity. *As a fountain swelleth out, or casteth forth her waters incessantly, so she casteth out her wickedness*, says the Prophet, of that very people and city that were called *holy* by reason of the ordinances of GOD and the profession of the true religion that were amongst them: and therefore it is the same Prophet's advice from the Lord, *Wash thine heart, O Jerusalem. How long shall thy vain thoughts lodge within thee?* Jer. vi. 7, and iv. 14.

This is the true method, according to our Saviour's doctrine: *Make the tree good, and then the fruits will be good*; not till then; for *who can gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?* Matt. vii. 16, 17. Some good outward actions avail nothing, the soul being unrenewed; as you may stick some figs or hang some clusters of grapes upon a thorn-bush, but they cannot grow upon it.

In this men deceive themselves, even such as have some thoughts of amendment; when they fall into sin and are re-proved for it, they say (and possibly think so too), 'I will take heed to myself, I will be guilty of this no more.' And because they go no deeper, they are, many of them, ensnared in the same kind again; but, however, if they do never commit that same sin, they do but change it for some other: as a cur-

rent of waters, if you stop their passage one way they rest not till they find another. The conversation can never be uniformly and entirely good till the frame of the heart, the affections and desires that lodge in it, be changed. It is naturally *an evil treasure* of impure lusts, and must in some way vent and spend what it hath within. It is to begin with the wrong end of your work to rectify the outside first, to smooth the conversation, and not first of all purge the heart. Evil affections are the source of evil speeches and actions. *Whence are strifes and fightings?* says St. James, *Are they not from your lusts which war in your members?* Jam. iv. 1. Unquiet, unruly lusts within are the cause of the unquietnesses and contentions abroad in the world. One man will have his corrupt will, and another his, and thus they shock* and justle one another; and by the cross encounters of their purposes, as flints meeting, they strike out those sparks that set all on fire.

So then, according to the order of the Apostle's exhortation, the only true principle of all good and Christian conversation in the world is the mortifying of all earthly and sinful lusts in the heart. While they have possession of the heart they do so clog it, and straiten it towards GOD and His ways, that it cannot walk constantly in them; but when the heart is freed from them it is enlarged, and so (as David speaks) fits a man not only to walk, but to *run the way of GOD's commandments*, Psal. cxix. 32. And without this *freeing of the heart* a man will be at the best very uneven and incongruous in his ways,—in one step like a Christian, and in another like a worldling; which is an unpleasant and unprofitable way, not according to that word, Psal. xviii. 33, *Thou hast set my feet as hinds' feet,—set them even*, as the word is, not only swift, but straight and even; and that is the thing here required, that the whole course and revolution of a Christian's life be like himself. And that it may be so, *the whole body of sin*, and all the members of it, *all the deceitful lusts, must be crucified*.

In the words of the text there are three things: 1. One point of a Christian's ordinary entertainment in the world is, *to be evil spoken of*. 2. Their good use of that evil, *to do the better for it*. 3. The good end and certain effect of their so doing, *the glory of GOD*.

* Chock—1st ed., the French *chocquer*.

1. *Whereas they speak against you as evil doers.*] This is in general the disease of man's corrupt nature, and argues much the baseness and depravedness of it,—this propensity to evil-speaking one of another, either blotting the best actions with misconstructions, or taking doubtful things by the left ear; not choosing the most favourable, but, on the contrary, the very harshest sense, that can be put upon them. Some men take more pleasure in the narrow eying of the true and real faults of men, and then speak of them with a kind of delight. All these kinds of evil-speakings are such fruits as spring from that bitter root of pride and self-love, which is naturally deep fastened in every man's heart. But besides this general bent to evil-speaking, there is a particular malice in the world against those that are *born of GOD*, which must have vent in calumnies and reproaches. If this evil-speaking be the hissing that is natural to the serpent's seed, surely, by reason of their natural antipathy, it must be breathed forth most against the *seed of the woman*, those that are one with Jesus Christ. If the *tongues* of the ungodly be *sharp swords* even to one another, they will *whet them* sharper than ordinary when they are to use them against the righteous, to wound their name. The evil tongue must be always burning that *is set on fire of hell*, as St. James speaks; but against the godly it will be sure to be heated seven times hotter than it is for others. The reasons of this are: 1. Being naturally haters of GOD, and yet unable to reach Him, what wonder is it if their malice vent itself against His image in His children, and labour to blot and stain that all they can with the foulest calumnies? 2. Because they are neither able nor willing themselves to attain unto the spotless, holy life of Christians, they bemoan them, and would make them like themselves, by false aspersions: they cannot rise to the estate of the godly, and therefore they endeavour to draw them down to theirs by detraction. 3. The reproaches they cast upon the professors of *pure religion*,* they mean mainly against religion itself, and intend by them to reflect upon it.

These evil-speakings of the world against pious men professing religion are partly gross falsehoods, invented without the least ground or appearance of truth; for the world being ever

* i.e. the Puritans.

credulous of evil, especially upon so deep a prejudice as it hath against the godly, the falsest and most absurd calumnies will always find so much belief as to make them odious, or very suspected at least, to such as know them not. This is the world's maxim, *Lie confidently, and it will always do something*;* as a stone taken out of the mire and thrown against a white wall, though it stick not there, but rebound presently back again, yet it leaves a spot behind it. And with this kind of evil-speakings were the primitive Christians surcharged, even with gross and horrible falsehoods, as all know who know anything of the history of those times; even such things were reported of them, as the worst of wicked men would scarcely be guilty of. The Devil, for as witty† as he is, makes use again and again of his old inventions, and makes them serve in several ages; for so were the Waldenses accused of inhuman banquetings and beastly promiscuous uncleanness, and divers things *not once to be named among Christians*, much less to be practised by them. So that it is no new thing to meet with the impurest, vilest slanders, as the world's reward of holiness and the practice of pure religion.

Then again consider, how much more will the wicked insult upon the least *real blemishes* that they can espy amongst the professors of godliness. And in this there is a threefold injury very ordinary: 1. Strictly to pry into, and maliciously to object against Christians the smallest imperfections and frailties of their lives, as if they pretended to and promised absolute perfection. They do indeed *exercise themselves* (such as are Christians indeed) with St. Paul, *to keep a good conscience in all things towards GOD and men* (Acts xxiv. 16); they have a *regard unto all GOD's commandments*, as David speaks; they have a sincere love to GOD, which makes them study the exactest obedience they can reach: and this is an imperfect kind of perfection; it is evangelical, but not angelical. 2. Men are apt to impute scandalous falls of some particular Christians to the whole number. It is a very short incompetent rule, to make judgment of any one man himself by one action, much

* *Fortiter calumniare, aliquid hærebit*, a saying of Machiavelli, thus quoted by Bacon: 'As it is said, *Audacter calumniare, semper aliquid hæret*: so, except it be in a ridiculous degree of deformity,

Audacter te vendita, semper aliquid hæret.—*Adv. of Learn.* ed. 1851, p. 284.

† i.e. notwithstanding all his cleverness and ingenuity.

more to measure all the rest of the same profession by it. And they yet proceed further in this way of misjudging. 3. They impute the personal failings of men to their religion, and disparage it because of the faults of those that profess it; which, as the ancients plead well, is the greatest injustice, and such as they would not be guilty of against their own philosophers. They could well distinguish betwixt their doctrine and the manners of some of their followers, and thus ought they to have dealt with Christians too. They ought to have considered their religion in itself, and the doctrine that it teacheth, and had they found it vicious, the blame had been just; but if it taught nothing but holiness and righteousness, then the blame of any unholiness or unrighteousness found amongst Christians ought to rest upon the persons themselves who were guilty of it, and not to be stretched to the whole number of professors, much less to the religion that they professed. And yet, this is still the custom of the world upon the least failing they can espy in the godly, or such as seem to be so; much more with open mouth do they revile religion, upon any gross sin in any of its professors.

But seeing this is the very character of a profane mind, and the badge of the enemies of religion, beware of sharing at all with them in it. Give not easy entertainment to the reports of profane or of mere civil men, against the professors of religion; they are undoubtedly partial, and their testimony may be justly suspected. Lend them not a ready ear to receive their evil-speakings, much less your tongue to divulge them and set them further going; yea, take heed that you take not pleasure in any the least kind of scoffs against the sincerity and power of religion. And all of you who desire to walk as Christians, be very wary, that you wrong not one another, and help not the wicked against you, by your mutual misconstructions and miscensures one of another. Far be it from you to take pleasure in hearing others evil-spoken of; whether unjustly or though it be some way deservedly, yet let it be alway grievous to you, and no way pleasing to hear such things, much less to speak of them. It is the Devil's delight to be pleased with evil-speakings. The Syrian calls him *Akal Kartza*, an 'Eater of slanders or calumnies.' They are a dish that pleases his palate, and men are naturally fond of his diet. In Psal.

XXXV. 16 there is a word that is rendered *mockers at feasts*, or *feasting-mockers*—persons who feasted men's ears at their meetings, with speaking of the faults of others scoffingly, and therefore shared with them of their cakes, or feasts, as the word is. But to a renewed Christian mind, which hath a new taste and all its senses new, there is nothing more unsavoury than to hear the defaming of others, especially of such as profess religion. Did *the law of love* possess our hearts, it would regulate both the ear and tongue, and make them most tender of the name of our brethren; it would teach us the faculty of covering their infirmities, and judging favourably, taking always the best side and most charitable sense of their actions: it would teach us to blunt the edge of our censures upon ourselves, our own hard hearts and rebellious wills within, that they might remain no more sharp against others than is needful for their good.

And this would cut short those that are without, from a great deal of provisions of evil-speaking against Christians, that they many times are furnished with by Christians themselves, through their uncharitable carriage one towards another. However, this being the hard measure that they always find in the world, it is their wisdom to consider it aright, and to study that good which, according to the Apostle's advice, may be extracted out of it, and that is the *second* thing to be spoken to.

2. *Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles.*] As the sovereign power of drawing good out of evil resides in GOD, and argues His primitive goodness, so He teacheth His own children some faculty this way that they may resemble Him in it. He teacheth them to draw sweetness out of their bitterest afflictions, and increase of inward peace from their outward troubles. And as these buffetings of the tongue are no small part of their sufferings, so they reap no small benefit by them many ways; particularly in this one, that they order their conversation the better and walk the more exactly for it.

And this no doubt, in Divine providence, is intended and ordered for their good, as are all their other trials. The sharp censures and evil-speakings that a Christian is encompassed with in the world is no other than an hedge of thorns set on

every side that he go not out of his way, but keep straight on in it betwixt them, not declining to the right hand nor to the left; whereas, if they found nothing but the favour and good opinion of the world, they might, as in a way unhedged, be subject to expatiate and wander out into the meadows of carnal pleasures that are about them, which would call and allure them and often divert them from their journey.

And thus it might fall out that Christians would deserve censure and evil speaking the more, if they did not usually suffer them undeserved. This then turns into a great advantage to them, making their conduct more answerable to those two things that our Saviour joins, *watching and prayer*; causing them to be the more vigilant over themselves, and the more earnest with GOD for His watching over them and conducting of them. *Make my ways straight*, says David, *because of mine enemies*, Psal. v. 8: the word is, *my observers*, or those that scan my ways, every foot of them, that examine them as a verse, or as a song of music; if there be but a wrong measure in them, they will not let it slip, but will be sure to mark it.

And if the enemies of the godly wait for their halting, shall not they scan their own ways themselves, that they may not halt? Shall they not examine them to order them, as the wicked do to censure them: still depending wholly upon the Spirit of GOD as their guide, *to lead them into all truth*, and to teach them how *to order their conversation aright*, that it may be all of a piece, holy and blameless and still like itself?

Honest.] Fair or beautiful: the same word (*Καλόν*) doth fitly signify goodness and beauty, for that which is the truest and most lasting beauty grows fresher in old age, as the Psalmist speaks of the righteous, *those that be planted in the house of GOD*, Psal. xcii. 12-14. Could the beauty of Virtue be seen, said a philosopher, it would draw all to love it.* A

* Plato, *Phædrus*, § 31, ed. Hermann, § 65, ed. Bekker. Cf. Cicero *de Offic.* i. 5; *de Finibus*, ii. 16; and Sen. *Ep.* 115.

S. Francis de Sales, following Dionysius the Areopagite, says: 'God attracts all spiritual beings to Himself by His sovran beauty, and infinite goodness, which two qualities are but one in God, who is at once the All-beautiful and

the All-good, in a word, the *τὸ καλόν*. All things are made for this end, all things tend thereto, all intelligent creatures yearn after it and love it. Beauty or Goodness has the power of attracting and recalling all things to itself; hence the Greeks expressed *the beautiful* by a word which signifies *to call*, *καλόν*, quasi *καλοῦν*.—*De l'Amour de Dieu*, vii. 5. Apuleius the Platonist, in his *Discourse*

Christian, holy conversation, hath such a beauty, that when they who are strangers to it begin to discern it at all aright, they cannot choose but love it; and where it begets not love, yet it silences calumny, or at least evinces its falsehood.

The goodness or beauty of a Christian's conversation consisting in symmetry and conformity to the word of GOD as its rule, he ought diligently to study that rule, and to square his ways by it; not to walk at random, but to apply that rule to every step at home and abroad, and to be as careful to keep the beauty of his ways unspotted, as those women are of their faces and attire who are most studious of comeliness.

But so far are we who call ourselves Christians from this exact regard of our conversation, that the most part not only have many foul spots, but they themselves and all their ways are nothing but defilement, all one spot;—as our Apostle calls them, *blots are they and spots*, 2 Pet. ii. 13. And even they who are Christians indeed, yet are not so watchful and accurate in all their ways as becomes them, but stain their *holy profession* either with pride, or covetousness, or contentions, or some other such like uncomeliness.

Let us all, therefore, resolve more to study this good and comely conversation the Apostle here exhorts to, that it may be such as *becometh the Gospel of Christ*, as St. Paul desires his Philippians, ch. i. ver. 27. And if you live amongst profane persons, who will be to you as the unbelieving Gentiles were to these believing Jews who lived amongst them, traducers of you, and given to speak evil of you, and of religion in

of Magic, speaking of Divine love, observes: 'The attractive charm of beauty lies in this, that it *recalls to the mind*, which had its origin in God, that beauty which in all its purity and perfection it once beheld in Heaven. The wise man does not so much love as recall to mind.' Thus in the *Sacotala*

of Calidas, an Indian drama written about B.C. 100, the hero says: 'Perhaps the sadness of men otherwise happy, on seeing beautiful forms or hearing beautiful melodies, arises from some dim *reminiscence* of past joys and sweet ties of love in a former state of existence.'

'Goodness is Beauty's mother, and true Love's;
Beauty and Love are both bred in one womb:
Then Love and Beauty still it much behoves
To tend to Goodness.'—Davies' *Microcosmos*, p. 171, Oxf. 1603.

Hooker observes: 'That which is good in the actions of men doth not only delight as profitable, but as amiable also. In which consideration the Grecians most divinely have given to the active perfection of men a name expressing

both beauty and goodness, *Καλοκαγαθία*, because goodness in ordinary speech is for the most part applied only to that which is beneficial. But we in the name of goodness do here imply both.'—*E. P.* i. 8. 1.

you, trouble not yourselves with many apologies and clearings, when you are evil-spoken of, but let the tract of your life answer for you, your *honest* and *blameless conversation*: that will be the shortest, and most real and effectual way of confuting all obloquies; as when one in the Schools was proving by a sophistical argument that there could be no motion, the philosopher* answered it fully and shortly, by rising up and walking. If thou wouldst pay them home, this is a kind of revenge not only allowed thee, but recommended to thee; be avenged on evil-speakers by well-doing; shame them from it. It was a king that said, *It was kingly to do well and be ill-spoken of.*† Well may Christians acknowledge it to be true, when they consider that it was the lot of their King, Jesus Christ; and well may they be content, seeing He hath made them likewise *kings* (as we heard, ver. 9), to be conformable to Him in this too, this kingly way of suffering, to be unjustly evil spoken of and still to go on in doing the more good; always aiming in so doing (as our Lord did) at the glory of our Heavenly Father. This is the *third* thing to be considered.

3. *That they may glorify GOD in the day of visitation.*] He says not, They shall praise or commend you, but *shall glorify GOD*. In what way soever this time, this *day of visitation*, be taken, the effect itself is this, *They shall glorify GOD*. It is this the Apostle still holds before their eye, as that upon which a Christian doth willingly set his eye, and keep it fixed in all his ways. He doth not teach them to be sensible of their own esteem as it concerns themselves, but only as the glory of their GOD is interested in it. Were it not for this, a generous-minded Christian could set a very light rate upon all the thoughts and speeches of men concerning him, whether good or bad; and could easily drown all their mistakes in the conscience of the favour and approbation of his GOD. (He might say with St. Paul, ‘*It is a very small thing for me to be judged of man, or of the day of man: he that judgeth me is the Lord.*’ ‘*Man hath a day of judging, but it, and his judgment with it, soon passes away; but GOD hath His day, and it, together with His sentence, abideth for ever:—I appeal to GOD.*’‡) But

* Diogenes the Cynic.

† It was said by Antisthenes, as recorded by Diogenes Laërtius, and was

a favourite maxim of the Emperor M. Antoninus.—*De seipso*, vii. 32.

‡ See 1 Cor. iv. 3; 1 Peter i. 24, 25.

considering that the religion he professes, and the GOD whom he worships in that religion, are wronged by those reproaches, and that the calumnies cast upon Christians reflect upon their Lord,—this is the thing that makes him sensible; he feels on that side only. *The reproaches of them that reproached Thee are fallen upon me*, says the Psalmist: and this makes a Christian desirous to vindicate, even to men, his religion and his GOD, without regard to himself; because he may say, *the reproaches of them that reproach only me have fallen upon Thee*, Psal. lxxix. 9.

This is his intent in the holiness and integrity of his life, *that GOD may be glorified*; this is the axis about which all *this good conversation* moves and turns continually.

And he that forgets this, let his conversation be never so plausible and spotless, knows not what it is to be a Christian. As they say of the eagles, who try their young ones whether they be of the right kind or not, by holding them before the sun, and if they can look stedfastly upon it, they own them, if not, they throw them away: this is the true evidence of an upright and real Christian, to have a stedfast eye on the glory of GOD, the *Father of Lights*.* In all *let GOD be glorified*, says the Christian, and that suffices: that is the sum of his desires. He is far from glorying in himself, or seeking to raise himself, for he knows that of himself he is nothing, but by the *free grace of GOD he is what he is*. ‘Whence any glorying to thee, rottenness and dust?’ says St. Bernard. ‘Whence is it to thee if thou art holy? Is it not the Holy Spirit that hath sanctified thee? If thou couldst work miracles, though they were done by thy hand, yet it were not by thy power, but by the power of GOD.’ †

Thou hast turned my mourning into joy: Thou hast put off my sackcloth and girded me with gladness; to the end that my glory may sing praise unto Thee, says David, Psal. xxx. 11, 12. Whether his tongue, or his soul, or both, be meant by what he calls *his glory*, he shows us what use he hath for it, namely, to give the LORD glory, to sing His praises; and we see that then it was truly David’s glory when it was so employed, in giving

* See S. Ambrose in *lib. de Salomone*, quoted in Spencer’s *Similies*, p. 174.

† Tibi unde gloria, putide pulvis, tibi unde? De vitæ sanctitate? Sed Spiritus

est qui sanctificat, Spiritus dico, non tuus, sed Dei. Etsi prodigiis ac signis effulgeas, in manu tua fiunt, sed virtute Dei.—*In Cantica*, Serm. 13. § 7.

glory to Him whose peculiar due glory is. What have we to do in the world as His creatures, once and again His creatures, His *new creatures, created unto good works*, but to exercise ourselves in those, and by those to advance His glory, that all may return to HIM from whom all is, as the rivers run back to the sea from whence they came? *Of Him, and through Him*, and therefore, *for Him are all things*, says the Apostle, Rom. xi. 36. They that serve base gods, seek how to advance and aggrandise them. The covetous man studies to make his *Mammon* as great as he can, all his thoughts and pains run upon that service, and so do the voluptuous and ambitious for theirs; and shall not they who profess themselves to be the servants of the Only Great and the Only True GOD, have their hearts much more, at least as much, possessed with desires of honouring and exalting *Him*? Should not this be their predominant design and thought?—What way shall I most advance the glory of my GOD? How shall I who am under stronger obligations than they all, set in with the heavens and the earth, and the other creatures, to declare His excellency, His greatness, and His goodness?

In the day of visitation.] The beholding of your good works may work this in them, that they may be gained to acknowledge and embrace that religion, and that GOD, which for the present they reject; but that it may be thus, they must be visited with that same light and grace from above which hath sanctified you. This, I conceive, is the sense of this word, though it may be, and is taken divers other ways by interpreters. Possibly, in this *day of visitation* is implied the clearer preaching of the Gospel amongst those Gentiles where the dispersed Jews dwelt; and that when they should compare the light of that doctrine with the light of their lives, and find the agreement betwixt them, that might be helpful to their effectual calling, and so they might *glorify GOD*. But to the end that they might do thus indeed, there must be along with the word of GOD and the good works of His people, a particular visiting of their souls by the Spirit of GOD. Your good conversation may be one good mean of their conversion; therefore this may be a motive to that; but to make it an effectual mean, this day of gracious visitation must dawn upon them: *the Day-spring from on high must visit them*, as it is Luke i. 78.

Ver. 13. Submit yourselves unto every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be to the King, as supreme,

14. Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

It is one of the falsest, and yet one of the commonest prejudices that the world hath always entertained against true religion, that it is an enemy to civil power and government. The adversaries of the Jews charged this fault upon their city, the then seat of the true worship of GOD, Ezra iv. 15. The Jews charged it upon the preachers of the Christian religion, Acts xvii. 7, as they pretended the same quarrel against Christ Himself. And generally, the enemies of the Christians in the primitive times loaded them with the slander of rebellion and contempt of authority. Therefore our Apostle, descending to particular rules of Christian life, by which it may be blameless and silence calumny, begins with this, not only as a thing of prime importance in itself, but as particularly fit for those he wrote to, being at once both Jews and Christians, for the clearing of themselves and their religion: *Submit yourselves, &c.*

There are in the words divers particulars to be considered, all concurring to press this main duty of obedience to magistrates, not only as well consistent with true religion, but as indeed inseparable from it. Not to parcel out the words into many pieces, they may, I conceive, be all not unfitly comprised under these two: 1. The extent of this duty; 2. The ground of it.

1. The extent of the duty, viz., *To all civil power*, of what kind soever, for the time received and authorised; there being no need of questioning what was the rise and origin of civil power, either in the nature of it or in the persons of those that are in possession of it. For if you will trace them quite through in the succession of ages, and narrowly eye their whole circle, there be few crowns in the world in which there will not be found some crack or other, more or less. If you look on those great monarchies in Daniel's Vision, you see one of them built up upon the ruins of another; and all of them represented by terrible devouring beasts of monstrous shape.*

* The dream of Nebuchadnezzar is expanded in the first vision of Daniel. The former had represented human empire in its intelligent, well-proportioned

And whether the Roman empire be the fourth there, as many take it, or not, yet, in the things spoken of that fourth, as well as of the rest, it is inferior to none of them, enlarging itself by conquests in all parts of the world. And under it were the provinces to which this Epistle is addressed; yet the Apostle enjoins his brethren subjection and obedience to its authority.

Nor is it a question so to be moved as to suspend, or at all abate, our obedience to that [civil power] which possesses [authority] in the present where we live, what form of government is most just and commodious.

GOD hath indeed been more express in the officers and government of His own house, His Church; but civil societies He hath left at liberty in the choosing and modelling of civil government, though always, indeed, overruling their choice and changes in that by the secret hand of His wise and powerful providence. Yet He hath set them no particular rule touching the frame of it; only requiring that the common rule of equity and justice should be regarded, both in the contriving and managing of government. And even though it be some way defective in both, those that are subject to it are in all things lawful to submit to its authority, whether supreme or subordinate; as we have it here expressly, *Whether to the king as supreme* (namely, to the Emperor), or *to the governors sent by him*;—which though a judicious interpreter refers to GOD, and will not admit of any other sense, yet it seems most suitable both to the words and to the nature of the government of those provinces, to take that word *To him*, as relating to the king; for the expression, *them that are sent*, answers to the other, *the king as supreme*, and so is a very clear designation of the inferior governors of those times and places. And

might. It was man's power as formed in some measure in the image of God. The substance, the strength, the character of the several empires were different, the form was one. Daniel's vision exhibits them on the other side. The four winds of heaven are driving at once upon the great sea—that representative throughout Holy Scripture of our troubled world—and out of it there arise four forms of more than human strength. The terrific and wasting power of the world-empires is exhibited under the image of brute force, *four great beasts, diverse*

one from the other. Nor did they arise of their own power. Not without being acted on by the winds of Heaven, does the sea send forth those beasts; not without being set in motion by the Powers above does the heathen world form itself into those great empires. But the chief object of interest, that chiefly expanded, is that in which they should end, the Kingdom of God victorious over the evil of the world.—Dr. Pusey's Lectures on *Daniel the Prophet*, London, 1864, pp. 67, 80.

whatsoever was their end who sent them, and their carriage who were sent, that which the Apostle adds expresses the end for which they should be sent to govern, and at which they should aim in governing, as the true end of all government. And though they were not fully true to that end in their department, but possibly did many things unjustly, yet, as GOD hath ordained authority for this end, there is always so much justice in the most depraved government as renders it a public good, and therefore puts upon inferiors an obligation to obedience: and this leads us to consider,

2. The ground of this duty. The main ground of submitting to human authority is the interest that Divine authority hath in it, GOD having both appointed civil government as a common good amongst men, and particularly commanded His people obedience to it, as a particular good to them and a thing very suitable with their profession: it is *for the Lord's sake*. This word carries the whole weight of the duty, and is a counterbalance to the former, which seems to be therefore on purpose so expressed that this may answer it. Although civil authority, in regard of particular forms of government, and the choice of particular persons to govern, is but a human ordinance, or *man's creature*, as the word is, yet, both the good of government and the duty of subjection to it are GOD'S ordinance; and therefore, *for His sake submit yourselves*.

[1.] GOD hath in general instituted civil government for the good of human society, and still there is good in it, however depraved. Tyranny is better than anarchy.* [2.] It is by His providence that men are advanced to places of authority. See Psal. lxxv. 6, 7; Dan. iv. 25; John xix. 11. [3.] It is His command that obedience be yielded to them, Rom. xiii. 1; Tit. iii. 1, &c. And the consideration of this ties a Christian to all loyalty and due obedience, which, being still *for the Lord's sake*, cannot hold in anything that is against the Lord's own command; for kings and rulers, in such a case, leave their station. Now the subjection here enjoined is (*ὑποτάγητε*, *Be subject* to them, as it were, *in your rank*) still in subordination to GOD; but if they go out of that even line, follow

* 'The commodities of government are so great, that a very bad ruler is better than none; for whereas in a corrupt *monarchy* there is one tyrant, in an *oligarchy* some few tyrants, in a *democracy* many tyrants, in an *anarchy* all are tyrants.'—Dr. Boys' *Works*, London, 1622, p. 936.

them not. They that obey the unlawful commands of kings do it in regard to *their god*, no question, but that *their god is their belly*, or their ambition, or their avarice.

But not only ought the exercise of authority, and submission to it, to be confined to things just and lawful in themselves, but the very purpose of the heart, both in command and obedience, should be *in the Lord*, and *for His sake*. This is the only straight and the only safe rule, both for rulers and for people to walk by. Would Kings and the other Powers of the world consider the supremacy and greatness of that KING of whom they all hold their crowns and dignities, they would be no less careful of their submission and homage to HIM than they are desirous of their people's submission to themselves.

I will not speak at all of their civil obligations to their people, and the covenant of justice that with good reason is betwixt them in the fundamental constitutions of all well-ordered kingdoms; nor meddle with that point—the dependence that human authority hath upon the societies of men over whom it is, according to which it is here called *man's ordinance*, or *creature*, *ἀνθρωπίνῃ κτίσει*. This is a thing that the greatest and most absolute of princes cannot deny, that all their authority is dependent upon the great GOD, both as the Author of it in the general, and the sovereign Disposer of it to particular men, *giving the kingdoms of the earth to whom He will*, Dan. iv. 25. And therefore He may most justly require obedience and fealty of them, that they *serve the Lord in fear*, and if they *rejoice* in their dignities over men, yet that they do it *with trembling*, under a sense of their duty to GOD, and that they throw down their crowns at the feet of CHRIST, *the Lord's anointed*.

And to this they are the more obliged, considering that religion and the Gospel of Christ do so much press the duty of their people's obedience to them; so that they wrong both Christianity and themselves very far, in mistaking it as an enemy to their authority, when it is so far from prejudicing it, that it confirms it, and pleads for it. Surely they do most ungratefully requite the Lord and His Christ, when they say (as in Psal. ii.), *Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us*. Whereas the LORD binds the cords

of kings and their authority fast upon their people; not the cords of tyranny indeed, to bind the subjects as beasts to be sacrifices to the passion of their rulers, but the cords of just and due obedience to their kings and governors. The Lord doth (as you see here) bind it upon all that profess His name, and strengthens it by the respect His people carry to Himself, enjoining them, that *for His sake*, they should obey their rulers. So that kings need not fear true religion, that it will ever favour anything that can justly be called rebellion; on the contrary, it still urges loyalty and obedience: so that as they ought in duty, they may in true policy and wisdom, befriend true religion, as a special friend to their authority, and hate that religion of Rome which is indeed rebellion, and that *mother of abominations* who makes the *kings of the earth drunk with her cup*, and makes them dream of increase of authority while they are truly on the losing hand. But besides that they owe their power* to the advancement of Christ's kingdom, by so employing themselves as to strengthen it they do themselves good; they confirm their own thrones, when they erect His: as it was said of Cæsar, that by setting up Pompey's statue, he settled and fastened his own.

But it is an evil too natural to men, to forget the true end and use of any good the Lord confers on them. And thus kings and rulers too often consider not for what they are exalted; they think it is for themselves, to honour and please themselves, and not to honour GOD, and benefit their people, to encourage and reward the good (as here it is), and to punish the wicked. They are set on high for the good of those that are below them, that they may be refreshed with their light and influence; as the lights of Heaven are set there in the highest parts of the world, for the use and benefit of the very lowest. GOD set them in the firmament of Heaven, but to what end? *To give light upon the earth*, Gen. i. 15. And the mountains are raised above the rest of the earth, not to be places of prey and robbery, as sometimes they are turned to be, but to send forth streams from their springs into the valleys, and make them fertile; these mountains and hills (greater and lesser rulers, higher and lower), are to send forth to the people the *streams of righteousness and peace*, Psal. lxxii. 3.

* *Owe their power*, i.e. are bound to use their power.

But it is the corruption and misery of man's nature, that he doth not know, and can hardly be persuaded to learn, either how to command aright or how to obey; and no doubt many of those that can see and blame the injustice of others in authority, would be more guilty that way themselves, if they had the same power.

It is the pride and self-love of our nature that begets disobedience in inferiors and violence and injustice in superiors; that depraved humour which ties to every kind of government a propension to a particular disease; which makes royalty easily degenerate into *tyranny*, the government of nobles into *faction*, and popular government into *confusion*.

As civil authority and subjection to it are the institution of GOD, so the peaceable correspondence of these two, just government and due obedience, is the special gift of GOD's own hand, and a prime blessing to states and kingdoms; and the troubling and interruption of their course is one of the highest public judgments by which the Lord punishes oftentimes the other sins both of rulers and people. And whatsoever be the cause, and on which side soever be the justice of the cause, it cannot be looked upon but as a heavy plague, and the fruit of many and great provocations, when kings and their people, who should be a mutual blessing and honour to each other, are turned into scourges one to another, or into a devouring fire; as it is in the parable, Judges ix. 20, *Fire going forth from Abimelech to devour the men of Shechem, and fire from Shechem to devour Abimelech.*

Ver. 15. For so is the will of GOD, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16. As free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of GOD.

THIS continues the same reason of the same duty: if Christians will obey the Lord, then they must obey civil powers, for that is His will, and they will not deny their obligation to Him, for they are His servants, ver. 16. The words, indeed, are more general than the former, but they relate chiefly, in this place, to the particular in hand, implying that neither in that kind nor in any other, Christians should dishonour their profession and abuse their liberty, mistaking it as an exemption from

those duties to which it doth more straitly tie them. So, then, the point of civil obedience and all other good conversation amongst men, is here recommended to Christians, as conformable to the will of GOD, and the most effectual clearing of their profession, and very agreeable to their Christian liberty.

The will of GOD.] This is the strongest and most binding reason that can be used to a Christian mind, which hath resigned itself to be governed by that rule, to have *the will of GOD* for its law. Whatsoever is required of it upon that warrant it cannot refuse. Although it cross a man's own humour or his private interest, yet, if his heart be subjected to the will of GOD, he will not stand with Him in anything. One word from GOD, *I will have it so*, silences all, and carries it against all opposition.

It were a great point if we could be persuaded to esteem duly of this: it were indeed all. It would make light and easy work in those things that go so hardly on with us, though we are daily exhorted to them. Is it the will of GOD that I should live soberly? Then, though my own corrupt will and my companions be against it, yet it must be so. Wills He that I forbear cursing and oaths, though it is my custom to use them? Yet I must offer violence to my custom, and go against the stream of all their customs that are round about me, to obey His will, who wills all things justly and holily. Will He have my charity not only liberal in giving, but in forgiving, and real and hearty in both? Will He have me *bless them that curse me, and do good to them that hate me, and love mine enemies*? Though the world counts it a hard task, and my own corrupt heart possibly finds it so, yet it shall be done; and not as upon unpleasant necessity, but willingly and cheerfully, and with the more delight because it is difficult; for so it proves my obedience the more, and my love to Him whose will it is. Though mine enemies deserve not my love, yet He who bids me love them does; and if He will have this the touchstone to try the uprightness of my love to Him, shall it fail there? No, His will commands me so absolutely, and He Himself is so lovely, that there can be nobody so unlovely in themselves, or to me, but I can love them upon His command, and for His sake.

But that it may be thus, there must be a renewed frame of

mind, by which a man may renounce the world and the forms of it, and himself, and his own sinful heart and its way, to study and follow the only *good, and acceptable, and perfect will of GOD* (Rom. xii. 2), to keep close to that line, not willingly declining to either hand, to have his whole mind taken up in searching it, and his whole heart in embracing it. *Be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is*, says the Apostle Paul, Eph. v. 17, being about to exhort to particular duties, as our Apostle here is doing.

This is the task of a Christian, to understand his Lord's will, and with a practical understanding, that he may walk in all well pleasing unto GOD. Thus the Apostle likewise exhorts the Thessalonians pathetically (1 Ep. ch. iv. ver. 1), and adds, *This is the will of GOD, even your sanctification*. And he then proceeds particularly against uncleanness and deceit, &c.

Let this, then, be your endeavour, to have your wills crucified to whatsoever is sinful, yea, to will outward indifferent things with a kind of indifferency. The most things that men are so stiff in are not worth an earnest willing. In a word, it were the only happy and truly spiritual temper, to have our will quite rooted out, and the will of GOD placed in its stead; to have no other will than His, that it might constantly, yea (so to speak), identically follow it in all things. This is the will of GOD, therefore it is mine.*

That with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.] The duties of the Second Table, or of well doing towards men, are more obvious to men devoid of religion than those that have an immediate relation to GOD; and therefore (as in other Epistles) the Apostle is here particular in these for the vindicating of religion to them that are without. Ignorance usually is loud and prattling, making a mighty noise, and so hath need of a *muzzle to silence it*, as the word *φιμοῦν* imports. They that were ready to speak evil of religion, are called *witless* or *foolish* men; there was perverseness in their ignorance, as the word *ἀφρόνων* intimates. And generally, all kinds of evil-speakings and uncharitable censurings do argue a foolish, worthless mind whence they proceed; and yet, they are the usual divertisement of the greatest part of

* See S. F. de Sales, *De l'union de notre volonté au bon plaisir de Dieu par la sainte indifférence*, in his *Traité de l'Amour de Dieu*, l. ix. c. 4, and c. 15.

mankind, and take up very much of their converse and discourse; which is an evidence of the baseness and perverseness of their minds. For, whereas those that have most real goodness delight most to observe what is good and commendable in others, and to pass by their blemishes, it is the true character of vile unworthy persons (as scurvy flies sit upon sores), to skip over all the good that is in men and fasten upon their infirmities.*

But especially doth it discover *ignorance and folly*, to turn the failings of men to the disadvantage of religion. None can be such enemies to it but they that know it not, and see not the beauty that is in it. However, the way to silence them, we see, is by *well doing*; that silences them more than whole volumes of Apologies. When a Christian walks irreprovably his enemies have nowhere to fasten their teeth on him, but are forced to gnaw their own malignant tongues. As it secures the godly thus to stop the lying mouths of foolish men, so it is as painful to them to be thus stopped as muzzling is to beasts, and it punishes their malice.

And this is a wise Christian's way, instead of impatiently fretting at the mistakes or wilful miscensures of men, to keep still on in his calm temper of mind, and upright course of life, and silent innocence; this, as a rock, breaks the waves into foam that roar about it.

As free.] This the Apostle adds lest any should so far mistake the nature of their Christian liberty, as to dream of an exemption from obedience either to GOD, or to men for His sake, and according to His appointment. Their freedom he grants, but would have them understand aright what it is. I cannot here insist at large on the spiritual freedom of Christians; nor is it here needful, being mentioned only for the clearing of it in this point; but free they are, and they only, who are partakers of this liberty. *If the Son make you free, you shall be free indeed*, John viii. 36. The rest are slaves to Satan, and the world, and their own lusts; as the Israelites in Egypt, working in the clay under hard task-masters.

* 'There is in some men, even in nature, a disposition towards goodness; as, on the other side, there is a natural malignity. For there be that in their nature do not affect the good of others. Such men in other men's calamities are not so good as the dogs that licked *Lazarus'* sores, but like flies that are still buzzing upon anything that is raw,' —Bacon, *Essay XIII.*

Much discourse hath been spent, and much ink hath been spilt upon the debate of *free-will*, but truly, all the liberty it hath, till the Son and His Spirit free it, is that miserable freedom the Apostle speaks of, Rom. vi. 20, *While ye were servants to sin, ye were free from righteousness.**

And as we are naturally subject to the vile drudgery of sin, so we are condemned to the proper *wages of sin*, which the Apostle there tells us is *death*, according to the just sentence of the law. But our Lord Christ was anointed for this purpose, *to set us free*, both to work and to publish liberty, to *proclaim liberty to captives, and the opening of the prison-doors to them that are bound*, Isa. lxi. 1. Having paid our complete ransom, He sends His word as the message, and His Spirit to perform it effectually, to set us free, to let us know it, and to bring us out of prison. He was bound and scourged, as a slave or malefactor, to purchase us this liberty; therefore ought it to be our special care, first, to have part in it, and then to be like it, and *stand fast in it* in all points.

But that we deceive not ourselves, as too many do who have no portion in this liberty, we ought to know that it is not to inordinate walking and licentiousness, as our liberty, that we are called, but *from* them, as our thralldom; we are not called *from* obedience, but *to* it. Therefore beware that you shuffle in under this specious name of *liberty*, nothing that belongs not to it. Make it not *a cloak of maliciousness*; it is too precious a garment for so base a use. Liberty is indeed Christ's livery that He gives to all His followers; but to live suitably to it, is not to live in wickedness or disobedience of any kind, but in obedience and holiness. You are called to

* Dr. Field observes: 'In the *highest* degree, τὸ ἀντρεξούσιον, that is, freedom of will, is proper to God only; and in *this* sense Calvin and Luther rightly deny that the will of any creature is or ever was free—*except as in God and God in us*.' Coleridge adds the words in italics, and continues: 'A creaturely will cannot be free; but the will in a rational creature may cease to be creaturely, and the creature's ἀπόστασις finally cease in consequence; and this neither Luther nor Calvin seem to have seen.'—*Notes on English Divines*, i. 57. Cf. his *Aids*, i. 121: 'The great theme

of the Gospel is the redemption of the will from slavery; the restoration of the will to perfect freedom being the end and consummation of the redemptive process, and the same with the entrance of the soul into glory, that is, its union with Christ—the freedom of a finite will being possible under this condition only, that it has become one with the will of God.' Thus David prays: *Restore unto me the joy of Thy salvation; and uphold me with Thy free Spirit!* And S. Paul declares: *Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.*

be *the servants of GOD*, and that is your dignity and your liberty.

The Apostles of this Gospel of liberty gloried in this title, *The servants of Jesus Christ*. David before that Psalm of praise for his victories and exaltations, being now settled on his throne, prefixes that title as more honour than all these, *A Psalm of David, the servant of the Lord*, Psal. xviii. 1. It is the only true happiness, both of kings and their subjects, to be His subjects. It is the glory of the angels to be His *ministering spirits*. The more we attain unto the faculty of serving Him cheerfully and diligently, the more still we find of this spiritual liberty, and have the more joy in it. As it is the most honourable, it is likewise the most comfortable and most gainful service, and they that once know it will never change it for any other in the world. Oh! that we could live as His servants, employing all our industry to do Him service in the condition and place wherein He hath set us, whatsoever it is, and as faithful servants, more careful of His affairs than of our own, accounting it our main business to seek the advancement of His glory. *Happy is the servant whom the Master when He cometh shall find so doing.*

Ver. 17. Honour all men. Love the brotherhood. Fear God. Honour the king.

THIS is a precious cluster of Divine precepts. The whole face of the Heavens is adorned with stars, but they are of different magnitudes, and in some parts they are thicker set than in others: thus it is likewise in the holy Scriptures. And these are the two books that the Psalmist sets open before us, Psal. xix.; the Heavens as a choice piece of the works of GOD instructing us, and the Word of GOD more full and clear than they.* Here is a constellation of very bright stars near together. These words have very briefly, and yet not obscured by briefness, but withal very plainly, the sum of our duty towards GOD and men; to men both in general, *Honour all men*,

* 'Our Saviour saith: *Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of GOD*: thus laying before us two books or volumes to study, if we will be secured from error; first the Scriptures revealing the will of GOD; and then the creatures expressing His power; whereof the latter is a key unto the former.'

—Bacon, *Adv. of Learn.* p. 63.

'Chrysostom mentions a two-fold book of GOD; the book of the creatures, and the book of the Scriptures. God having taught us first of all by His works, did it afterwards by His words.' —C. Mather's *Christian Philosopher*, London, 1721, p. 8.

and in special relations,—in their Christian or religious relation, *Love the brotherhood*, and in a chief civil relation, *Honour the king*. And our whole duty to GOD, comprised under the name of *His fear*, is set in the middle betwixt these, as the common spring of all duty to men, and of all due observance of it, and the sovereign rule by which it is to be regulated.

I shall speak of them as they lie in the text. We need not labour about the connexion; for in such variety of brief practical directions, it hath not such places as in doctrinal discourses. The Apostle having spoken of one particular wherein he would have his brethren to clear and commend their Christian profession, now accumulates these directions as most necessary, and afterwards goes on to particular duties of servants, &c. But first, observe in general how plain and easy, and how few are those things that are the rule of our life: no dark sentences to puzzle the understanding, nor large discourses and long periods to burden the memory; they are all plain: *there is nothing wreathed nor distorted in them*, as Wisdom speaks of her instructions, Prov. viii. 8.

And this gives check to a double folly amongst men, contrary the one to the other, but both agreeing in mistaking and wronging the Word of GOD; the one is of those that despise the Word, and that doctrine and preaching that is conformable to it, for its plainness and simplicity; the other of those that complain of its difficulty and darkness. As for the first, they certainly do not take the true end for which the Word is designed, namely, that it is the law of our life (and it is mainly requisite in laws, that they be both brief and clear): and that it is our guide and light to happiness; and if that which ought to be our *light be darkness, how great will that darkness be!*

It is true (but I am not now to insist on this point), that there be dark and deep passages in Scripture for the exercise, yea, for the humbling, yea, for the amazing and astonishing of the sharpest-sighted readers. But this argues much the pride and vanity of men's minds, when they busy themselves only in those, and throw aside altogether the most necessary, which are therefore the easiest and plainest truths in it. As in nature, the commodities that are of greatest necessity, GOD hath made most common and easiest to be had; so in religion, such

instructions as these now in our hands, that are given us to live and walk by, are plain and simple: and in the search of things that are more obscure and less useful, men evidence that they had rather be learned than holy, and have still more mind to the *tree of knowledge* than the *tree of life*. And in hearing of the Word, are not they who are any whit more knowing than ordinary, still gaping after new notions, after something to add to the stock of their speculative and discoursing knowledge, loathing this daily manna, these profitable exhortations, and *requiring meat for their lust*? There is an intemperance of the mind as well as of the mouth.* You would think it, and may be, not spare to call it, a poor cold sermon, that was made up of such plain precepts as these, *Honour all men; love the brotherhood; fear GOD; honour the king*; and yet this is the language of GOD, it is His way, this foolish despicable way by which He guides, and brings to heaven them that believe.

Again, we have others that are still complaining of the *difficulty and darkness* of the Word of GOD and Divine truths; to say nothing of Rome's doctrine, who talks thus in order to excuse her sacrilege of stealing away the Word from the people of GOD: a senseless pretext though it were true; because the Word is dark of itself, should it therefore be made darker by locking it up in an unknown tongue? But we speak of the common vulgar excuse, which the gross ignorance and profaneness of many seek to shroud under, that they are not learned, and cannot reach the doctrine of the Scriptures. There be deep mysteries there indeed: but what say you to these things, such rules as these, *Honour all men, &c.*? Are such as these riddles, that you cannot know their meaning? Rather, do not all understand them and all neglect them? Why set you not on to do these? and then you should understand more.

* Plus scire velle quam sit satis, intemperantiæ genus est.—Sen. *Ep.* 88. Cf. *Ep.* 106: In supervacuis subtilitas teritur. Non faciunt bonos ista sed doctos. Apertior res est sapere; imo simplicior. Paucis opus est ad mentem bonam literis. Sed nos ut cetera in supervacuum diffundimus, ita philosophiam ipsam. Quemadmodum omnium rerum, sic literarum quoque intemperantia laboramus: non vitæ sed scholæ

discimus. In like manner Dr. H. More: 'Affect not *knowledge* any further than it is the food of *life* and *virtue*, and enables us to be and act as we ought; for the sweetness of knowledge, as that of meat, may tempt a man to such an *intemperance* that will as well breed diseases in the soul as the other in the body.'—*Let.* 2, in his *Life* by Ward, p. 248. Cf. pp. 62-64, 142-3 of the same. Cf. S. Bern. in *Cant. Serm.* 36, § 4.

A good understanding have all they that do His commandments, says the Psalmist, Psal. cxi. 10. As one* said well, ‘The best way to understand the mysterious and high discourse in the beginning of St. Paul’s Epistles, is to begin at the practice of those rules and precepts that are in the latter end of them.’ The way to attain to know more is to *receive the truth in the love of it*, and to obey what you know. The truth is, such truths as these will leave you inexcusable, even the most ignorant of you. You cannot but know, you hear often, that you ought to *love one another*, and to *fear GOD*, &c., and yet you never apply yourselves in earnest to the practice of these things,† as will appear to your own consciences, if they deal honestly with you in the particulars.

Honour all men.] Honour, in a narrower sense, is not a universal due to all, but peculiar to some kinds of persons. Of this the Apostle speaks, Rom. xiii. 8, *Honour to whom honour is due*, and that in different degrees, to parents, to masters, and other superiors. There is an honour that hath, as it were, Cæsar’s image and subscription on it, and so is particularly due to him; as here it follows, *Honour the king*. But there is something that goes not unfitly under the name of honour, generally due to every man without exception; and it consists, as all honour doth, partly in inward esteem of them, partly in outward behaviour towards them. And the former must be the ground and cause of the latter.

We owe not the same measure of esteem to all. We may, yea, we ought to take notice of the different outward quality, or inward graces and gifts of men; nor is it a fault to perceive the shallowness and weakness of men with whom we converse, and to esteem more highly those on whom God hath conferred more of such things as are truly worthy of esteem. But unto the meanest we do owe some measure of esteem: 1. Negatively. We are not to entertain despising, disdainful thoughts of any, how worthless and mean soever. As the admiring of men, the very best, is a foolish excess on the one hand, so the total contemning of any, the very poorest, is against this rule

* Cardinal Pole. See note above at p. 22.

† ‘We have a greater mind to dispute than to love; and to contend about what we know not than to practise the

far greater things we know, and which more directly tend to nourish and maintain the Divine life.’—Howe’s Preface to *The Blessedness of the Righteous*.

on the other; for that *contemning of vile persons*, the Psalmist speaks of, Psal. xv. 3, and commends, is the dislike and hatred of their sin, which is their vileness, and the not accounting them for outward respects, worthy of such esteem as their wickedness does, as it were, strip them of. 2. We are to observe and respect the smallest good that is in any. Although a Christian be never so base in his outward condition, in body or mind, of very mean intellectual and natural endowments, yet they who know the worth of spiritual things will esteem the grace of GOD that is in him, in the midst of all those disadvantages, as a pearl in a rough shell. Grace carries still its own worth, though under a deformed body and ragged garments, yea, though they have but a small measure of that either—the very lowest degree of grace; as a pearl of the least size, or a small piece of gold, yet men will not throw it away, but, as they say, the least shavings of gold are worth the keeping. The Jews would not willingly tread upon the smallest piece of paper in their way, but took it up; for possibly, said they, the name of GOD may be on it. Though there was a little superstition in this, yet truly there is nothing but good religion in it, if we apply it to men. Trample not on any; there may be some work of grace there that thou knowest not of. The name of GOD may be written upon that soul thou treadest on; it may be a soul that Christ thought so much of, as to give His precious blood for it; therefore despise it not. Much more, I say, if thou canst perceive any appearance that it is such a one, oughtest thou to esteem it. Wheresoever thou findest the least trait of Christ's image, if thou lovest Him, thou wilt honour it; or if there be nothing of this to be found in him thou lookest on, yet observe what common gift of any kind GOD hath bestowed on him, judgment, or memory, or faculty in his calling, or any such thing, for these in their degree are to be esteemed, and the person for them. And as there is no man so complete as to have the advantage in everything, so there is no man so low and unworthy but he hath something wherein he is preferable even to those that, in other respects, are much more excellent. Or imagine thou canst find nothing else in some men, yet honour thy own nature; esteem humanity in them, especially since humanity

is exalted in Christ to be one with the Deity : * account of each one as a man. And, along with this esteem goes : 3. That general good-will and affection due to men : whereas there are many who do not only outwardly express, but inwardly bear more regard to some dog or horse that they love, than to poor distressed men, and in so doing, do reflect dishonour upon themselves, and upon mankind.

The outward behaviour wherein we owe honour to all, is nothing but a conformity to this inward temper of mind ; for he that inwardly despiseth none, but esteemeth the good that is in the lowest, or at least esteemeth them in that they are men, and loves them as such, will accordingly use no outward sign of disdain of any ; he will not have a scornful eye, nor a reproachful tongue to move at any, not the meanest of his servants, nor the worst of his enemies ; but, on the contrary, will acknowledge the good that is in every man, and give unto all that outward respect that is convenient for them, and that they are capable of, and will be ready to do them good as he hath opportunity and ability.

But instead of walking by this rule of *honouring all men*, what is there almost to be found amongst men, but a perverse proneness to dishonour one another, and every man ready to dishonour all men, that he may honour himself, reckoning that what he gives to others is lost to himself, and taking what he detracts from others, as good booty to make up himself ? Set aside men's own interest, and that common civility which for their own credit they use one with another, and truly there will be found very little of this real respect to others, proceeding from obedience to GOD and love to men,—little disposition to be tender of their reputation and good name, and their welfare as of our own (for so the rule is), but we shall find mutual disesteem and defamation filling almost all societies.

And the bitter root of this iniquity is that wicked, accursed self-love which dwells in us. Every man is naturally his own grand idol, would be esteemed and honoured by any means, and to magnify that idol SELF, kills the good name and esteem of others in sacrifice to it. Hence, the narrow observing eye

* Quis potest odisse hominem, cujus odit Deum, et ita perdit quidquid quod naturam et similitudinem videt in humanitate Dei ? Re vera, qui odit illum, p. 145. odit Deum, et ita perdit quidquid quod facit.—S. Aug. *Man.* c. 26. Cf. above, p. 145.

and broad speaking tongue, upon anything that tends to the dishonour of others; and where other things fail, the disdainful upbraiding of their birth, or calling, or anything that comes next to hand, serves for a reproach. And hence arises a great part of the jars and strifes amongst men, the most part being drunk with an over-weening opinion of themselves, and the unworthiest the most so; *A fool, says Solomon, is wiser in his own conceit, than seven men that can render a reason,* Prov. xxvi. 16; and not finding others of their mind, this frets and troubles them. They take the ready course to deceive themselves; for they look with both eyes on the failings and defects of others, and scarcely give their good qualities half an eye, while, on the contrary, in themselves, they study to the full their own advantages, and their weaknessess and defects (as one says) they skip over, as children do the hard words in their lesson, that are troublesome to read; and making this uneven parallel, what wonder if the result be a gross mistake of themselves! Men over-rate themselves at home; they reckon that they ought to be regarded, and that their mind should carry it;* and when they come abroad, and are crossed in this, this puts them out of all temper.

But the humble man, as he is more conformable to this Divine rule, so he hath more peace by it: for he sets so low a rate upon himself in his own thoughts, that it is scarcely possible for any to go lower in judging of him; and therefore, as he pays due respect to others to the full, and gives no ground of quarrel that way, so he challenges no such debt to himself, and thus avoids the usual contests that arise in this. *Only by pride comes contention,* says Solomon, Prov. xiii. 10. A man that will walk abroad in a crowded street cannot choose but be often jostled; but he that contracts himself passes through more easily.

Study, therefore, this excellent grace of Humility; not the personated acting of it in appearance, which may be a chief agent for pride, but true lowliness of mind, which will make you to be nothing in your own eyes, and content to be so in the eyes of others. Then will you obey this word; you will esteem as is meet of all men, and not be troubled though all

* i.e. that their opinion and estimate of themselves should prevail and be accepted.

men disesteem you. As this Humility is a precious grace, so it is the preserver of all other graces, and without it, (if they could be without it,) they would be but as a box of precious powder carried in the wind without a cover, in danger of being scattered and blown away.* If you would have honour, there is an ambition both allowed you, and worthy of you, whosoever you are. *To them who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory and honour and immortality, GOD will give the recompense of eternal life, Rom. ii. 7. It is our ambition (φιλοτιμούμεθα) that we may be accepted of the Lord, 2 Cor. v. 9.* Other honour, though it have its Hebrew name from *weight*, is all too light, and weighs only with cares and troubles.

Love the brotherhood.] There is a love, as we said, due to all, included under that word of *honouring all*, but a peculiar love to our Christian brethren, whom the Apostle Paul calls by a like word, *the household of faith*, Gal. vi. 10.

Christian brethren are united by a *three-fold cord*; two of them are common to other men, but the third is the strongest, and theirs peculiarly. Their bodies are descended of the same man, and their souls of the same GOD; but their new life, by which they are most entirely *brethren*, is derived from the same God-man, Jesus Christ; yea, in Him they are all *one body*, receiving life from Him their glorious Head, who is called *the first-born among many brethren*, Rom. viii. 29. And as His unspeakable love was the source of this new being and fraternity, so doubtless it cannot but produce indissoluble love amongst them that are partakers of it. The Spirit of love and concord is that precious ointment that runs down from the head of our great High-priest to the skirts of His garment. The life of Christ and this law of love are combined, and cannot be severed. Can there be enmity betwixt those hearts that meet in Him? Why do you pretend yourselves Christians, and yet remain not only strangers to this love, but most contrary to it, *biters and devourers* one of another, and will not be convinced of the great guiltiness and uncomeliness of strifes and envyings

* Scientia etenim virtus est, humilitas autem custos virtutum. Restat ergo, ut in omne quod scit, sese mens deprimat, ne quod virtus scientiæ congregat, ventus elationis tollat. . . . Qui enim sine

humilitate virtutes congregat, in ventum pulverem portat; et unde aliquid ferre cernitur, inde deterius cæcatur.—S. Greg. M. *de Evang.* lib. i. *Hom.* vii. § 4.

amongst you? Is this the badge that Christ hath left His brethren, to wrangle and malign one another? Do you not know, on the contrary, that they are to be known by mutual love? *By this shall all men know that ye are My disciples, if ye have love one to another*, John xiii. 35. How often doth that Beloved Disciple press this! He drank deep of that well-spring of love that was in the breast on which he leaned, and (if they relate aright) he died exhorting this, *Love one another*.* Oh! that there were more of this love of Christ in our hearts, arising from the sense of His love to us! That would teach this mutual love more effectually, which the preaching of it may set before us, but, without that other teaching, cannot work within us. Why do we still hear these things in vain! Do we believe what the love of Christ did to us, and suffered for us? And will we do nothing for Him,—not forgive a shadow, a fancy of injury, much less a real one, for His sake, and love him that wronged us, whoever he be, but especially being one of our brethren in this spiritual sense?

Many are the duties of this peculiar fraternal love; that mutual converse and admonition, and reproof, and comforting, and other duties which are fallen into neglect, not only amongst formal, but even amongst real Christians. Let us entreat more of His Spirit who is Love, and that will amend this defect.

Fear GOD.] All the rules of equity and charity amongst men flow from a higher principle, and depend upon it; and there is no right observing of them without due regard to that; therefore this word, which expresses that principle of obedience, is fitly inserted amongst these rules; the first obligation of man being to the sovereign majesty of GOD who made him, and all the mutual duties of one to another being derived from that. A man may indeed, from moral principles, be of a mild

* 'Our Lord's great love to him seems to have inspired his soul with a larger and more generous charity than the rest: 'Tis the great vein that runs through his writings, and especially his Epistles, where he urges it as the great and peculiar law of Christianity, without which all other pretences to Christian religion are vain. And this was his practice to his dying day, as S. Jerome records, *Com. in Gal. vi.* When age and weakness grew upon him at

Ephesus, that he was no longer able to preach to the people, he used to be led to the church, and say no more to them than *Little children, love one another*. And when his auditors, wearied with the constant repetition of the same thing, asked him why he always spoke the same, he answered, Because it was the command of our Lord, and that if they did nothing else, this alone was enough.'—Dr. Cave's *Life of S. John*.

inoffensive carriage, and do civil right to all men; but this answers not the Divine rule even in these same things, after the way that it requires them. The spiritual and religious observance of these duties towards men springs from a respect to GOD, and terminates there too; it begins and ends in Him. And generally, all obedience to His commands, both such as regulate our behaviour towards Himself immediately, and such as relate to man, doth arise from a holy fear of His name. Therefore, this *fear of GOD*, upon which follows necessarily *the keeping of His commandments*, is given us by Solomon as the total sum of man's business and duty, Eccl. xii. 13, and so the way to solid happiness: he pronounces it *totum hominis, the whole of man*. After he had made his discoveries of *all things under the sun*, gone the whole circuit, and made an exact valuation, he found *all*, besides this, to amount to nothing *but vanity and vexation of spirit*. The account he gives of all other things was only for this purpose, to illustrate and establish this truth the more, and to make it the more acceptable; to be a repose after so much weariness and such a tedious journey, and so, as he speaks there, ver. 10, *a word of delight* as well as *a word of truth*; that the mind might sit down and quiet itself in this from the turmoil and pursuit of vanity, that keeps it busy to no purpose in all other things. But whereas there was emptiness and vanity, that is, just nothing, in all other things, there was not only something to be found, but everything in this one, this *fear of GOD*, and that *keeping of His commandments*, which is the proper fruit of that fear. All the repeated declaring of vanity in other things, both severally and altogether, in that Book of Ecclesiastes, are but so many strokes to drive and fasten this *nail* (as it is there called, ver. 11), this *word of wisdom*, which is the sum of all, and contains all the rest. So Job, after a large inquest for wisdom, searching for its vein, as men do for mines of silver and gold, hath the return of a *Non inventum est*, from all the creatures: *The sea says, it is not in me, &c.* But in the close, he finds it in this, *The fear of the Lord, that is wisdom, and to depart from evil that is understanding*, Job xxviii. 28.

Under this fear is comprehended all religion, both inward and outward, all the worship and service of GOD, and all the observance of His commandments, which is there (Eccl. xii.)

and elsewhere, expressly joined with it, and therefore is included in it when it is not expressed. So Job xxviii. as above, *To depart from evil is understanding*, repeating in effect the former words by these. So Psal. cxi. 10. It hath in it all holiness and obedience; they grow all out of it. It is the *beginning*, and it is *the top or consummation of wisdom*, for the word signifies both.

Think it not, then, a trivial, common matter to speak or hear of this subject; but take it as our great lesson and business here on earth. The best proficients in it have yet need to learn it better, and it requires our incessant diligence and study all our days.

This *fear* hath in it chiefly these things: 1. A reverential esteem of the majesty of GOD, which is a main, fundamental thing in religion, and moulds the heart most powerfully to the obedience of His will. 2. A firm belief of the purity of GOD, and of His power and justice; that He loves holiness and hates all sin, and can and will punish it. 3. A right apprehension of the bitterness of His wrath and the sweetness of His love; that His incensed anger is the most terrible and intolerable thing in the world, absolutely the most fearful of all evils; and, on the other side, that His love is of all good things the best, the most blessed and delightful, yea, the only blessedness. Life is the name of the sweetest good we know, and yet His *loving-kindness is better than life*, says David, Psal. lxiii. 3. 4. It supposes, likewise, sovereign love to GOD, for His own infinite excellency and goodness. 5. From all these spring a most earnest desire to please Him in all things, and an unwillingness to offend Him in the least, and, because of our danger through the multitude and strength of temptations and our own weakness, a continual self-suspicion, a holy fear lest we should sin, a care and watchfulness that we sin not, and deep sorrow, and speedy returning and humbling before Him, when we have sinned.

There is, indeed, a base kind of fear, which, in the usual distinction, they call *servile fear*; but to account all fear of the judgments and wrath of GOD a servile fear, or, (not to stand upon words,) to account such a fear improper to the children of GOD, I conceive is a wide mistake. Indeed, to fear the punishments of sin, without regard to GOD, and His

justice as the inflicter of them, or to forbear to sin only because of those punishments, so that if a man can be secured from those, he hath no other respect to GOD that would make him fear to offend: this is the character of a slavish and base mind.

Again, for a man so to apprehend wrath in relation to himself as to be still under the horror of it in that notion, and not to apprehend redemption and deliverance by Jesus Christ, is to be under that *spirit of bondage* which the Apostle speaks of, Rom. viii. 15. And though a child of GOD may for a time be under such fear, yet the lively actings of faith and persuasion of GOD'S love, and the feeling of reflex love to Him in the soul, do cast it out, according to that word of the Apostle, 1 John iv. 18, *True (or perfect) love casteth out fear*. But to apprehend the punishments which the Lord threatens against sin as certain and true, and to consider the greatness and fearfulness of them, especially the terror of the Lord's anger and hot displeasure, above all punishments, and (though not only, no, nor chiefly for these, yet) in contemplation of these, as very great and weighty, to be afraid to offend that GOD who hath threatened such things as the just reward of sin; this, I say, is not incongruous with the estate of the sons of GOD, yea, it is their duty and their property even thus to fear.

1. This is the very end for which GOD hath published these intimations of His justice, and hath threatened to punish men if they transgress, to the end they may fear and not transgress: so that not to look upon them thus and not to be affected with them answerably to their design, were a very grievous sin; a slight and disregard put upon the words of the great GOD.

2. Above all others, the children of GOD have the rightest and clearest knowledge of GOD, and the deepest belief of His word, and therefore they cannot choose but be afraid, and more afraid than all others, to fall under the stroke of His hand. They know more of the greatness, and truth, and justice of GOD than others, and therefore they fear when He threatens. *My flesh trembleth for fear of Thee* (says David), *and I am afraid of Thy judgments*, Psal. cxix. 120. Yea, they tremble when they hear the sentence against others, or

see it executed upon them; it moves them when they see public executions; *Knowing the terror of the Lord, we persuade men*, says St. Paul, 2 Cor. v. 11; and they cry out with Moses, Psalm xc. 11, *Who knows the power of Thine anger? Even according to Thy fear, so is Thy wrath!* It is not an imagination or invention, that makes men fear more than they need. His wrath is as terrible as any that fear it most can apprehend, and beyond that. So that this doth not only consist with the estate of the saints, but is their very character, *to tremble at the word* of their Lord. The rest neglect what He says, till death and judgment seize on them; but the godly know and believe, that *it is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living GOD*, Heb. x. 31.

And though they have firm promises, and a *kingdom that cannot be shaken*, yet they have still this *grace by which they serve GOD acceptably with reverence and godly fear*; even in this consideration, that *our GOD*, even He that is ours by peculiar covenant, *is a consuming fire*, Heb. xii. 28, 29.

But indeed, together with this, yea, more than by this, they are persuaded to fear the Lord, by the sense of His great love to them, and by the power of that love that works in them towards Him, and is wrought in them by His. *They shall fear the Lord and His goodness in the latter days*, Hos. iii. 5. In those days, His goodness shall manifest itself more than before; the beams of His love shall break forth more abundantly in the days of the Gospel, and shall beat more direct and hotter on the hearts of men; and then they shall fear Him more because they shall love Him more.

This fear agrees well both with faith and love, yea, they work this fear. Compare Psal. xxxi. 23, with Psal. xxxiv. 9, and that same Psal. xxxiv. ver. 8, with ver. 9, and Psal. cxii. ver. 1, with ver. 7. The heart touched with the loadstone of Divine love ever trembles with this godly fear, and still looks fixedly by faith to that Star of Jacob, Jesus Christ, who guides it to the haven of happiness.*

The looking upon GOD in the face of Jesus Christ takes off that terror of His countenance that drives men from Him; and in the smiles of His love that appear through Christ there is such a power as unites their hearts to Him, but *unites* them so,

* Cf. above p. 23, and vol. ii. p. 203.

as to fear His name, as the Psalmist's prayer is, *O knit my heart unto Thee, that I may fear Thy Name!* Psal. lxxxvi. 11. He puts such a *fear in their hearts* as will not cause them to depart from, yea, causes *that they shall not depart from Him*, Jer. xxxii. 40.

And this is the purest and highest kind of godly fear, that springs from love: and though it excludes not the consideration of wrath, as terrible in itself, and even some fear of it, yet it may surmount it: and doubtless, where much of that love possesses the heart, it will sometimes drown the other consideration, so that it shall scarcely be sensible at all, and will constantly set it aside, and will persuade a man purely for the goodness and loveliness of GOD, to fear to offend Him, though there were no interest at all in it of a man's own personal misery or happiness.

But do we thus fear the Lord our GOD? What mean, then, our oaths, and excesses, and uncleanness, our covetousness, and generally, our unholy and unchristian conversation? This fear would make men tremble, so as to shake them out of their profane customs and to shake their beloved sins out of their bosoms. The knowledge of the HOLY ONE causes fear of Him, Prov. ix. 10.

But alas! we know Him not, and therefore we fear Him not. Knew we but a little of the great majesty of GOD, how holy He is, and how powerful a punisher of unholiness, we should not dare provoke Him thus, who *can kill both body and soul and cast them into hell*, as our Saviour tells us, Matt. x. 28. And He will do so with both, if we will not fear Him because He can do so; and it is told us that we may fear, and so not feel, this heavy wrath. A little lively, spiritual knowledge would go far and work much, which a great deal of knowledge such as ours is, doth not. Some such word as that of Joseph would do much, being engraven on the heart, *Shall I do this evil and sin against GOD?* Gen. xxxix. 9. It would make a man be at no more liberty to sin in secret than in public; no, not to dispense with the sin of his thoughts, more than of the openest words or actions. If some grave wise man did see our secret behaviour and our thoughts, should we not look more narrowly to them, and not suffer such rovings and follies in ourselves? Surely, therefore, we forget GOD's eye,

which we could not, if we thought aright of it, but should respect it more than if all men did see within us.

Nor is this the main point to be pressed upon the ungodly only, but the children of GOD themselves have much need to be put in mind of this fear, and to increase in it. How often do they abuse the indulgence of so loving a Father! They have not their thoughts so constantly full of Him, are not *in His fear* (as Solomon advises) *all the day long*, Prov. xxiii. 17, but many times slip out of His directing hand, and wander from Him, and do not so deeply fear His displeasure and so watch over all their ways as becomes them: they do not keep close by Him, and wait on His voice, and obey it constantly, and are not so humbled and afflicted in their repentings for sin as this fear requires, but only in a slight and superficial degree. They offer much lip-labour, which is but dead service to the living GOD. These are things, my beloved, that concern us much, and that we ought seriously to lay to heart; for even they who are freed from condemnation, yet if they will walk fearlessly and carelessly at any time, He hath ways enough to make them smart for it. And if there were nothing more, should it not wound them deeply to think how they requite so great, so unspeakable love?

Honour the king.] This was the particular that the Apostle pressed and insisted on before; and here he repeats it as a special duty of the Second Table, and a vindication of religion, which is wrongfully blamed in this point; but of this before.

This is out of question in the general; only in the measure and rule of it is the difference. And surely they cannot possibly be satisfied, who are so drunk with power as to admit of none at all,—no measure nor rate for it, no banks nor channel for those rivers, the hearts and wills of kings to run in, but think that if they like to run over all, they may.

This is such a wild conceit as destroys both all law of reason in human societies, and all religious obligation to the laws of GOD. For the qualification and measure I shall mention no other than that in the text, that it be always regulated by what here goes before it, *the fear of GOD*; that we never think of any such obedience and honour due to kings as crosseth that *fear* which is due to GOD. Let kings, and sub-

jects, and all know, that they are absolutely bound to this. It is spoken to kings, Psal. ii. 11, *Serve the Lord in fear*; and to all men, Psal. ix. 6, *Fear before Him, all the earth, for He is great, and greatly to be praised; He is to be feared above all gods.* What is man in respect of Him? Shall a worm, *whose breath is in his nostrils*, stand in competition with the ever-living GOD? Shall an earthen *potsherd strive with his Maker? Let the potsherds strive with the potsherds of the earth*;—let them work one against another, and try which is hardest, and so they shall often break each other;—but, *Woe to him that striveth with his Maker*, Isa. xlv. 9. There is nothing here but certain perishing. As we conclude in the question with the Church of Rome, of the honour due to saints and angels, honour let them have, with good reason, but not Divine honour, not GOD'S peculiar; so in this, *Give to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's*, but withal, still, *Give to GOD the things that are GOD'S.*

But it is a miserable estate of a kingdom, when debates on this head arise and increase; and their happiness is when kings and people concur to honour GOD; *For those that honour Him He will honour, and whosoever despises Him shall be despised*, 1 Sam. ii. 30.

Ver. 18. Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19. For this is thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward GOD, endure grief, suffering wrongfully.

20. For what glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? But if when ye do well and suffer for it, ye take it patiently; this is acceptable with GOD.

THY WORD (says the Psalmist) *is a light to my feet, and a lamp to my paths*, Psal. cxix. 105;—not only a light to please his eyes, by the excellent truths and comforts that are in it, but withal a light to direct his feet in the precepts and rules of life that it gives; not only to inform and delight his mind, but also to order his course. That philosopher was deservedly commended, who drew knowledge most this way, and therefore was said to have brought Philosophy from the clouds to dwell amongst men, calling it from empty speculations to a practical strain.* Thus we are taught in spiritual knowledge by the

* Cicero's commendation of SOCRATES, *Tusc.* v. 4, and *Acad.* i. 4. Cf. Sen. *Ep.* 71, and S. Aug. *de Civ. Dei*, viii. 3.

word of GOD. The Son, the eternal Word, when He came to dwell with men, and so brought life, and wisdom, and all blessings from the heavens down unto them, taught them both by His doctrine and perfect example, how to walk; and His Apostles do, conformably, aim at this in their holy writings, joining with the mysteries of faith those rules of life which show men the straight way to happiness.

And as it is spoken of the largeness of Solomon's wisdom, that *he spake of all trees, from the cedar in Lebanon to the hyssop that grows out of the wall* (1 Kings iv. 33), so in this we may see the perfection of the holy Scriptures, that they give those directions that are needful to all ranks and sorts of men. They speak not only of the duties of kings, how they ought to behave themselves on their thrones, and the duty of their subjects towards them in that dignity, and how ministers and others ought to carry themselves in the *house of GOD*, but they come into private houses, and give economic rules for them; teaching parents, and children, and masters, yea, and servants, how to acquit themselves one to another. Thus here, *Servants, be subject to your masters.*

As this is a just plea for all the people of GOD, that they have a right to the use of this Book, being so useful for all sorts, and that they ought not to be debarred from it; so it is a just plea against a great part of those that debar themselves the use of it through slothfulness and earthly-mindedness, seeing it is so contempered that there may be many things, yea, all the main things in it profitable for all, fitted to the use of the lowest estate and lowest capacities of men. Yea, it takes (as we see) particular notice of their condition; stoops down to take the meanest servant by the hand, to lead him in the way to Heaven; and not only in that part of it which is the general way of Christians, but even in those steps of it that lie within the walk of their particular calling; as here, teaching not only the duties of a Christian, but of a *Christian servant.*

Obs. 1. The Scriptures are a deep that few can wade far into, and none can wade through, as those waters in the Vision of Ezekiel, xlvi. 5; but yet all may come to the brook and refresh themselves with drinking of the streams of its living water, and go in a little way, according to their strength

and stature.* Now this, I say, may be spoken to our shame, and I wish it might shame you to amendment, that so many of you either use not the Scriptures at all, or, in using, do not use them; you turn over the leaves, and, it may be, run through the lines, and consider not what they advise you. Masters, learn your part, and servants too; hearken what they say to you, for they pass not you by, they vouchsafe to speak to you too, but you vouchsafe not to hear them and observe their voice. How can you think that the reading of this Book concerns you not, when you may hear it address such particular directions to you? Wisdom goes not only to the gates of palaces but to the common gates of the cities, and to the public highways, and calls to the simplest that she may make them wise. Besides that you dishonour GOD, you prejudice yourselves; for does not that neglect of GOD and His word justly procure the disorder and disobedience of your servants towards you, as a fit punishment from His righteous hand, although they are unrighteous, and are procuring further judgment to themselves in so doing? And not only thus is your neglect of the Word a cause of your trouble by the justice of GOD, but it is so in regard of the nature of the Word, inasmuch as if you would respect it and make use of it in your houses, it would teach your servants to respect and obey you, as here you see it speaks for you; and therefore you wrong both it and yourselves when you silence it in your families.

Obs. 2. The Apostle having spoken of subjection to public authority, adds this of subjection to private domestic authority. It is a thing of much concernment, the right ordering of families; for all other societies, civil and religious, are made up of these. Villages, and cities, and churches, and commonwealths, and kingdoms, are but a collection of families; and therefore such as these are, for the most part, such must the whole societies predominantly be. One particular house is but a very small part of a kingdom, yet the wickedness and lewdness of that house, be it but of the meanest in it, of servants one or more, though it seem but a small thing, yet

* Cf. S. Greg. *Præf. ad Moral. in Job*: Divinus enim sermo, sicut mysteriis prudentes exercet, sic plerumque superficie simplices refovet. . . . Quasi quidam quippe est fluvius, ut ita dixerim, planus et altus, in quo agnus ambulet et elephas natet. See also S. Bern. *De Diversis Serm* 94, 2.

goes in to make up that heap of sin which provokes the wrath of GOD, and draws on public calamity.

And this particularly, when it declines into disorder, proves a public evil. When servants grow generally corrupt, and disobedient, and unfaithful, though they be the lowest part, yet the whole body of a commonwealth cannot but feel very much the evil of it; as a man does when his legs and feet grow diseased and begin to fail him.

We have here: 1. Their duty. 2. The due extent of it. 3. The right principle of it.

1. Their duty, *Be subject*. Keep your order and station under your masters, and that *with fear*, and inward reverence of mind and respect to them; for that is the very life of all obedience. Then their obedience hath in it, diligent doing and patient suffering; both these are in that word, *Be subject*. Do faithfully to your utmost that which is entrusted to you, and obey all their just commands, for action indeed goes no further; but suffer patiently even their unjust rigours and severities. And this being the harder part of the two, and yet a part that the servants of those times bore, many of them being more hardly and slavishly used than any with us, especially those that were Christian servants under unchristian masters, therefore the Apostle insists most on this. And this is the extent of the obedience here required: that it be paid to all kinds of masters, *not to the good only, but also to the evil*; not only to obey, but to suffer, and suffer patiently, and not only deserved but even wrongful and unjust punishment.

Now because this particular concerns Servants, let them reflect upon their own carriage and examine it by this rule; and truly the greatest part of them will be found very unconfordable to it, being either closely* fraudulent and deceitful, or grossly stubborn and disobedient, abusing the lenity and mildness of their masters, or murmuring at their just severity. So far are they from the patient endurance of the least undue word of reproof, much less of sharper punishment, either truly, or, in their opinion, undeserved. And truly, if any who profess religion dispense themselves in this,† they mistake the matter

* *Closely*, i.e. *secretly*.

† i.e. give themselves dispensation from this obligation to subjection.

very much; for religion ties them the more, whether children or servants, to be most submissive and obedient even to the worst kind of parents and masters; always *in the Lord*, not obeying any unjust command, though they may and ought to suffer patiently (as it is here) their unjust reproofs or punishments.

But on the other side, this does not justify, nor at all excuse, the unmerciful austerities and unbridled passion of masters; it is still *a perverseness* and *crookedness* in them, as the word is here, *σκολιοῖς*, and must have its own name, and shall have its proper reward from the sovereign Master and Lord of all the world.

2. There is here also the due extent of this duty, namely, *To the froward*. It is a more deformed thing to have a distorted, crooked mind, or a froward spirit, than any crookedness of the body. How can he that hath servants under him expect their obedience, when he cannot command his own passion, but is a slave to it? And unless much conscience of duty possess servants (more than is commonly to be found with them), it cannot but work a master into much disaffection and disesteem with them, when he is of a turbulent spirit, *a troubler of his own house*, embittering his affairs and commands with rigidness and passion, and ready to take things by that side which may offend and trouble him, thinking his servant slights his call, when he may as well think he hears him not, and upon every light occasion, real or imagined, flying out into reproachful speeches, or proud threats, contrary to the Apostle St. Paul's rule, which he sets over against the duty of servants: *Forbearing threatening, knowing that your Master also is in heaven, and that there is no respect of persons with Him*, Eph. vi. 9. Think, therefore, when you shall appear before the judgment seat of GOD, that your carriage shall be examined and judged as well as theirs; and think, that though we regard much those differences of masters and servants, yet they are nothing with GOD, they vanish away in His presence.

Consider *who made thee to differ*. Might He not, with a turn of His hand, have made your stations just contrary, have made thee the servant, and thy servant the master? But we willingly forget those things that should compose our minds to humility and meekness, and blow them up with such fancies

as please and feed our natural vanity, and make us somebody in our own account.

However that Christian servant who falls into the hands of a froward master will not be beaten out of his station and duty of obedience by all the hard and wrongful usage he meets with, but will take that as an opportunity of exercising the more obedience and patience, and will be the more cheerfully patient because of his innocency, as the Apostle here exhorts.

Men do indeed look sometimes upon this as a just plea for impatience, that they suffer unjustly, which yet is very ill logic; for, as the philosopher said, 'Would any man that frets because he suffers unjustly, wish to deserve it, that he might be patient?*' Now, to hear them, they seem to speak so, when they exclaim, that the thing that vexeth them most is, that they have not deserved any such thing as is inflicted on them. Truly desert of punishment may make a man more silent upon it, but innocence, rightly considered, makes him more patient. Guiltiness stops a man's mouth, indeed, in suffering, but surely it doth not quiet his mind; on the contrary, it is that which mainly disturbs and grieves him; it is the sting of suffering, as sin is said to be of death, 1 Cor. xv. 56. And therefore, when there is no guilt, the pain of sufferings cannot but be much abated; yea, the Apostle here declares, that to suffer undeservedly, and withal patiently, is glorious to a man and acceptable to GOD. It is commendable, indeed, to be truly patient even in deserved sufferings, but the deserving them tarnishes the lustre of that patience, and makes it look more like constraint; which is the Apostle's meaning, in preferring spotless suffering much before it. And this is indeed the true *glory* of it, that *it pleaseth GOD* (so it is rendered in the close of the 20th verse for the other word, *glory*, which is used in the beginning of it); it is a pleasing thing in GOD'S eyes, and therefore He will *thank* a man for it, as the word is, *χαρίς παρά Θεῷ*. Though we owe all our patience under all kinds of afflictions, as a duty to Him, and though this grace is His own gift, yet He hath obliged Himself by His royal word, not only to accept of it, but to praise it, and to reward it in His children. Though they lose their thanks at the world's hands, and be

* When Socrates' wife lamented that he was about to die undeservedly, he said, 'Would you then have had me deserve death?'—*Diog. Laërt.*

rather scoffed at and taunted in all their doings and sufferings, it is no matter; they can expect no other there; but their *reward is on high*, in the sure and faithful hand of their Lord.

How often do men work earnestly, and do and suffer much for the uncertain wages of glory and thanks amongst men! And how many of them fall short of their reckoning, either dying before they came to that state where they think to find it, or not finding it where they looked for it, and so they live but to feel the pain of their disappointment! Or, if they do attain their end, such glory and thanks as men have to give them, what amounts it to? Is it any other than a handful of nothing, the breath of their mouths, and themselves much like it, a vapour dying out in the air? The most real thanks they give, their solidest rewards, are but such as a man cannot take home with him; or if they go so far with him, yet, at furthest he must leave them at the door, when he is to enter his everlasting home. All the riches, and palaces, and monuments of honour that he had, and that are erected to him after death, as if he had then some interest in them, reach him not at all. Enjoy them who will, he does not, *he hath no portion of all that is done under the sun*; his own end is to him the end of the world.

But he that would have abiding glory and thanks must turn his eye another way for them. All men desire glory, but they know neither what it is, nor how it is to be sought. He is upon the only right bargain of this kind, *whose praise* (according to St. Paul's word) *is not of men, but of GOD*, Rom. ii. 29. If men commend him not, he accounts it no loss, nor any gain if they do; for he is bound for a country where that coin goes not, and whither he cannot carry it, and therefore he gathers it not. That which he seeks in all is, that he may be approved and accepted of GOD, whose thanks is no less, to the least of those He accepts, than a crown of unfading glory. Not a poor *servant* that fears His name, and is obedient and patient for His sake, but shall be so rewarded.

There be some kind of graces and good actions, which men (such as regard any grace) take special notice of, and commend highly,—such as are of a magnificent and remarkable nature, as martyrdom, or doing or suffering for religion in some public

way. There be again other obscure graces, which, if men despise not, yet they esteem not much, as meekness, gentleness, and patience under private crosses, known to few or none. And yet these are of great account with GOD, and therefore should be so with us: these are indeed of more universal use, whereas the other are but for high times, as we say, for rare occasions: these are everyone's work, but few are called to the acting of the other. And the least of these graces shall not lose its reward, in whose person soever, as St. Paul tells us, speaking of this same subject: *Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free*, Eph. vi. 8.

This is the bounty of that great Master we serve. For what are we and all we can do, that there should be the name of a reward attached to it? Yet He keeps all in reckoning; not a poor lame prayer, not a tear, nor a sigh poured forth before Him, shall go to loss. Not any cross, whether from His own hand immediately, or coming through men's hands, that is taken, what way soever it come, as out of His hand, and carried patiently, yea, and welcomed, and embraced for His sake, but He observes our so entertaining of it. Not an injury that the meanest servant bears Christianly, but goes upon account with Him. And He sets them down so, as that they bear much value through His estimate and way of reckoning of them, though in themselves they are all less than nothing; as a worthless counter stands for hundreds or thousands, according to the place you set it in. Happy they who have to deal with such a Lord, and who, be they servants or masters, are vowed servants to Him! *When He comes, His reward shall be with Him*, Rev. 'xxii. 12.

The 3rd thing is, the Principle of this obedience and patience. *For conscience towards GOD*. This imports, first, the knowledge of GOD, and of His will in some due measure, and then a conscientious respect unto Him and His will so known, taking it for their only rule in doing and suffering.

Observe, 1. This declares to us the freeness of the grace of GOD in regard to men's outward quality, that He doth often bestow the riches of His grace upon persons of mean condition. It is supposed here, that this *conscience towards GOD*, this saving knowledge and fear of His name, is to be found in

Servants: therefore the Apostle takes them within the address of his Letter amongst those who are *elect, according to the foreknowledge of GOD* (ch. i. ver. 2), and sharers of those dignities he mentions (ch. ii. ver. 9), *a chosen generation*. The honour of a spiritual royalty may be concealed under the meanness of a servant; and this grace may be conferred upon the servant and denied to the master, as is here supposed. It may fall out, that a perverse, crooked-minded master may have a servant uprightly minded, being endowed with a tender conscience towards GOD. And thus the Lord does to counteract the pride of man, and to set off the lustre of His own free grace. He hath all to choose from, and yet chooses where men would least imagine. See Matt. xi. 25; 1 Cor. i. 27.

Observe, 2. Grace finds a way to exert itself in every estate where it exists, and regulates the soul according to the particular duties of that estate. Whether it find a man high or low, a master or a servant, it requires not a change of his station, but works a change on his heart, and teaches him how to live in it. The same spirit that makes a Christian master pious, and gentle, and prudent in commanding, makes a Christian servant faithful, and obsequious, and diligent in obeying. A skilful engraver makes you a statue indifferently of wood, or stone, or marble, as they are put into his hand; so Grace forms a man to a Christian way of walking in any estate. There is a way for him in the meanest condition to glorify GOD, and to adorn the profession of religion; no estate so low as to be shut out from that; and a rightly informed and rightly affected conscience towards GOD shows a man that way, and causes him to walk in it. As the astrologers say, that the same stars that made Cyrus to be chosen king amongst the armies of men when he came to be a man, made him to be chosen king amongst the shepherd's children when he was a child; thus Grace will have its proper operation in every estate.

In this, men readily deceive themselves; they can do anything well in imagination, better than the real task that is in their hands. They presume that they could do GOD good service in some place of command, who serve Him not as becomes them in that which is by far the easier, the place of obeying, wherein He hath set them. They think that if they had the ability and opportunities that some men have, they

would do much more for religion, and for GOD, than they do; and yet they do nothing but spoil a far lower part than that, which is their own, and is given them to study and act aright in. But our folly and self-ignorance abuse us: it is not our part to choose what we should be, but to be what we are, to His glory who gives us to be such.* Be thy condition never so mean, yet thy *conscience towards GOD*, if it be within thee, will find itself work in that. If it be little that is entrusted to thee, in regard of thy outward condition, or any other way, *be thou faithful in that little*, as our Saviour speaks, and thy reward shall not be little: *He shall make thee ruler over much*, Matt. xxv. 23.

Observe, 3. As a corrupt mind debaseth the best and most excellent callings and actions, so the lowest are raised above themselves, and ennobled by a spiritual mind. Magistrates or ministers, though their calling and employments be high, may have low intentions, and draw down their high calling to those low intentions; they may seek themselves and their own selfish ends, and neglect GOD. And a sincere Christian may elevate his low calling by this *conscience towards GOD*, observing His will, and intending His glory in it. An eagle may fly high, and yet have its eye down upon some carrion on the earth: † even so, a man may be standing on the earth, and on some low part of it, and yet have his eye upon heaven, and be contemplating it. That which men cannot at all see in one another is the very thing that is most considerable in their actions, namely, the principle whence they flow, and the end

* S. F. de Sales says: 'We sometimes amuse ourselves with the idea of being good angels, when we are not endeavouring to make ourselves even good men. Let us be what we are; and let us do honour to the Master-workman, whose work we are. Let us be what God wills, no matter what, provided we be at His service, and let us not be what we will contrary to His intention; for were we the highest of Heavenly creatures, what would that profit us, if we were not according to the will of God? Do not desire to be otherwise than you are, but be content to be what you are. Occupy your thoughts in perfecting yourself therein, and in bearing the crosses, little or great, which you find there; and

believe me, here is the great motto of spiritual life, though little understood. Everyone loves according to his own liking; few love according to their duty and the liking of our Lord. What is the use of building castles in the air, when we must live upon the earth?'—*La Vraie et Solide Piété*, pte. i. c. 17, 29, 70. *Practical Piety*, pp. 38, 42, 257.

† Sicut ex alto aquila ad escam descendit, sic homo de alto bonæ conversationis per vanæ gloriæ appetitum ad inferiora demergitur.—*De Modo bene Vivendi*, c. 38, inter Op. S. Bern. vol. iii. col. 1342. Cf. in Psal. xc. Serm. 3, 5; Fuller's *Holy State*, b. 3. c. 17. max. 2; and Leighton, vol. ii. p. 415.

to which they tend. This is the form* and life of actions,—that by which they are earthly or heavenly. Whatsoever be the matter of them, the spiritual mind hath that alchemy indeed of turning base metals into gold,—earthly employments into heavenly.† The handy-work of an artisan or servant who regards GOD, and eyes Him even in that work, is much holier than the *prayer of a hypocrite*; and a servant's enduring the private wrongs and harshness of a froward master, bearing it patiently *for conscience towards GOD*, is more acceptable to GOD than the sufferings of such as may endure much for a public *good cause* without a good and upright heart.

This habitude and posture of the heart towards GOD the Apostle St. Paul presses much upon servants, Eph. vi. 8, as being very needful to allay the hard labour and harsh usage of many of them. This is the way to make all easy, to undergo it for GOD. There is no pill so bitter, but respect and love to GOD will sweeten it. And this is a very great refreshment and comfort to Christians in the mean estate of servants or other labouring men, that they may offer up their hardship and bodily labour as a sacrifice to GOD and say:—‘Lord, this is the station wherein Thou hast set me in the world, and I desire to serve Thee in it. What I do is for Thee, and what I suffer I desire to bear patiently and cheerfully for Thy sake, in submission and obedience to Thy will.’

* ‘*Form* in other creatures is a thing are distinguished into their kinds.—proportionable unto the *soul* of living Hooker, *E. P.* b. i. c. 3. § 4. creatures. According to the diversity † The author alludes to ‘*The Elixir*’ of inward forms, things of the world of his favourite poet, George Herbert:—

‘Teach me, my GOD and King,
In all things Thee to see,
And what I do in any thing,
To do it as for Thee.

‘All may of Thee partake:
Nothing can be so mean,
Which with this tincture—FOR THY SAKE—
Will not grow bright and clean.

‘A servant with this clause
Makes drudgery Divine:
Who sweeps a room, as for Thy laws,
Makes that and the action fine.

‘This is the famous Stone
That turneth all to Gold;
For that which GOD doth touch and own
Cannot for less be told.’

For conscience.] In this there is: 1. A reverent compliance with GOD's disposal, both in allotting to them that condition of life, and in particularly choosing their master for them; though possibly not the mildest and pleasantest, yet the fittest for their good. There is much in firmly believing this, and in heartily submitting to it; for we would, naturally, rather carve for ourselves and shape our own estate to our mind, which is a most foolish, yea, an impious presumption: as if we were wiser than He who hath done it, and as if there were not as much, and, it may be, more possibility of true contentment in a mean, than in a far higher condition! The master's mind is often more toiled than the servant's body. But if our condition be appointed us, at least we would have a voice in some qualifications and circumstances of it; as in this, if a man must serve, he would wish willingly that GOD would allot him a meek, gentle master. And so, in other things, if we must be sick, we would be well accommodated and not want helps; but to have sickness, and want means and friends for our help, this we cannot think of without horror. But this submission to GOD is never right, till all that concerns us be given up into His hand, to do with it, and with every article and circumstance of it, as seems good in His eyes. 2. In this *conscience* there is a religious and observant respect to the rule which GOD hath set men to walk by in that condition; so that their obedience depends not upon any external inducement, failing when that fails, but flows from an inward impression of the law of GOD upon the heart. Thus, a servant's obedience and patience will not be pinned to the goodness and equity of his master, but when that fails, will subsist upon its own inward ground; and so generally in all other estates. This is the thing that makes sure and constant walking: makes a man *step even* in the ways of GOD. When a man's obedience springs from that unfailing, unchanging reason, the command of GOD, it is a natural motion, and therefore keeps on, and rather grows than abates; but they who are moved by things outward must often fail, because those things are not constant in their moving; as, for instance, when a people are much acted by the spirit of their rulers, as the Jews when they had good kings. 3. In this *conscience* there is a tender care of the glory of GOD and the adornment of religion,

which the Apostle premised before these particular duties, as a thing to be specially regarded in them. The honour of our Lord's name is that which we should set up as the mark to aim all our actions at. But alas ! either we think not on it, or our hearts slip out and start from their aim, *like bows of deceit*, as the word is, Psal. lxxviii. 57. 4. There is the comfortable persuasion of GOD's approbation and acceptance (as it is expressed in the following verse, of which somewhat before), and the hope of that reward He hath promised, as it is, Col. iii. 24, *Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance, for ye serve the Lord Christ. No less than the inheritance !* So then, such servants as these are *sons and heirs of GOD, co-heirs with Christ*. Thus he that is a servant may be in a far more excellent state than his master. The servant may hope for, and aim at a kingdom, while the master is embracing a dunghill. And such a one will think highly of GOD's free grace, and the looking ever to that Inheritance makes him go cheerfully through all pains and troubles here as *light and momentary*,* and not worth the naming in comparison of *that Glory that shall be revealed*. In the meantime, the best and most easy condition of the sons of GOD cannot satisfy them, nor stay their sighs and groans, waiting and longing for that day of their full redemption, Rom. viii. 16-23.

Now this is the great rule, not only for servants, but for all the servants of GOD in what state soever, *to set the Lord always before them*, Psal. xvi. 8, and to study with St. Paul, *to have a conscience void of offence towards GOD and man*, Acts xxiv. 16 ; to eye, and to apply constantly to their actions and their inward thoughts, the command of GOD ; to walk by that rule abroad, and at home in their houses, and in the several ways of their calling (as an exact workman is ever and anon laying his rule to his work and squaring it) ; and *for the conscience they have towards GOD*, to do and suffer His will cheerfully in everything, being content that He choose their condition and their trials for them ; only desirous to be assured, that He hath chosen them for His own, and given them a right to the *glorious liberty of the sons of GOD*, Rom. viii. 21 ; still endeavouring to walk in that way which leads to it, overlooking *this moment*, and all things in it, accounting it a very indifferent

* Momentaneum et leve. 2 Cor. iv. 17.

matter what is their outward state here in *this moment*, provided they may be happy in eternity.* Whether we be high or low here, bond or free, it imports little, seeing that all these differences will be so quickly at an end, and there shall not be so much as any track or footstep of them left. With particular men, it is so in their graves; you may distinguish the greater from the less by their tombs, but by their dust you cannot:† and with the whole world it shall be so in the end. All monuments and palaces, as well as cottages, shall be made fire, as our Apostle tells us: *The elements shall melt with fervent heat, and all the works therein shall be burnt up*, 2 Pet. iii. 10.

- Ver. 21. For even hereunto were ye called; because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow His steps;
 22. Who did no sin, neither was guile found in His mouth;
 23. Who when He was reviled, reviled not again; when He suffered, He threatened not; but committed *Himself* to Him that judgeth righteously.

THE rules that GOD hath set men to live by are universally just, and there is a universal obligation upon all men to obey them; but as they are particularly addressed to His own people in His word, *they*, out of question, are particularly bound to yield obedience, and have many peculiar persuasives to it, not extending to others, which are therefore usually represented to them, and pressed upon them in the Holy Scriptures. Thus the preface of the Law runs to Israel: Besides that *I am Jehovah*, and have supreme power to give men laws, it is added, *I am thy GOD*, especially thy Deliverer from slavery and bondage, and so have a peculiar right to thy obedience, Deut. vii. 6. Thus the Apostle here urgeth this point in hand, of inoffensiveness and patience, particularly in Christian servants, but so as it fits every Christian in his station, *For hereunto*, says he, *ye are called*. Whatsoever others do, though they think it too strait a rule, yet you are tied to it by

* The author speaks to the same purpose in a letter to a friend, the following passage being all of it that is now extant: 'What is this poor moment and all that concerns it, to the immense Eternity that we believe? And how doth one serious thought of it shrink all affairs, public and private, and all this present world, into nothing! What have we to think of, and, when we meet,

to speak of, but that, till the blessed day come that shall let us into it?'

† *Respice in sepulcra hominum et vide, quid ex te nisi cinis et ossa remanebunt, hoc est, ex corpore tuo; respice inquam, et dic mihi, quis ibi dives, quis pauper sit? Discerne inopes ac potentes. Nudi omnes nascimur, nudi morimur. Nulla discretio inter cadavera mortuorum.*—S. Ambr. *Hexaem.* vi. 8, 51.

your own calling and profession as you are Christians ; and this is evidently the highest and clearest reason that can be, and of greatest power with a Christian, namely, the example of Jesus Christ Himself: *For Christ also suffered for us, &c.*

So it is all but one entire argument, viz., that they ought thus to behave themselves, because it is the very thing they are called to, as their conformity to Jesus Christ, whose they profess to be, yea, with whom, as Christians, they profess themselves to be one.

Hereunto were ye called.] This, in the general, is a thing that ought to be ever before our eye, TO CONSIDER THE NATURE AND END OF OUR CALLING, AND TO ENDEAVOUR IN ALL THINGS TO ACT SUITABLY TO IT; to think in every occurrence, What doth the calling of a Christian require of me in this? But the truth is, the most do not mind this. We profess ourselves to be Christians and never think what kind of behaviour this obliges us to, and *what manner of persons it becomes us to be in all holy conversation, but walk disorderly, out of our rank, inordinately.* You that are profane, were you called by the Gospel to serve the world and your lusts? Were you called to swearing and rioting and voluptuousness? Hear you not the Apostle testifying the contrary, in express terms, that *GOD hath not called us to uncleanness but unto Holiness?* 1 Thess. iv. 7. You that are of proud contentious spirits, do you act suitably to this holy calling? No, for *we are called to Peace,* says the same Apostle, 1 Cor. vii. 15. But we study not this holy calling, and therefore, we walk so incongruously, so unlike the Gospel; *we lie and do not the truth,* as St. John speaks, 1 John i. 6; our actions belie us.

The particular things that Christians are here said to be called to are, *Suffering,* as their lot, and *Patience,* as their duty, even under the most unjust and undeserved sufferings.

And both these are as large as the sphere of this calling. Not only servants and others of a mean condition, who, lying low, are the more subject to rigours and injuries, but generally, all who are called to godliness, are likewise called to sufferings, 2 Tim. iii. 12. All that will follow Christ must do it in His livery; they must take up their cross. This is a very harsh and displeasing article of the Gospel to a carnal

mind, but the Scriptures conceal it not. Men are not led blindfold into sufferings, and drawn into a hidden snare by the Gospel's invitations; they are told it very often, that they may not pretend a surprisal, nor have any just plea for starting back again. So our Saviour tells His disciples, why He was so express and plain with them in this, *These things have I told you, that ye be not offended*, John xvi. 1; as if He had said, I have showed you the ruggedness of your way, that you may not stumble at it, taking it to be a smooth plain one. But then, where this is spoken of, it is usually allayed with the mention of those comforts that accompany these sufferings, or of that glory which follows them. The doctrine of the Apostles, which was so verified in their own persons, was this, *That we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of GOD*, Acts xiv. 22. An unpleasant way indeed, if you look no further, but a *kingdom* at the end of it, and that *the kingdom of GOD*, will transfuse pleasure into the most painful step in it all. It seems a sad condition that falls to the share of godly men in this world, to be eminent in sorrows and troubles. *Many are the afflictions of the righteous*, Psal. xxxiv. 19: but that which follows weighs them abundantly down in consolation, that the Lord Himself is engaged in their afflictions, both for their deliverance out of them in due time, and, in the mean time, for their support and preservation under them: *The Lord delivers them out of them all*, and till He does that, *He keepeth all their bones, so that not one of them is broken*. This was literally verified in the natural body of Christ, as St. John observes, John xix. 36, and it holds spiritually true in His mystical body. The Lord supports the spirits of believers in their troubles, with such solid consolations as are the pillars and strength of their souls, as the bones are of the body, which the Hebrew word for them imports. So, *He keepeth all his bones*; and the desperate condition of wicked men is opposed to this, verse 21, to illustrate it, *Evil shall slay the wicked*.

Thus, John xvi. 33, they are forewarned in the close, what to expect at the world's hands, as they were divers times before in that same sermon; but it is a sweet testament, take it altogether: *Ye shall have tribulation in the world, but peace in Me*. And seeing He hath jointly bequeathed these two to

His followers, were it not great folly to renounce such a bargain, and to let go that peace for fear of this trouble? The trouble is but *in the world*, but the *peace* is *in Him*, who weighs down thousands of worlds.

So then, they do exceedingly mistake and misreckon, who would reconcile Christ and the world, who would have the Church of Christ, or at least themselves for their own shares, enjoy both kinds of peace together; would willingly have peace in Christ, but are very loath to part with the world's peace. They would be Christians, but they are very ill satisfied when they hear of anything but ease and prosperity in that estate, and willingly forget the tenor of the Gospel in this; and so, when times of trouble and sufferings come, their minds are as new and uncouth to it, as if they had not been told of it beforehand. They like better St. Peter's carnal advice to Christ, to avoid suffering, Matt. xvi. 22, than his Apostolic doctrine to Christians, teaching them, that as Christ *suffered*, so they likewise *are called to suffering*. Men are ready to think as Peter did, that Christ should favour Himself more in His own body, His Church, than to expose it to so much suffering; and most would be of Rome's mind in this, at least in affection, that the badge of the Church should be pomp and prosperity, and not the cross: the true cross of afflictions and sufferings is too heavy and painful.

But *GOD's thoughts are not as ours*: those whom He calls to a kingdom, He calls to sufferings as the way to it. He will have the heirs of heaven know that they are not at home on earth, and that *this is not their rest*. He will not have them, with the abused world, fancy a happiness here, and, as St. Augustine says, *Beatam vitam quærere in regione mortis* * seek a happy life in the region of death. The reproaches and wrongs that encounter them shall elevate their minds often to that Land of Peace and Rest, *where righteousness dwells*, 2 Pet. iii. 13. The hard taskmasters shall make them weary of Egypt, which otherwise, possibly, they would comply too well with; shall dispose them for deliverance, and make it welcome, which, it may be, they might but coldly desire, if they were better used.

He knows what He does, who secretly serves His own good

* *Confess. iv. 12.*

purposes by men's evil ones, and, by the *plowers that make long furrows* on the back of His Church (Psal. cxxix. 3), makes it a fruitful field to Himself. Therefore, it is great folly and unadvisedness to take up a prejudice against His way, to think it might be better as we would model it, and to complain of the order of things, whereas we should complain of disordered minds: but we had rather have all altered and changed for us, the very course of Providence, than seek the change of our own perverse hearts. But the right temper of a Christian is, to run always cross to the corrupt stream of the world and human iniquity, and to be willingly carried along with the stream of Divine Providence, and not at all to stir a hand, no, nor a thought, to row against that mighty current; and not only is he carried with it upon necessity, because there is no steering against it, but cheerfully and voluntarily; not because he must, but because he would.*

And this is the other thing to which Christians are jointly called; as to suffering, so to *calmness of mind* and *patience in suffering*, although their suffering be most unjust; yea, this is truly a part of that duty they are called to, to maintain that integrity and inoffensiveness of life that may make their sufferings at men's hands always unjust. The entire duty here is Innocence and Patience; doing willingly no wrong to others, and yet cheerfully suffering wrong when done to themselves. If either of the two be wanting, their suffering does not credit their profession, but dishonours it. If they be patient under deserved suffering, their guiltiness darkens their patience; and if their sufferings be undeserved, yea, and the cause of them honourable, yet impatience under them stains both their sufferings and their cause, and seems in part to justify the very injustice that is used against them; but where innocence and patience meet together in suffering, their sufferings are in their perfect lustre. These are they who honour religion, and shame the enemies of it. It was the concurrence of these two that was the very triumph of the martyrs in times of persecution,

* Hic est magnus animus, qui se Deo tradidit: at contra ille pusillus ac degener, qui oblectatur, et de Ordine Mundi male existimat, et emendare mavult Deum, quam se.—Sen. *Ep.* 107, *ult.*
Quid est præcipuum? Posse læto

animo adversa tolerare: quidquid acciderit sic ferre quasi tibi volueris accidere. Debuisses enim velle, si scisses omnia ex decreto Dei fieri. Flere, queri, ingemere, desciscere est.—Sen. *Nat. Quæst.* 3. præf.

that tormented their tormentors, and made them *more than conquerors*, even in sufferings.

Now, that we are called both to suffering and to this manner of suffering the Apostle puts out of question, by the supreme example of our Lord Jesus Christ; for the sum of our calling is, *to follow Him*. Now in both these, in suffering and in suffering innocently and patiently, the whole history of the Gospel testifies how complete a pattern He is. And the Apostle gives us here a summary yet a very clear account of it.

The words have in them these two things: I. The perfection of this example. II. Our obligation to follow it.

I. The example he sets off to the full: 1. In regard of the greatness of our Saviour's sufferings. 2. In regard of His spotlessness and patience in suffering.

1. The first we have in that word, *He suffered*; and afterwards, at ver. 24, we have His crucifixion and His stripes expressly specified.

Now this is reason enough, and carries it beyond all other reason, why Christians are called to a suffering life, seeing the Lord and Author of that calling suffered Himself so much. *The Captain, or Leader, of our Salvation*, as the Apostle speaks, was *consecrated by suffering*, Heb. ii. 10:* that was the way by which *He entered into the holy place*, where He is now *our Everlasting High Priest, making intercession for us*. If He be our Leader to Salvation, must not we follow Him in the way He leads, whatsoever it is? If it be (as we see it is) by the way of sufferings, we must either follow on in that way, or fall short of salvation; for there is no other leader, nor any other way than that which He opened; so that there is not only a congruity in it, that His followers be conformed to Him in suffering, but a necessity, if they will follow Him on till they attain to glory. And the consideration of both these cannot but argue a Christian into a resolution for this *via regia*, this royal way of suffering that leads to glory, through which their King and Lord Himself went to His glory.† It could hardly be believed at first, that this was *His way*, and we can as hardly yet believe that it must be ours. *O fools, and slow*

* Here and in Heb. v. 9, our translators render *τελειῶ* to *perfect*, but in Heb. vii. 28, to *consecrate*, in which last sense it is frequently used by the LXX.

† Cf. the chapter *De regia via sanctæ Crucis* in the *de Imitatione Christi*, ii. 12.

of heart to believe! Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and so to enter into His glory? Luke xxiv. 25, 26.

Would you be at glory, and will you not follow your Leader in the only way to it? Must there be another way cut out for you by yourself? O absurd! *Shall the servant be greater than his Master?* John xiii. 6. Are not you fairly dealt with? If you have a mind to Christ, you shall have full as much of the world's good-will as He had; *if it hate you*, He bids you remember, *how it hated Him*, John xv. 18.

But though there were a way to do otherwise, would you not, if the love of Christ possessed your hearts, rather choose to share with Him in His lot, and would you not find delight in the very trouble of it? Is not this conformity to Jesus the great ambition of all His true-hearted followers? *We carry about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus*, says the great Apostle, 2 Cor. iv. 10. Besides the unspeakable advantage to come, which goes linked with this, that *if we suffer with Him, we shall reign with Him* (2 Tim. ii. 12), there is a glory even in this present resemblance, that we are conformed to the image of the Son of GOD in sufferings. Why should you desire to leave Him? Are you not one with Him? Can you choose but have the same common friends and enemies? Would you willingly, if it might be, could you find in your heart to be friends with that world which hated your Lord and Master? Would you have nothing but kindness and ease, where He had nothing but enmity and trouble? Or would you not rather, when you think aright of it, refuse and disdain to be so unlike Him? As that good Duke said, when they would have crowned him King of Jerusalem, *No*, said he, *by no means; I will not wear a crown of gold where JESUS was crowned with thorns.**

2. His spotlessness and patience in suffering are both of them set here before us; the one ver. 22, the other ver. 23.

* Godfrey of Bouillon, Duke of Lower Lorraine, A. D. 1099. Leighton has marked the passage where this anecdote occurs in his copy of Fuller's *History of the Holy War*, p. 44. The German Hymnist, Spitta, thus alludes to it in 'The Pilgrim's Song,' the opening stanzas of which are subjoined:—

'Uncomplaining, tho' with care grown hoary,
I desire to wear no Crown of glory
Where my Saviour wore a Crown of Thorn;
Not in paths of roses would I dally,
Where my Saviour trod the gloomy Valley,
Where He suffered bitter pain and scorn.

Whosoever thou art who makest such a noise about the injustice of what thou sufferest, and thinkest to justify thy impatience by thine innocence, let me ask thee, Art thou more just and innocent than He who is here set before thee? Or, art thou able to come near Him in this point? *Who did no sin, neither was guile found in His mouth.* This is to signify perfect holiness, according to that declaration, Jam. iii. 2, *If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man.* Man is a little world, a world of wickedness; and that little part of him, *the tongue*, is termed by St. James *a world of iniquity.* But all Christ's words, as well as His actions, and all His thoughts, flowed from a pure spring that had not anything defiled in it; and therefore no temptation, either from men or Satan, could seize on Him. Other men may seem clear as long as they are unstirred, but move and trouble them, and the mud arises; but He was nothing but holiness, a pure fountain, all purity to the bottom; and therefore, stir and trouble Him as they would, He was still alike clear. *The prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me,* John xiv. 39.

This is the main ground of our confidence in Him that He is *a holy, harmless, undefiled High Priest*: and *such a one became us*, says the Apostle, who are so sinful, Heb. vii. 26. The more sinful we are, the more need that our High Priest should be sinless; and being so, we may build upon His perfection, as standing in our stead, yea, we are invested with Him and His righteousness.

Again, *there was no guile found in His mouth.* This serves to convince us concerning all the promises that He hath made, that they are nothing but truth. Hath he said, *Him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out?* John vi. 37. Then you need not fear, how unworthy and vile soever you may be;

‘Lord, send forth Thy Light and Truth, to lead me
In the way wherein Thy Saints precede me,
With Thy Holy Spirit for my Guide;
Let me choose the path of self-denial,
Shunning no sharp cross or bitter trial
Which my Saviour's Steps have sanctified.’

It is recorded of S. Catharine of Siena, that in one of her mystic visions having been offered her choice between a Crown of Gold enwreathed with Roses and a Crown of Thorns, she chose the last, because it was like the one her Lord had

worn. S. Fr. de Sales beautifully introduces this in two letters which may be very suitably referred to here, *Liv. 5. Ep. 6, 7*, ed. Leonard, 1726, also given in *Practical Piety set forth by S. F. de Sales.* London, 1851, p. 154.

do but come to Him, and you have His word that He will not shut the door against you. And as He hath promised access, so He hath further promised ease and rest of soul to those that come, Matt. xi. 29. Then be confident to find that in Him too, for there was never a false or guileful word found in His mouth.

But to consider it only in the present action, this speaks Him the most innocent sufferer that ever was, not only judicially just in His cause, but entirely just in His person, altogether righteous; and yet, condemned to death, and an opprobrious death of malefactors, and set betwixt two, as chief of the three! *I am*, says He, *the rose of Sharon, and the lily of the valley*; and the Spouse saith of Him, *My well-beloved is white and ruddy*, Cant. ii. 1; v. 10: thus indeed, He was in His death, ruddy in His bloodshed, and white in His innocence, and withal in His meekness and patience; the other thing wherein He is here so exemplary.

Who, when He was reviled, reviled not again.] This spotless Lamb of GOD was a Lamb both in guiltlessness and silence; and the Prophet Isaiah expresses the resemblance, in that *He was brought as a Lamb to the slaughter*, Isa. liii. 7. He suffered not only an unjust sentence of death, but withal unjust revilings, *the contradictions of sinners*. None ever did so little deserve revilings; none ever could have said so much in His own just defence, and to the just reproach of His enemies; and yet, in both, He preferred silence. None could ever threaten so heavy things as He could against His enemies, and have made good all He threatened, and yet, no such thing was heard from Him. The heavens and the earth, as it were, spoke their resentment of His death who made them; but He was silent; or what He spoke makes this still good, how far He was from revilings and threatenings. As spices pounded, or precious ointment poured out, give their smell most, thus *His Name was an ointment then poured forth*, together with His blood (Cant. i. 3), and, filling Heaven and earth with its sweet perfume, was a savour of rest and peace in both, appeasing the wrath of GOD, and so quieting the consciences of men. And even in this particular was it then most fragrant, in that all the torments of the Cross and all the revilings of the multitude, that as it were racked Him for some answer, yet

could draw no other from Him than this, *Father forgive them, for they know not what they do.*

But for those to whom this mercy belonged not, the Apostle tells us what He did; instead of revilings and threatenings, *He committed all to Him who judgeth righteously.* And this is the true method of Christian patience, that which quiets the mind, and keeps it from the boiling, tumultuous thoughts of revenge, to turn the whole matter into GOD'S hand, to resign it over to Him, to prosecute when and as He thinks good. Not as the most, who had rather, if they had power, do for themselves, and be their own avengers; and because they have not power, do offer up such bitter curses and prayers for revenge unto GOD, as are most hateful to Him, and are far from this calm and holy way of committing matters to His judgment. The common way of referring things to GOD is indeed impious and dishonourable to Him, being really no other than calling Him to be a servant and executioner to our passion. We ordinarily mistake His justice, and judge of it according to our own precipitant and distempered minds. If wicked men be not crossed in their designs, and their wickedness evidently crushed, just when we would have it, we are ready to give up the matter as desperate, or at least to abate of those confident and reverent thoughts of Divine justice which we owe Him. Howsoever things go, this ought to be fixed in our hearts, that *He who sitteth in heaven judgeth righteously*, and executes that His righteous judgment in the fittest season. We poor worms, whose whole life is but a *hand-breadth* in itself, and is *as nothing* unto GOD, think a few months or years a great matter; but to Him who *inhabiteth Eternity*, *a thousand years are but as one day*, as our Apostle teaches us, in his second Epistle, ch. iii. ver. 8.*

Our Saviour in that time of His humiliation and suffering, *committed* Himself and His cause (for that is best expressed, in that nothing is expressed but *He committed*) *to Him who judgeth righteously*, and the issue shall be, that *all His enemies shall become His footstool*, and He Himself shall judge them. But that which is given us here to learn from His carriage toward them in His suffering, is, that quietness and moderation of mind, even under unjust sufferings, make us like Him; not

* Cf. Eccles. xviii. 10, 11. *Patiens est Deus quia aeternus*, 'God is patient because He is eternal.'

to reply to reproach with reproach, as our custom is, to give an ill word for another, or two for one, to be sure not to be behind. Men take a pride in this, and think it ridiculous simplicity so to suffer, and this makes strifes and contention so much abound; but it is a great mistake. You think it greatness of spirit to bear nothing, to put up with no wrong, whereas indeed it is great weakness and baseness. It is true greatness of spirit to despise the most of those things which set you usually on fire one against another; especially, being done after a Christian manner, it were a part of the Spirit of Christ in you: and is there any spirit greater than that, think you? Oh! that there were less of the spirit of the Dragon, and more of the spirit of the Dove amongst us.

II. Our obligation to follow the example of Christ, besides being enforced by its own excellency, is intimated in these two things contained in the words: 1. The design of His behaviour for this use, to be as an example to us. 2. Our interest in Him, and those His sufferings, wherein He so carried Himself.

1. That His behaviour was intended for an example, *Leaving us an example, that ye should follow His steps.* He left His footsteps as a copy (as the word in the original, *ὑπογραμμὸν*, imports), to be followed by us: every step of His is a letter of this copy;* and particularly in this point of suffering, He wrote us a pure and perfect copy of obedience, in clear and great letters, in His own blood.

His whole life is our rule: not, indeed, His miraculous works, His footsteps walking on the sea, and such like, they are not for our following; but His obedience and holiness, meekness and humility, are our copy, which we should continually study. The shorter and more effectual way, they say, of teaching, is by example;† but above all, this matchless Example is the happiest way of teaching. *He that follows Me*, says our Lord, *shall not walk in darkness*, John viii. 12.

He that aims high shoots the higher for it, though he shoot not so high as he aims. This is what ennobles the spirit of a Christian, the propounding of this our high pattern, the example of Jesus Christ.

* Bp. Taylor, in his *Exhortation to the Imitation of Christ* prefixed to *The Great Exemplar*, illustrates the text by 'the Bohemian story of S. Wenceslaus.' This beautiful legend is well told in Dr. Neale's *Deeds of Faith*.

† Longum iter est per præcepta, breve et efficax per exempla.—Sen. *Ép.* 6.

The imitation of men in worthless things is low and servile ; the imitation of their virtues is commendable, but if we aim no higher, it is both imperfect and unsafe. The Apostle St. Paul will have no imitation but with regard to this Supreme Pattern ; *Be ye followers of me, as I am of Christ*, 1 Cor. xi. 1. One Christian may take the example of Christ as exhibited in many things in another, but still he must examine all by the original primitive copy, the footsteps of Christ Himself, following nothing, but as it conforms with that, and looking most on Him, both as the most perfect and most effectual example. See Heb. xii. 2. There is *a cloud of witnesses* and examples, but look above them all, to Him who is as high above them as the sun is above the clouds. As in the Covenant of Grace the way is better, a living way indeed, so there is this advantage also, that we are not left to our own skill for following it, but taught by the Spirit. In the delivery of the Law, GOD showed His glory and greatness by the manner of giving it, but the Law was written only in dead tables. But Christ, the living law, teaches by obeying it, how to obey it ; and this too, is the advantage of the Gospel, that the Law is written twice over unto believers, first, in the example of Christ, and then inwardly in their hearts by His Spirit. There is, together with that copy of all grace in Him, a spirit derived from Him, enabling believers to follow Him in their measure. They may not only see Him *as the only-begotten Son of GOD, full of grace and truth*, as it is, John i. 14, but, as there it follows, *they receive of His fulness grace for grace*. The love of Christ makes the soul delight to converse with Him ; and converse and love together make it learn His behaviour : as men that live much together, especially if they do much affect one another, will insensibly contract one another's habits and customs.

The other thing obliging us is : 2. Our interest in Him and His sufferings ; *He suffered for us*. And to this the Apostle returns, ver. 24. Observe only from the tie of these two, that if we neglect His example set before us we cannot enjoy any right assurance of His suffering for us ; but if we do seriously endeavour to follow Him, then we may be persuaded of life through His death, and those steps of His wherein we walk will bring us ere long to be *where He is*.

Ver. 24. Who His own self bare our sins in His own body on the tree, that we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousness ; by whose stripes ye were healed.

THAT which is deepest in the heart is generally most in the mouth ; that which abounds within runs over most by the tongue or pen. When men light upon the speaking of that subject which possesses their affection, they can hardly be taken off or drawn from it again. Thus the Apostles in their writings, when they make mention any way of Christ suffering for us, love to dwell on it, as that which they take most delight to speak of ; such delicacy and sweetness is in it to a spiritual taste that they like to keep it in their mouth, and are never out of their theme, when they insist on Jesus Christ, though they have but named Him by occasion of some other doctrine ; for He is the great subject of all they have to say.

Thus here, the Apostle had spoken of Christ in the foregoing words very fitly to his present subject, setting Him before Christian servants, and all suffering Christians, as their complete Example, both in point of much suffering and of perfect innocence and patience in suffering ; and he had expressed their obligation to study and follow that Example ; yet, he cannot leave it so, but having said that all those His sufferings wherein He was so exemplary were for us, as a chief consideration for which we should study to be like Him, he returns to that again, and enlarges upon it in words partly the same, partly very near those of that Evangelist among the Prophets, Isaiah, ch. liii. ver. 4.

And it suits very well with his main scope to press this point, as giving both very much strength and sweetness to the exhortation ; for surely it is most reasonable, that we willingly conform to Him in suffering, who had never been an example of suffering, nor subject at all to sufferings, nor in any degree capable of them, but for us ; and it is most comfortable, in *these light sufferings of this present moment*, to consider that He hath freed us from the sufferings of eternity, by suffering Himself in our stead in the fulness of time.

That Jesus Christ is, in doing and in suffering, our supreme and matchless example, and that He came to be so, is a truth ;

but that He is nothing further, and came for no other end, is, you see, a high point of falsehood. For how should man be enabled to learn and follow that example of obedience, unless there were more than an example in Christ? and what would become of that great reckoning of disobedience that man stands guilty of? No, these are notions far too narrow. He came to *bear our sins in His own body on the tree*, and for this purpose *had a body fitted for Him* and given Him to bear this burden, to do this as the will of His Father, to stand for us instead of all offerings and sacrifices; and *by that will*, says the Apostle, *we are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ, once for all*, Heb. x. 5, 9.

This was His business, not only to rectify sinful man by His example, but to redeem him by His blood. *He was a Teacher come from GOD*: as a Prophet He teaches us the way of life, and as the best and greatest of prophets, is perfectly like His doctrine; His actions (which in all teachers are the liveliest part of doctrine) and His carriage in life and death are our great pattern and instruction. But what is said of His Forerunner is more eminently true of Christ: He is *a Prophet, and more than a Prophet*,—a Priest satisfying justice for us, and a King conquering sin and death for us: an example indeed, but more than an example,—our *sacrifice*, and *our life*, our *all in all*. It is our duty to *walk as He walked*, to make Him the pattern of our steps (1 John ii. 6); but our comfort and salvation lie in this, that *He is the propitiation for our sins* (ver. 2). So, in the first chapter of that Epistle, ver. 7, *We are to walk in the light as He is in the light*; but for all our walking, we have need of that which follows, that bears the great weight,—*The blood of Jesus Christ cleanseth us from all sin*. And so still, that glory which He possesseth in His own person is the pledge of ours: He is there for us, *He lives to make intercession for us*, says the Apostle, Heb. vii. 25; and, *I go to prepare a place for you*, says our Lord Himself, John xiv. 2.

We have in the words these two great points, and in the same order as the words lie: I. The Nature and Quality of the sufferings of Jesus Christ; and, II. The End of them.

I. In this expression of the Nature and Quality of the

sufferings of Christ, we are to consider: 1. The Commutation of the persons, *He Himself—for us*. 2. The Work undertaken and performed, *He bare our sins in His own body on the tree*.

1. The act or sentence of the Law against the breach of it standing in force, and Divine justice expecting satisfaction, Death was the necessary and inseparable consequent of Sin. If you say, the supreme Majesty of GOD, being accountable to none, might have forgiven all without satisfaction, we are not to contest that, nor foolishly to offer to sound the bottomless deep of His absolute prerogative. Christ implies in His prayer, Matt. xxvi. 39, that it was *impossible* that He could escape *that cup*; but the impossibility is resolved into His Father's will, as the cause of it. But this we may clearly see, following the tract of the holy Scriptures (our only safe way), that this way wherein our salvation is contrived is most excellent, and suitable to the greatness and goodness of GOD; so full of wonders of wisdom and love, that the Angels, as our Apostle tells us before, cannot forbear looking on it and admiring it: for all their exact knowledge, yet they still find it infinitely beyond their knowledge, still in astonishment and admiration of what they see, and still in search, looking in to see more; those Cherubim still having their eyes fixed on this Mercy-Seat.

Justice might indeed have seized on rebellious Man, and laid the pronounced punishment on him. Mercy might have freely acquitted him, and pardoned all. But can we name any place where Mercy and Justice, as relating to condemned man, could have met and shined jointly in full aspect, save only in Jesus Christ?—in whom indeed, *Mercy and Truth met, and Righteousness and Peace kissed each other*, Psal. lxxxv. 10; yea, in whose person the Parties concerned, that were at so great a distance, met so near, as nearer cannot be imagined.

And not only was this the sole way for the consistency of these two, Justice and Mercy, but take each of them severally, and they could not have been manifested in so full lustre in any other way. GOD's just hatred of sin did, out of doubt, appear more in punishing His own only-begotten Son for it, than if the whole race of mankind had suffered for it eternally. Again, it raises the notion of Mercy to the highest, that sin is

not only forgiven us, but for this end GOD's own co-eternal Son is given to us, and for us. Consider what He is, and what we are; He the *Son of His love*, and we, enemies. Therefore it is emphatically expressed in the words *He Himself bare our sins*, and *GOD so loved the world*, John iii. 16: that Love amounts to this much, and was so great, as to *give His Son*; but how great that Love is cannot be uttered. *In this*, says the Apostle, Rom. v. 8, *GOD commendeth His love to us*, sets it off to the highest, gives us the richest and strongest evidence of it.

The foundation of this plan, this appearing of Christ for us, and undergoing and answering all in our stead, lies in the decree of GOD, where it was plotted and contrived, in the whole way of it, from eternity; and the Father and the Son being one, and their thoughts and will one, They were perfectly agreed on it; and those likewise for whom it should hold were agreed upon, and their names written down, according to which they are said to be *given unto Christ to redeem*. And just according to that model did all the work proceed, and was accomplished in all points, perfectly answering to the pattern of it in the mind of GOD. As it was precluded there that the Son should undertake the business, this matchless piece of service for His Father, and that by His interposing men should be reconciled and saved; so that He might be altogether a fit person for the work, it was resolved that as He was already fit for it by the almightiness of His Deity and Godhead, and the acceptableness of His person to the Father as the Son of GOD, so He should be further fitted by wonderfully uniting weakness to almightiness, the frailty of man to the power of GOD. Because suffering for man was a main point of the work, therefore, as His being the Son of GOD made Him acceptable to GOD, so His being the Son of man made Him suitable to man, in whose business He had engaged Himself, and suitable to the business itself to be performed. And not only was there in Him, by His human nature, a conformity to man (for that might have been accomplished by a new created body), but a consanguinity with man,¹ by a body framed of the same piece, only purified for His use, as was needful, and

¹ This is expressed in the Hebrew word *Goel*, which signifies both a Redeemer and a Kinsman.

framed, after a peculiar manner, in the womb of a virgin, as it is expressed, Heb. x. 5, *Thou hast fitted a body for Me*,—having no sin itself, because ordained to have so much of our sins: as it is here, *He bare our sins in His own body*.

And this looks back to the primitive transaction and purpose. *Lo! I come to do Thy will*, says the Son, Psal. xl. 7. *Behold my servant whom I have chosen*, says the Father (Isa. xliii. 10), this masterpiece of My works; no one in heaven or earth is fit to serve Me, but My own Son. And as He came into the world according to that decree and will, so He goes out of it again in that way. *The Son of Man goeth as is determined*, Luke xxii. 22: it was wickedly and maliciously done by men against Him, but it was *determined* (which is what He there speaks of) wisely and graciously by His Father, with His own consent. As in those two-faced pictures, look upon the crucifying of Christ one way, as comploted by a treacherous disciple and malicious priests and rulers, and nothing more deformed and hateful than the authors of it; but view it again, as determined in GOD'S counsel, for the restoring of lost mankind, and it is full of unspeakable beauty and sweetness,—infinite wisdom and love in every trait of it.

Thus also, as to the persons for whom Christ engaged to suffer, their coming unto Him looks back to that first donation of the Father, as flowing from that: *All that the Father giveth Me shall come unto Me*, John vi. 37.

Now this being GOD'S great design, it is that which He would have men eye and consider more than all the rest of His works; and yet it is least of all considered by the most! The other Covenant, made with the first Adam, was but to make way, and, if we may so speak, to make work for this. For He knew that it would not hold; therefore, as this New Covenant became needful by the breach of the other, so, the failing of that other sets off and commends the firmness of this. The former was made with a man in his best condition, and yet he kept it not: even then he proved vanity, as it is, Psal. xxxix. 5, *Verily, every man, in his best estate, is altogether vanity*. So the second, that it might be stronger, is made with a Man indeed, to supply the place of the former, but He is GOD-MAN, to be surer than the former, and therefore it holds. And this is the difference, as the Apostle ex-

presses it, that the first Adam, in that Covenant, was laid as a foundation, and though we say not that the Church, in its true notion, was built on him, yet the estate of the whole race of mankind, the materials which the Church is built of, lay on him for that time; and it failed. But upon this Rock, the second Adam, is the Church so firmly built, that *the gates of hell cannot prevail against her*. *The first man, Adam, was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening (or life-giving) spirit*, 1 Cor. xv. 45. The first had life, but he transferred it not, yea, he kept it not for himself, but drew in and transferred death; but the Second, by death, conveys life to all that are reckoned His seed.

2. As to the work of Redemption itself. *He bare our sins in His own Body on the tree*. In that outside of His suffering, the visible kind of death inflicted on Him, in that it was hanging on the tree of the Cross, there was an analogy with the end and main work; and it was ordered by the Lord with regard unto that end, being a death declared *accursed by the Law*, as the Apostle St. Paul observes, Gal. iii. 13, and so declaring Him who was *GOD blessed for ever*, to have been *made a curse* (that is, accounted as accursed) *for us*, that we might be blessed in Him, *in whom*, according to the promise, *all the nations of the earth are blessed*.

But that wherein lay the strength and main stress of His Sufferings, was this invisible weight which none could see who gazed on Him, but which He felt more than all the rest: *He bare our Sins*. In this there are three things: 1. The weight of Sin. 2. The transferring of it upon Christ. 3. His bearing of it.

[1.] He bare sin as a heavy burden; so the word *bearing* imports in general (*ἀνήνεγκεν*) and those two words particularly used by the prophet, Isa. liii. 4,* to which these allude, (*סבל נשא*) imply the *bearing of some great mass or load*. And such Sin is; for it hath the wrath of an offended GOD hanging at it, indissolubly tied to it, which who can bear, even the least of it? And therefore the least sin, being the procuring cause of it, will press a man down for ever, that he shall not be able to rise. *Who can stand before Thee when once Thou art angry?* says the Psalmist, Psal. lxxvi. 7. And

* 'The one signifying *bearing*, the other *taking away*.'—Cf. p. 346.

the Prophet, Jer. iii. 12, *Return, blacksliding Israel, and I will not cause My wrath to fall upon thee—to fall as a great weight, or as a millstone, and crush the soul.*

But senseless we go light under the burden of sin, and feel it not, we complain not of it, and are therefore truly said to be *dead in it*; otherwise it could not but press us, and press out complaints. *O! wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me?* A profane, secure sinner thinks it nothing to break the holy law of GOD, to please his flesh, or the world; he counts sin a light matter, *makes a mock* of it, as Solomon says, Prov. xiv. 9. But a stirring conscience is of another mind: *Mine iniquities are gone over my head; as a heavy burden, they are too heavy for me,* Psal. xxxviii. 4.

Sin is such a burden as makes the very frame of heaven and earth, which is not guilty of it, yea, the whole creation, to crack and groan (it is the Apostle's doctrine, Rom. viii. 22), and yet the impenitent heart, whose guiltiness it is, continues unmoved, groaneth not; for your accustomed groaning is no such matter.*

Yea, to consider it in connexion with the present subject, where we may best read what it is, Sin was a heavy load to Jesus Christ. In Psal. xl. 12, the Psalmist, speaking in the person of Christ, complains heavily, *Innumerable evils have compassed me about: Mine iniquities* (not His, as done by Him, but yet His, by His undertaking to pay for them), *have taken hold of me, so that I am not able to look up; they are more than the hairs of my head, therefore my heart faileth me.* And surely, that which pressed *Him* so sore Who upholds Heaven and earth, no other in Heaven or on earth could have sustained and surmounted, but would have sunk and perished under it. Was it, think you, the pain of that common outside of His death,† though very painful, that drew such a word from Him, *My GOD, my GOD, why hast Thou forsaken me?* Or was it the fear of that beforehand, that

* Cf. vol. ii. pp. 43, 78. In Newcomb's *Mercurius Politicus*, a 'Weekly Diurnal,' there is a letter from an Englishman at Edinburgh, dated '12th Oct. 1650,' in which he says: 'In Edinburgh and other places the Scots come to hear our ministers, and they make such a groaning noyse in the time of prayers as I never saw, as if they were extraordinarily affected therewith; but it seems it

is the custom of the people here to do so.'

† Cf. in the previous page, 'that outside of His suffering, the visible kind of death inflicted on Him.' Thus Adams of Willington: 'All this [bodily suffering] was but the outside of His passion. The pain of the body is but the body of pain; the very soul of sorrow is the sorrow of the soul.'—*A Crucifix; or a Sermon upon the Passion.*

pressed a *sweat of blood* from Him? No, it was this burden of sin, the first of which was committed in the Garden of Eden, that then began to be laid upon Him and fastened upon His shoulders in the Garden of Gethsemane, ten thousand times heavier than the cross which He was caused to bear. That might be for a while turned over to another, but this could not. This was the CUP He trembled at more than at that gall and vinegar to be afterwards offered Him by His crucifiers, or any other part of His external sufferings: it was the bitter cup of wrath due to sin, which His Father put into His hand, and caused Him to drink, the very same thing that is here called the *bearing our sins in His body*.

And consider, that the very smallest sins contributed to make up this load, and made it so much the heavier; and therefore, though sins be comparatively smaller and greater, yet learn thence to account no sin in itself small, which offends the great GOD, and which lay heavy upon your great Redeemer in the day of His sufferings.

At His apprehension, besides the soldiers, that invisible crowd of the sins He was to suffer for, came about Him, for it was these that laid strongest hold on Him: He could easily have shaken off all the rest, as appears, Matt. xxvi. 33, but our sins laid the arrest on Him, being accounted His, as it is in that forecited place, Psal. xl. 12. Now, amongst these were even those sins we call small; they were of the number that took Him, and they were amongst those instruments of His bloodshed. If the greater were as the spear that pierced His side, the less were as the nails that pierced His hands and His feet, and the very least as the thorns that were set on His precious head. And the multitude of them made up what was wanting in their magnitude; though they were small, they were many.

[2.] They were transferred upon Him by virtue of that Covenant we spoke of. They became His debt, and He responsible for all they came to. 'Seeing you have accepted of this business according to My will' (may we conceive the Father saying to His Son), 'you must go through with it; you are engaged in it, but it is no other than what you understood perfectly before; you knew what it would cost you, and yet, out of joint love with Me to those I named to be saved by you, you were as willing as I to the whole undertaking. Now

therefore the time is come, that I must lay upon you the sins of all those persons, and you must bear them; the sins of all those believers who lived before, and all who are to come after, to the end of the world.* *The Lord laid on Him the iniquity of us all*, says the Prophet (Isa. liii. 6), took it off from us and charged it on Him, made it *to meet on Him*, or *to fall in together*, as the word in the original imports. The sins of all, in all ages before and after, who were to be saved, all their guiltiness, met together on His back upon the Cross. Whosoever of all that number had least sin, yet had no small burden to cast on Him: and to give accession to the whole weight, *every man hath had his own way of wandering*, as the Prophet there expresseth it, and He paid for all; all fell on Him. And as in testimony of His meekness and patience, so, in this respect likewise, was He so silent in His sufferings, that though His enemies dealt most unjustly with Him, yet He stood as convicted before the justice-seat of His Father, under the imputed guilt of all our sins; and so eyeing Him, and accounting His business to be chiefly with Him, He did patiently bear the due punishment of all our sins at His Father's hand, according to that saying of the Psalmist, *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth because Thou didst it*, Psal. xxxix. 9. Therefore the Prophet immediately subjoins the description of His silent carriage to that which he had spoken of, the confluence of our iniquities upon Him: *As a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth*, Isa. liii. 7.

And if our sins were thus accounted His, then, in the same way and for that very reason, His sufferings and satisfaction must of necessity be accounted ours. As He said for His disciples to the men who came to take Him, *If it be Me ye seek, then let these go free*; so He said for all believers to His Father, His wrath then seizing on Him, *If on me Thou wilt lay hold, then let these go free*. And thus the agreement was: *He was made sin for us Who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of GOD in Him*, 2 Cor. v. 21.†

* These imaginary Colloquies in Heaven respecting the New Covenant are frequent in old writers, and Milton has made them familiar to the general reader. See S. Bernard's account of the Council in Heaven, and the controversies between Mercy and Truth, &c., in which

the Divine Father and Son take part,—in *Annunt. Serm.* i. 10–14. The Sermon is a comment on Ps. lxxxv. 9, 10; and Leighton perhaps had it in mind in pp. 337–339 above.

† 'Such we are in the sight of GOD the Father, as is the very Son of GOD

So, then, there is a union betwixt believers and Jesus Christ, by which this interchange is made; He being charged with their sins, and they clothed with His satisfaction and righteousness. This union is founded: 1. In GOD's decree of Election, running to this effect, that they should live in Christ, and so counting the Head and the whole mystical Body as one, and reckoning their debt as His in His own purpose, that He might receive satisfaction, and they salvation, in their Head, Christ. The execution of that purpose and union began in Christ's INCARNATION, it being for believers, though the nature He assumed is in common with other men. It is said, Heb. ii. 16, *He took not on Him the nature of Angels, but the seed of Abraham*, the company of believers: He became man for their sakes, because they are men. That He is of the same nature with unbelieving men who perish is but by accident, as it were; there is no good to them in that, but the great evil of deeper condemnation, if they hear of Him and believe not; but He was made man to be like, yea, to be one with the Elect, *and He is not ashamed to call them brethren*, as the Apostle there says, Heb. ii. 11. 2. This union is also founded in the actual intention of the Son so made man; He presenting Himself to the Father in all He did and suffered, *as for them*, having them, and them only, in His eye and thoughts, in all. *For their sakes do I sanctify Myself*, John xvii. 1, 9. Again: 3. This union is applied and performed in them, when they are converted and engrafted into Jesus Christ by faith; and this doth actually discharge them of their own sins and entitle them to His righteousness, and so justify them in the sight of GOD. 4. The consummation of this union is in glory, which is the result and fruit of all the former. As it began in Heaven, it is completed there; but betwixt these two in Heaven the intervention of those other two degrees of it on earth was necessary, being intended in the first as tending to the attainment of the last. These four steps of it are all distinctly expressed in our Lord's own prayer, John xvii.: 1. GOD's purpose that the Son should give *eternal life*

Himself. Let it be counted folly or frenzy, or whatsoever; it is our wisdom and our comfort. We care for no knowledge in the world but this, that man hath sinned, and God hath suffered;

that God hath made Himself the Sin of Men, and that men are made the righteousness of GOD.—Hooker, *Serm. ii.*

to those whom He hath given Him, ver. 2. 2. The Son's undertaking and accomplishing their redemption, in ver. 4, *I have finished the work which Thou gavest me to do.* 3. The application of this union, and its performance in them, by their *faith*, their *believing* and *keeping His word*, ver. 6, 8, and in several of the subsequent verses. And then lastly, the consummation of this union, ver. 24, *I will that they whom Thou hast given Me be with Me where I am.* There meet the first donation and the last.

Now, to obtain this life for them, Christ died *in their stead*. He appeared as the High Priest, being perfectly and truly what the name was on their plate of gold, HOLINESS TO THE LORD, Exod. xxviii. 36, and so *bearing their iniquity*, as it is there added of Aaron, ver. 38.* But because the High Priest was not the Redeemer, but only prefigured Him, he did not himself suffer for the people's sin, but turned it over upon the beasts which he sacrificed, signifying that translation of sin, by laying his hand upon the head of the beast. But Jesus Christ is both the great High Priest and the great Sacrifice in one; and this seems to be here implied in these words, *Himself bare our sins in His own body*, which the priest under the law did not. So Isa. liii. 10 and Heb. ix. 12, *He made His soul an offering for sin.* He offered up Himself, His *whole self*. In the history of the Gospel it is said, that *His soul was heavy*, and chiefly suffered; but it is the bearing sin in *His body*, and offering it, that is oftenest mentioned as the visible part of the sacrifice, and in His way of offering it not excluding the other. Thus (Rom. xii. 1) we are exhorted to give *our bodies*, in opposition to the bodies of beasts, and they are therefore called *a living sacrifice*, which they are not without the soul. So, Christ's bearing it *in His body*, imports the bearing of it in His soul too.

[3.] His *bearing* of our sins hints that He was active and willing in His suffering for us; it was not a constrained offering. *He laid down His life*, as He Himself tells us, John x. 18; and this expression here, *He bare*, implies, He took willingly off, lifted from us that burden to bear it Himself.

* 'And it shall be upon Aaron's forehead, that Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things, which the children of Israel shall hallow in all their holy gifts: and it shall be always upon his forehead, that they may be accepted before the LORD.'

It was counted an ill sign amongst the heathens, when the beasts went unwillingly to be sacrificed and drew back, and a good omen when they went willingly. But never was sacrifice so willing as our Great Sacrifice; and we may be assured He hath appeased His Father's wrath, and wrought atonement for us. Isaac was in this a type of Christ; we hear of no reluctance; he submitted quietly to be bound when he was to be offered up.* There are two words used in Isa. ch. liii. ver. 4, the one signifying *bearing*, the other, *taking away*. This *bearing* includes, also, that *taking away of the sins of the world*, spoken of by St. John, ch. i. ver. 29, which answers to both; and so He, the Great Antitype, answers to both the goats, the sin-offering and the scape-goat, Levit. xvi. He did bear our sins on His cross, and from thence did bear them away to His grave, and there they are buried; and they whose sins He did so bear, and take away, and bury, shall hear no more of them as theirs to bear. Is He not, then, worthy to be beheld in that notion under which John, in the fore-mentioned text, viewed Him, and designates Him?—*Behold the Lamb of GOD, which beareth and taketh away the sin of the world!*

You, then, who are gazing on vanity, be persuaded to turn your eyes this way, and behold this lasting wonder, this Lord of Life dying! But the most, alas! want a due eye for this Object. It is the eye of faith alone that looks aright on Him, and is daily discovering new worlds of excellency and delight in this crucified Saviour; that can view Him daily as hanging on the Cross, without the childish gaudy help of a crucifix,† and grow in the knowledge of that Love which passeth knowledge, and rejoice itself in frequent thinking and speaking of Him, instead of those idle and vain thoughts at the best, and empty discourses, wherein the most delight, and wear out the day. What is all knowledge but painted folly in comparison of this? Hadst thou Solomon's faculty to discourse of all plants, and hadst not the right knowledge of this ROOT OF JESSE; wert thou singular in the knowledge of the stars and of the course of the heavens, and couldst walk through the spheres with a *Jacob's staff*,‡ but ignorant of this STAR OF JACOB; if

* Cf. Dr. Worthington on *Self-Resignation*, sect. II. chap. viii. pp. 121, 123, Lond. 1826; and Jones of Nayland *On the Offering up of Isaac*, § 13.

† 'Gaudy' is derived from *Gaud*, a pleasing trifle or toy.

‡ The Jacob's Staff, Radius Astronomicus, or Cross Staff, has been super-

thou knewest the histories of all time, and the life and death of all the most famous princes, and could rehearse them all, but dost not spiritually know and apply to thyself the DEATH OF JESUS as thy life; thou art still a wretched fool, and all thy knowledge with thee shall quickly perish. On the other side, if thy capacity or breeding hath denied thee the knowledge of all these things wherein men glory so much, yet do but learn CHRIST CRUCIFIED, and what wouldst thou have more? That shall make thee happy for ever. FOR THIS IS LIFE ETERNAL, TO KNOW THEE THE ONLY TRUE GOD, AND JESUS CHRIST WHOM THOU HAST SENT, John xvii. 3.

Here St. Paul takes up his rest, *I determined to know nothing but Jesus Christ and Him crucified*, 1 Cor. ii. 2. As if he had said, Whatsoever I knew besides, I resolved to be as if I knew nothing besides this, the only knowledge wherein I will rejoice myself, and which I will labour to impart to others. I have tried and compared the rest, and find them all unworthy of their room beside this, and my whole soul too little for this. I have passed this judgment and sentence on all. I have adjudged myself to deny all other knowledge, and confined myself within this circle, and I am not straitened. No, there is room enough in it; it is larger than heaven and earth, *Christ and Him crucified*; the most despised and ignominious part of knowledge, yet the sweetest and most comfortable part of all: the root whence all our hopes of life, and all our spiritual joys do spring.

But the greatest part of mankind hear this subject as a

seded by the more efficient instruments, see also Hood on the *Cross-Staff*, 1596.
the Astrolabe and Theodolite. A large In Sylvester's *Du Bartas*, pt. iv. D. 2.
woodcut of the *baculus Jacobi* may be W. 2, folio ed. p. 291, it is thus de-
seen in the *Margarita Philosophica*, 1496; scribed:—

'The Jacob's-Staff, to measure heights and lands,
Shall far excel a thousand nimble hands,
To part the earth in zones and climates even;
And in twice twenty-and-four figures, Heaven.'

The whole passage in the text recalls the opening lines of G. Herbert's poem on *The Agony*:—

'Philosophers have measured mountains,
Fathomed the depths of seas, of states, and kings,
Walked with a staff to Heaven, and traced fountains:
But there are two vast, spacious things,
The which to measure it doth more behove:
Yet few there are that sound them—Sin and Love.'

story. Some are a little moved with the present sound of it, but they draw it not home into their hearts, to make it theirs, and to find salvation in it, but still cleave to sin, and love sin better than Him who suffered for it.

But you whose hearts the Lord hath deeply humbled under a sense of sin, come to this depth of consolation, and try it, that you may have experience of the sweetness and riches of it. Study this point thoroughly, and you will find it answer all, and quiet your consciences. Apply this *bearing of sin* by the Lord Jesus for you, for it is published and made known to you for this purpose. This is the genuine and true use of it, as of the *brazen serpent*, not that the people might emptily gaze on the fabric of it, but that those that looked on it might be cured. When all that can be said, is said against you, 'It is true,' may you say, 'but it is all satisfied for; He on whom I rest made it His, and did bear it for me.' The person of Christ is of more worth than all men, yea, than all the creatures, and therefore His life was a full ransom for the greatest offender.

And as for outward troubles and sufferings, which were the occasion of this doctrine in this place, they are all made exceeding light by the removal of this great pressure. Let the Lord lay on me what He will, seeing He hath taken off my sin, and laid that on His own Son in my stead. I may suffer many things, but He hath borne that for me which alone was able to make me miserable.

And you that have this persuasion, how will your hearts be taken up with His love, *who has so loved you as to give Himself for you*; who interposed Himself to bear off from you the stroke of everlasting death, and encountered all the wrath due to us, and went through with that great work, by reason of His unspeakable love! Let Him never go forth from my heart, who for my sake refused to go down from the cross.*

II. The End of these Sufferings. *That we being dead to sin, should live unto righteousness.*] The Lord doth nothing in vain; He hath not made the least of His works to no purpose; *in wisdom hath He made them all*, says the

* Nunquam recederet a corde meo qui pro me non recessit a cruce.—S. Aug. *Soliloq.* cap. 13. § 4. Cf. above, p. 135.

Psalmist. And this is true, not only in regard of their excellent frame and order, but of their end, which is a chief point of wisdom. So then, in order to the right knowledge of this great work put into the hands of Jesus Christ, it is of special concern to understand what is its End.

Now this is the thing which Divine wisdom and love aimed at in that great undertaking, and therefore it will be our truest wisdom, and the truest evidence of our reflex love, to intend the same thing, that in this *the same mind may be in us that was in Christ Jesus* in His suffering for us; for this very end it is expressed, *That we being dead to sin, should live to righteousness.*

In this there are three things to be considered: 1. What this death and life is; 2. The intendment of it in the sufferings and death of Jesus Christ; 3. The effecting of it by them.

1. What this death and life is. Whatsoever it is, surely it is no small change that bears the name of the great and last natural change that we are subject to, a *death*, and then has another kind of *Life* succeeding to it.

In this the greatest part of mankind are mistaken, that they take any slight alteration in themselves for true conversion. A world of people are deluded with superficial moral changes in their life, some rectifying of their outward actions and course of life, and somewhat too in the temper and habit of their mind. Far from reaching the bottom of nature's wickedness, and *laying the axe to the root of the tree*, it is such a work as men can make a shift with by themselves. But the renovation which the Spirit of GOD worketh is like Himself: it is so deep and thorough a work, that it is justly called by the name of the most substantial works and productions; *a new birth*, and more than that, *a new creation*, and here, a *death* and a kind of *life* following it.

This *death to sin* supposes a former *living in it*, and to it; and while a man does so, he is said indeed to be *dead in sin*, and yet withal, this is true, that he lives in sin, as the Apostle, speaking of widows, joins the expressions, 1 Tim. v. 6, *She that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth.* So Eph. ii. 1, *Dead in trespasses and sins*, and he adds, *wherein ye walked*, which imports a life, such an one as it is; and more expressly, ver. 3, *We had our conversation in the lusts of our flesh.* Now,

thus to live in sin is termed being dead in it, because, in that condition, man is indeed dead in respect of that Divine life of the soul, that happy being which it should have in union with GOD, for which it was made, and without which it had better not be at all. For that life, as it is different from its natural being and a kind of life above it, so it is contrary to that corrupt being and life it hath in sin; and therefore, to live in sin is to be dead in it, being a deprivation of that Divine being, that life of the soul in GOD, in comparison whereof not only the base life it hath in sin, but the very natural life it hath in the body, and which the body hath by it, is not worthy of the name of *life*. You see the body, when the thread of its union with the soul is cut, become not only straightway a motionless lump, but within a little time a putrefied, noisome carcass; and thus the soul by sin cut off from GOD who is its life, as is the soul that of the body, hath not only no moving faculty in good, but becomes full of rottenness and vileness: as the word is, Psal. xiv. 2, *They are gone aside and become filthy*. The soul, by turning away from GOD, turns filthy; yet, as a man thus spiritually dead lives naturally, so, because he acts and spends that natural life in the ways of sin, he is said to *live in sin*. Yea, there is somewhat more in that expression than the mere passing of his life in that way; for instead of that happy life his soul should have in GOD, he pleases himself in the miserable life of sin, that which is his death, as if it were the proper life of his soul: *living in it* imports that natural propension he hath to sin, and the continual delight he takes in it, as in his element, and living to it, as if that were the very end of his being. In that estate, neither his body nor his mind stirreth without sin. Setting aside his manifest breaches of the law, those actions that are evidently and totally sinful, his natural actions, his eating and drinking, his religious actions, his praying, and hearing, and preaching, are sin at the bottom. And generally, his heart is no other than a forge of sin: *Every imagination, every fiction* of things framed there, *is only evil continually, or every day,** and all the day long; it is his very trade and life.

* Gen. vi. 5. The author frequently refers to some Latin version of this passage, *Omnis fictio cordis, &c.*

Now, in opposition to this life of sin, this living in it and to it, a Christian is said to *die to sin*, to be cut off or separated from it. In our miserable natural state, there is as close a union betwixt us and sin as betwixt our souls and bodies: it lives in us and we in it, and the longer we live in that condition the more the union grows, and the harder it is to dissolve it; and it is as old as the union of soul and body, begun with it, so that nothing but the death here spoken of can part them. And this death, in this relative sense, is mutual: in the work of conversion, sin dies, and the soul dies to sin, and these two are really one and the same thing. The Spirit of GOD kills both at one blow, sin in the soul, and the soul to sin: as the Apostle says of himself and the world, Gal. vi. 14, each is crucified to the other.

And there are in it chiefly these two things, which make the difference: [1.] The solidness, and, [2.] The universality of this change here represented under the notion of Death.

Many things may lie in a man's way betwixt him and the acting of divers sins which possibly he affects most. Some restraints, either outward or inward, may be upon him, the authority of others, the fear of shame or punishment, or the check of an enlightened conscience; and though by reason of these he commit not the sin he would, yet he *lives in it* because he *loves* it, because he *would* commit it: as we say, 'the soul lives not so much where it animates, as where it loves.'* And generally that metaphorical kind of life, by which man is said to live in anything, hath its principal seat in the affection: that is the immediate link of the union in such a life: and the untying and death consists chiefly in the disengagement of the heart, the breaking off the affection from it. *Ye that love the Lord*, says the Psalmist, *hate evil*, Psal. xcvi. 10. An unrenewed mind may have some temporary dislikes even of its beloved sins in cold blood, but it returns to like them within a while. A man may not only have times of cessation from his wonted way of sinning, but, by reason of the society wherein

* Amor meus pondus meum: ubi amo eò feror. Anima verius est ubi amat quàm ubi animat.—S. Aug.

The antithesis is more elegantly rendered by A. Gray, in his sermon on *The Believer's Love to an unseen Christ*: 'That which we speak in the Schools is

eminently verified of a Christian, *Anima magis est ubi amat quàm ubi animat*, "The soul of a Christian is more where it loves than where it lives." See also Evangelista's *Kingdom of God in the Soul*, Paris, 1657, p. 139.

he is and the withdrawing of occasions to sin, and divers other causes, his very desire after it may seem to himself to be abated, and yet he may be not dead to sin but only asleep to it; and therefore when a temptation, backed with opportunity and other inducing circumstances, comes and jogs him, he awakes and arises, and follows it.

A man may for a while distaste some meat which he loves (possibly upon a surfeit), but he quickly regains his liking of it. Every quarrel with sin, every fit of dislike to it, is not that hatred which is implied in dying to sin. Upon the lively representation of the deformity of his sin to his mind, certainly a natural man may fall out with it; but this is but as the little jars of husband and wife, which are far from dissolving the marriage: it is not a fixed hatred, such as amongst the Jews inferred a divorce—*If thou hate her, put her away*; that is to die to it; as by a legal divorce the husband and wife are civilly dead one to another in regard of the tie and use of marriage.

Again, some men's education, and custom, and moral principles, may free them from the grossest kind of sins, yea, a man's temper may be averse from them, but they are alive to their own kind of sins, such as possibly are not so deformed in the common account, covetousness, or pride, or hardness of heart, and either a hatred or a disdain of the ways of holiness which are too strict for them, and exceed their size. Besides, for the good of human society, and for the interest of His own Church and people, GOD restrains many natural men from the height of wickedness, and gives them moral virtues. There be very many and very common sins, which more refined natures, it may be, are scarcely tempted to; but as in their diet and apparel, and other things in their natural life, they have the same kind of being with other persons, though they are more neat and elegant, so in this living to sin they live the same life with other ungodly men, though with a little more delicacy.

They consider not that the devils are not in themselves subject to, nor capable of, many of those sins that are accounted grossest amongst men, and yet are greater rebels and enemies to GOD than men are.

But to be *dead to sin* goes deeper and extends further than

all this ; it involves a most inward and universal alienation of heart from all sin, and an antipathy to the most beloved sin. Not only must the believer forbear sin, but hate it—*I hate vain thoughts*, Psal. cxix. 113 : and not only hate some sins, but all—*I hate every false way*, ver. 128. A stroke at the heart does it, which is the certainest and quickest death of any wound. For in this dying to sin, the whole man of necessity dies to it : the mind dies to the device and study of sin, that vein of invention becomes dead ; the hand dies to the acting of it ; the ear, to the delightful hearing of things profane and sinful ; the tongue, to the world's dialect of oaths and rotten speaking, and calumny, and evil-speaking, which is the commonest effect of the tongue's life in sin,—the very natural heat of sin that acts and vents itself most that way ; the eye becomes dead to that intemperate look that Solomon speaks of, when he cautions us against *eying the wine when it is red and well coloured in the cup*, Prov. xxiii. 31 : it is not taken with looking on the glittering skin of that *serpent* till it *bite and sting*, as there he adds. It becomes also dead to that unchaste look which kindles fire in the heart, to which Job blindfolded and deadened his eyes, by an express compact and agreement with them, *I have made a covenant with mine eyes*, Job xxxi. 1.

The eye of a godly man is not fixed on the false sparkling of the world's pomp, honour, and wealth ; it is dead to them, being quite dazzled with a greater beauty. The grass looks fine in the morning, when it is set with those liquid pearls, the drops of dew that shine upon it ; but if you can look but a little while on the body of the sun, and then look down again, the eye is as it were dead ; it sees not that faint shining on the earth that it thought so gay before : and as the eye is blinded, and dies to it, so within a few hours that gaiety quite evanishes and dies itself.

Men think it strange that the godly are not fond of their diet, that their appetite is not stirred with desire of their delights and dainties ; they know not that such as be Christians indeed are dead to those things, and the best dishes that are set before a dead man give him not a stomach. The godly man's throat is cut to those meats, as Solomon advises in another subject, Prov. xxiii. 2. But why may not you be a little more sociable to follow the fashion of the world, and take

a share with your neighbours, may some say, without so precisely and narrowly examining everything? It is true, says the Christian, that the time was when I advised as little with conscience as others, but sought myself, and pleased myself, as they do, and looked no further; but that was when *I was alive to those ways*; but now, truly *I am dead to them*: and can you look for activity and conversation from a dead man? The pleasures of sin wherein I lived are still the same, but I am not the same. Are you such a sneak and a fool, says the natural man, as to bear affronts, and swallow them, and say nothing? Can you suffer to be so abused by such and such a wrong? Indeed, says the Christian again, I could once have resented an injury as you or another would, and had somewhat of what you call high-heartedness, when I was alive after your fashion; but now that humour is not only something cooled, but it is killed in me; it is cold dead, as ye say; and a Greater Spirit, I think, than my own hath taught me another lesson, hath made me both deaf and dumb that way, and hath given me a new vent, and another language, and another Person to speak to on such occasions. *They that seek my hurt*, says David, *speak mischievous things, and imagine deceits all the day long*. What doth he in this case? *But I, as a deaf man, heard not, and I was as a dumb man that openeth not his mouth*. And why? *For in Thee, O Lord, do I hope*, Psal. xxxviii. 12-15. And as for this deadness that you despise, I have seen that He who died for me, *when He was reviled, reviled not again*.

This is the true character of a Christian; he is *dead to sin*. But alas! where is this Christian to be found? And yet, thus is everyone who truly partakes of Christ; he is dead to sin really. Hypocrites have an historical kind of death like this, as players in tragedies. Those players have loose bags of blood that receive the wound: so the hypocrite in some externals, and it may be, in that which is as near him as any outward thing, his purse, may suffer some bloodshed of that for Christ. But this death to sin is not a swooning fit, that one may recover out of again: the Apostle, Rom. vi. 4, adds, that the believer *is buried with Christ*.

But this is an unpleasant subject, to talk thus of death and burial. The very name of death, in the softest sense it can

have, makes a sour melancholy discourse. It is so indeed, if you take it alone, if there were not, for the life that is lost, a far better one immediately following; but so it is here; *living unto righteousness* succeeds *dying to sin*.

That which makes natural Death so affrightful, the *King of Terrors*, as Job calls it, ch. xviii. ver. 14, is mainly this faint belief and assurance of the Resurrection and Glory to come; and without some lively apprehension of this, all men's moral resolutions and discourses are too weak cordials against this fear. They may set a good face on it, and speak big, and so cover the fear they cannot cure; but certainly they are a little ridiculous, who would persuade men to be content to die, by reasoning from the necessity and unavoidableness of it, which, taken alone, rather may beget a desperate discontent, than a quiet compliance. The very weakness of that argument is, that it is too strong, *durum telum*. That of company is fantastic: it may please the imagination, but satisfies not the judgment. Nor are the miseries of life, though an argument somewhat more proper, a sufficient persuasive to meet death without reluctance: the oldest, the most decrepit, and most diseased persons, yet naturally fall not out with life, but could have a mind to it still; and the very truth is this, the worst cottage any one dwells in he is loath to go out of, till he knows of a better.* And the reason why that which is so hideous to others was so sweet to martyrs (Heb. xi. 35), and other godly men who have heartily embraced death, and welcomed it though in very terrible shapes, was because they had firm assurance of Immortality beyond it. The ugly Death's-head, when the light of glory shines through the holes of it, is comely and lovely. To look upon death as Eternity's birth-day, is that which makes it not only tolerable, but amiable. *Hic dies postremus æterni natalis est*,† is the word I admire most of any ever said by a heathen.

Thus here, the strongest inducement to this *death* is the true notion and contemplation of this *life* unto which it transfers us. It is most necessary to represent this, for a natural man hath as great an aversion every whit from this figurative Death, this *dying to sin*, as from natural Death; and there is the more necessity of persuading him to this, because his con-

* Cf. vol. ii. p. 403.

† Sen. *Ep.* 102. Cf. above, p. 168.

sent is necessary to it. No man dies this death to sin, unwillingly, although no man is naturally willing to it. Much of this death consists in a man's consenting thus to die; and this is not only a lawful, but a laudable, yea, a necessary self-murder. *Mortify, therefore, your members which are upon the earth*, says the Apostle, Col. iii. 5. Now no sinner would be content to *die to sin*, if that were all; but if it be passing to a more excellent *life*, then he gaineth, and it were a folly not to seek this death. It was a strange power of Plato's *Discourse of the Soul's Immortality* that moved a young man, upon reading it, to throw himself into the sea, that he might leap through it to that immortality;* but truly were this life of GOD, this *life to righteousness*, and the excellency and delight of it known, it would gain many minds to this death whereby we step into it.

But there is a necessity of a new being as the principle of new action and motion. The Apostle says, *While ye served sin, ye were free from righteousness*, Rom. vi. 20; so it is, while ye were alive to sin, ye were dead to righteousness. But there is a new breath of life from Heaven, breathed on the soul. Then lives the soul indeed, when it is one with GOD, and sees *light in His light*, Psal. xxxii. 9,—hath a spiritual knowledge of Him, and therefore sovereignly loves Him, and delights in His will. And this is indeed *to live unto righteousness*, which,

* Cleombrotus of Ambracia is the youth, and Plato's *Phædo* the book referred to. There is an epigram of Callimachus on the subject mentioned by Cicero, *Tusc. Quæst.* i. 34, Εἶπας "Ἠλιε χαῖρε, Κλεόμβροτος Ἀμβρακιώτης, &c. :—

“ Farewell, Sun!” the ardent youth exclaimed,
Then from a height he plunged beneath the sea;
Stung by no pain, of no disgrace ashamed,
But moved by Plato's high philosophy.’

In another version the last lines are rendered :—

‘ Nor wasting care, nor fortune's adverse strife,
Chilled his young hopes with weariness of life;
But Plato's godlike page had fixed his eye,
And made him long for immortality.’

S. Austin observes that this deed was rather great than good, and was in no way sanctioned by Plato's writings.—*De Civ. Dei*, i. 21. And L. Vives, in his Comment, quotes the following Latin version of the epigram to the same effect :—

‘ Vita vale! muro præceps delapsus ab alto,
Dixisti moriens Ambraciota puer:
Nullum in morte malum credens; sed scripta Platonis
Non ita erant animo percipienda tuo.’

Milton places in his ‘ Paradise of Fools ’ the enthusiastic youth,

‘ Who to enjoy
Plato's Elysium leaped into the sea,
Cleombrotus.’

in a comprehensive sense, takes in all the frame of a Christian life; and all the duties of it towards GOD and towards men.

By this new nature the very natural motion of the soul so taken, is obedience to GOD; and walking in the paths of righteousness, it can no more live in the habit and ways of sin, than a man can live under water. Sin is not the Christian's element; it is as much too gross for his renewed soul, as the water is for his body: he may fall into it, but he cannot breathe in it; cannot take delight, and continue to live in it. *But his delight is in the law of the Lord*, Psal. i. 2. That is the walk which his soul refreshes itself in; he loves it entirely, and loves it most where it most crosses the remainders of corruption that are within him. He bends the strength of his soul to please GOD; aims wholly at that; it takes up his thoughts early and late. He hath no other purpose in his being and living, than only to honour his Lord. This is *to live to righteousness*. He doth not make a by-work of it, a study for his spare hours: no, it is his main business, his all. *In His law doth he meditate day and night*. This *life*, like the natural one, is seated in the heart, and from thence diffuses itself to the whole man; he *loves* righteousness, and *receiveth the truth* (as the Apostle speaks) *in the love of it*.* A natural man may do many things which, as to their shell and outside, are righteous: but he lives not to righteousness, because his heart is not possessed and ruled by the love of it. But this life makes the godly man delight to walk uprightly and to speak of righteousness; his language and ways carry the resemblance of his heart. I know it is easiest to act that part of religion which is in the tongue, but the Christian, nevertheless, ought not to be spiritually dumb. Because some birds are taught to speak, men do not for that give it over, and leave off to speak. *The mouth of the righteous speaketh wisdom, and his tongue talketh of judgment*. And his feet strive to keep pace with his tongue, which gives evidence of its unfeignedness: *None of his steps shall slide, or, he shall not stagger in his steps*. But that which is betwixt these is the common spring of both: *The law of GOD is in his heart*. See Psal. xxxvii. 30, 31; and from thence, as Solomon says, *are the issues of his life*, Prov. iv. 3. That law in his heart is the principle of *this living to righteousness*.

* 2 Thess. ii. 10. Cf. Eph. iv. 15, ἀληθεύοντες ἐν ἀγάπῃ, *keeping the truth in love*.

2. The second thing here is, that it was the design or intendment of the sufferings and death of Christ, to produce in us this death and life: *He bare sin*, and died for it, that we might die to it.

Out of some conviction of the consequence of sin, many have a confused desire to be justified, to have sin pardoned, who look no further: they think not on the importance and necessity of Sanctification, the nature whereof is expressed by this *dying to sin*, and *living to righteousness*.

But here we see that Sanctification is necessary as inseparably connected with Justification, not only as its companion, but as its end, which, in some sort, raises it above the other. We see that it was the thing which GOD eyed and intended, in taking away the guiltiness of sin, that we might be renewed and sanctified. If we compare them in point of time, looking backward, Holiness was always necessary unto Happiness, but satisfying for sin and the pardon of it were made necessary by sin: or, if we look forward, the estate we are appointed to, and for which we are delivered from wrath, is an estate of perfect holiness. When we reflect upon that great work of redemption, we see it aimed at there, *Redeemed to be holy*, Eph. v. 25, 26; Tit. ii. 14. And if we go yet higher, to the very spring, the decree of election, with regard to that it is said, Eph. i. 14, *Chosen before, that we should be holy*. And the end shall suit the design: *Nothing shall enter into the new Jerusalem that is defiled*, or unholy; nothing but perfect purity is there; not a spot of sinful pollution, not a *wrinkle* of the old man. For this end was that great work undertaken by the Son of GOD, that He might frame out of polluted mankind a new and holy generation to His Father, who might compass His throne in the life of glory, and give Him pure praises, and behold His face in that eternity. Now, for this end it was needful, according to the all-wise purpose of the Father, that the guiltiness of sin and sentence of death should be once* removed; and thus the burden of that lay upon Christ's shoulders on the cross. That done, it is further necessary that souls so delivered be likewise purified and renewed, for they are designed for perfection of holiness in the end, and it must begin here.

* i.e. 'once for all,' as in Jude 3.

Yet it is not possible to persuade men of this, that Christ had this in His eye and purpose when He was lifted up upon the cross, and looked upon the whole company of those His Father had given Him to save, that He would redeem them to be a number of holy persons. We would be redeemed; who is there that would not? But Christ would have His redeemed ones holy; and they who are not true to this His end, but cross and oppose Him in it, may hear of Redemption long and often, but little to their comfort. Are you resolved still to abuse and delude yourselves? Well, whether you will believe it or not, this is once more told you: there is unspeakable comfort in the death of Christ, but it belongs only to those who *are dead to sin, and alive to righteousness*. This circle shuts out the impenitent world; there it closes, and cannot be broken through; but all who are penitent are by their effectual calling lifted into it, translated from that accursed condition wherein they were. So then, if you will live in your sins, you may; but then, resolve withal to bear them yourselves, for Christ, in His bearing of sin, meant the benefit of none but such as in due time are thus dead, and thus alive, with Him.

3. But then, in the third place, Christ's sufferings and death effect all this. [1.] As the exemplary cause, the lively contemplation of Christ crucified is the most powerful of all thoughts to separate the heart and sin. But [2.] besides this example, working as a moral cause, Christ is the effective natural cause of this death and life; for He is one with the believer, and there is a real influence of His death and life into their souls. This mysterious union of Christ and the believer is that whereon both their justification and sanctification, and the whole frame of their salvation and happiness, depends. And in this particular view the Apostle still insists on it, speaking of Christ and believers as one in His Death and Resurrection, *crucified with Him, dead with Him, buried with Him, and risen with Him*, Rom. vi. 4, &c. Being arisen, He applies His death to those He died for, and by it kills the life of sin in them, and so is avenged on it for its being the cause of His death: according to that expression of the Psalmist, *Raise me up that I may requite them*, Psal. xli. 10. Christ infuses, and then actuates and stirs up that faith and love in

them by which they are united to Him; and these work powerfully in producing this.

[3.] Faith looks so steadfastly on its suffering Saviour, that as they say, *Intellectus fit illud quod intelligit*, the mind becomes that which it contemplates.* It makes the soul like Him, assimilates and *conforms it to His death*, as the Apostle speaks, Phil. iii. 10. That which Rome fables of some of her saints, that they received the impression of the wounds of Christ in their body,† is true, in a spiritual sense, of the soul

* Cf. above, p. 182. 'Themistius, in his Commentary on Aristotle's treatise, *De Anima*, declares that the mind is all things; for, taking the forms of all things, it becomes all things by intellect and sense. Alexander Aphrodisæus saith as much, affirming the mind to be all things, *κατά τε τὸ νοεῖν καὶ τὸ αἰσθάνεσθαι*. And this, in fact, is Aristotle's own doctrine in his third book, *De Anima*; where he also asserts, with Plato, that actual knowledge and the thing known are all one: *τὸ αὐτὸ δὲ ἐστὶν ἢ κατ' ἐνέργειαν ἐπιστήμη τῶ πράγματι*.'—Br. Berkeley's *Siris*, § 310.

† There can be no doubt about this as a matter of fact, however accounted for, whether as a miracle or as a physiological and psychological phenomenon. Including S. Francis of Assisi, there have been more than fifty authenticated cases of persons who have been subjected to the *vulnus divinum et plaga amoris viva*. S. F. de Sales observes, in his *Treatise of the Love of God*:—

'We become similar to the objects of our affections: the righteous become lovely and perfect, like the things they love. This is exemplified in S. Clare of Montfalcon. She meditated so deeply on the passion of our Lord, and the mystery of the Blessed Trinity, that her ardent love attracted them, and the instruments of the Passion, and the symbol of the Trinity, were actually engraven upon her heart. The love of S. Paul for our Divine Redeemer was so ardent, that it transferred the life, passion, and death of Christ, into the heart of that Apostle, so that he declared, *I am crucified with Christ, and it is no longer I who live, but Christ who liveth in me*.'

'It was this love which imprinted on the seraphic S. Francis, and S. Catharine of Siena, the sacred wounds of our

Divine Redeemer, and they experienced the bitterness of an almost incredible anguish amid the delights and consolations of Divine Love. After the example of their Saviour, whose Love for Man caused Him to die joyfully on the Cross, they experienced the happiness charity can impart amidst sufferings endured for the God they loved. S. Gregory of Nyssa was moved even to tears as often as he looked at a picture in which Abraham was represented raising his hand to strike the fatal blow, which was to terminate the life of his only son. Can we then wonder at the effect produced upon S. Francis, by the image of our Lord sacrificing Himself on the altar of the Cross? This vision made on S. Francis an inconceivable impression of mingled love and grief, which prepared his soul to receive the impressions of the marks which love and suffering had imprinted on the body of his Divine Redeemer. . . Thus was the soul of S. Francis transformed, as it were, into Jesus nailed to the Cross, causing him to feel in his body the agony of Christ's wounds, and in the very same places where Christ suffered.'

'The effects produced by the imagination, when it is inflamed with ardent love, are most wonderful. We have an instance of this in the circumstance mentioned about Laban's sheep. They so continually beheld the various coloured rods which had been thrown into the fountain from which they drank, that these colours at last penetrated their very substance, and tinged the bodies of the lambs they bore.'—b. v. chaps. 1, 5, 15.

See also Dr. Ennemoser's *Der Magnetismus im Verhältniss zur Natur und Religion*, Stuttgart, 1842, and his *Geschichte des thierischen Magnetismus*.

of every one that is indeed a saint and a believer: it takes the very print of His death by beholding Him, and *dies to sin*; and then takes that of His rising again, and *lives to righteousness*. As it applies it to *justify*, so to *mortify*, drawing virtue from it. Thus said one, 'Christ aimed at this in all those sufferings which, with so much love, He went through; and shall I disappoint Him, and not serve His end?'

[4.] That other powerful grace of Love joins in this work with Faith; for love desires nothing more than likeness and conformity: though it be a painful resemblance, so much the better and fitter to testify love. Therefore it will have the soul die with Him who died for it, and the very same kind of death; *I am crucified with Christ*, says the great Apostle, Gal. ii. 20. The love of Christ in the soul takes the very nails that fastened Him to the cross, and crucifies the soul to the world, and to sin. *Love is strong as death*, particularly in this. The strongest and liveliest body, when death seizes it, must yield, and that become motionless, which was so vigorous before: thus the soul that is most active and unwearied in sin, when this love seizes it, is killed to sin: and as death separates a man from his dearest friends, and society, this love breaks all its ties and friendship with sin. Generally, as Plato hath it, love takes away one's living in one's self, and transfers it into the person loved; * but the divine love of Christ doth it in the truest and highest manner.

By whose stripes ye were healed.] The misery of fallen man, and the mercy of his deliverance, are both of them such a deep, that no one expression, yea, no variety of expres-

* Plato's *Symposium*, 19. Cf. also sections 7 and 35, ed. Bekker; and Hermann, vol. ii. pp. 163, 147, 185, 186. Wordsworth has finely combined and condensed these three passages in a single stanza of his *Laodamia*:—

'Learn by a mortal yearning, to ascend—
Seeking a higher object. Love was given,
Encouraged, sanctioned, chiefly for that end;
For this the passion to excess was driven,
That self might be annulled: her bondage prove
The fetters of a dream opposed to love.'

Plato, and after him all the great mystics, speak of Love as an ecstasy, transporting those who love out of themselves into the beloved object. 'Perfect love is a kind of self-dereliction, a wandering out of ourselves: it is a kind of voluntary death, wherein the lover dies to himself and all his own interests, not thinking of them, nor caring for them any more, and minding nothing but how he may please and gratify the person whom he loves.'—Scougal's *Life of God in the Soul of Man*, § 23, p. 25.

sions added one to another, can fathom them. Here we have divers very significant ones. 1. The guiltiness of sin as an intolerable burden, pressing the soul and sinking it, and that transferred and laid on a stronger back: *He bare*. Then, 2. The same wretchedness, under the notion of a strange disease, by all other means incurable, *healed by His stripes*. And, 3. It is again represented by the forlorn condition of a sheep wandering, and our salvation to be found only in the love and wisdom of our great Shepherd. And all these are borrowed from that sweet and clear prophecy in the fifty-third chapter of Isaiah.

The polluted nature of man is no other than a bundle of desperate diseases: he is spiritually *dead*, as the Scriptures often teach. Now to speak of it as *diseased* contradicts not this, nor at all lessens the matter; but only because this misery, justly called *death*, exists in a subject animated with a natural life, therefore, so considered, it may bear the name and sense of sickness, or wounds: and therefore it is gross misprision on their part, and they are as much out in their argument as in their conclusion, who would extract out of these expressions any evidence that there are remains of spiritual life, or good, in our corrupted nature. But they are not worthy the contest, though vain heads think to argue themselves into life, and are seeking that life, by logic, in miserable nature, which they should seek, by faith, in Jesus Christ, namely, in these *His stripes*, by which *we are healed*.

It were a large task to name our spiritual maladies: how much more severally to unfold their natures! Such a multitude of corrupt false principles in the mind, which, as gangrenes, do spread themselves through the soul, and defile the whole man; that total gross blindness and unbelief in spiritual things, and that stone of the heart, hardness and impenitency; lethargies of senselessness and security: and then, (for there be such complications of spiritual diseases in us, as in naturals are altogether impossible,) such burning fevers of inordinate affections and desires, of lust, and malice, and envy, such rack-ing and tormenting cares of covetousness, and *feeding on earth and ashes* (as the Prophet speaks in another case, Isa. xlv. 20), according to the depraved appetite that accompanies some diseases; such tumours of pride and self-conceit, that break

forth, as filthy botches, in men's words and carriage one with another! In a word, what a wonderful disorder must needs be in the natural soul, by the frequent interchanges and struggles of contrary passions within it! And, besides all these, how many deadly wounds do we receive from without, by the temptations of Satan and the world! We entertain them, and by weapons with which they furnish us we willingly wound ourselves: as the Apostle says of them *who will be rich, they fall into divers snares and noisome lusts, and pierce themselves through with many sorrows*, 1 Tim. vi. 9, 10.

Did we see it, no infirmary or hospital was ever so full of loathsome and miserable spectacles, as, in a spiritual sense, our wretched nature is in any one of us apart: how much more when multitudes of us are met together! But our evils are hid from us, and we perish miserably in a dream of happiness! This makes up and completes our wretchedness, that we feel it not with our other diseases; and this makes it worse still. This was the disease of the Church of Laodicea, Rev. iii. 17, *Thou sayest I am rich, and knowest not that thou art wretched and miserable and poor, &c.* We are usually full of complaints of trifling griefs which are of small moment, and think not on nor feel our dangerous maladies: as he who showed a physician his sore finger, but the physician told him, he had more need to think on the cure of a dangerous imposthume within him, which he perceived by looking at him, though he himself did not feel it.*

In dangerous maladies or wounds, there be these evils: a tendency to death, and with that, the apprehension of the terror and fear of it, and the present distemper of the body. So, there are in sin: 1. The guiltiness of sin binding over the soul to death, the most frightful, eternal death. 2. The terror of conscience in the apprehension of that death, or the wrath that is the consequence and end of sin. 3. The raging and prevailing power of sin, which is the ill habitude and distemper of the soul. But these *Stripes*, and that blood which issued from them, are a sound cure. Applied unto the soul, they take away the guiltiness of sin and death deserved, and free us from our engagement to those everlasting scourgings

* This anecdote of the physician Philotimus and his patient is taken from Plutarch *de Adulat.*, as quoted by Montaigne, *Essays*, b. 3. c. 9.

and lashes of the wrath of GOD; and they are likewise the only cure of those present terrors and pangs of conscience, arising from the sense of that wrath and sentence of death upon the soul. Our iniquities which met in Him, laid open to the rod that back which in itself was free from guilt. Those hands which never wrought iniquity, and those feet which never declined from the way of righteousness, yet, for our works and wanderings, were pierced: and that tongue dropped with vinegar and gall on the cross, which never spoke a guileful nor sinful word. The blood of those Stripes is that balm issuing from that Tree of Life so pierced, which can alone give ease to the conscience, and heal the wounds of it: they deliver from the power of sin, working by their influence a loathing of sin, which was the cause of them; they cleanse out the vicious humours of our corrupt nature, by opening that issue of repentance: *They shall look on Him, and mourn over Him whom they have pierced, Zech. xii. 10.**

Now, to the end it may thus cure, it must be applied: it is

* 'Christ's Sufferings were of such a sort, and were so ordained by the providence of God, as to carry in them all the marks of that sinfulness of man's nature which gave occasion to them. Thus, for that want of understanding which is in the mind of man, our Saviour's Mind was filled with sorrow and dejection. His Head was pierced with thorns, for the wickedness and vanity of our imaginations. Because we had departed from the right way, and had turned from our dependence upon God, God, in the hour of His distress, departed from Him, withdrawing that Divine Comfort which had supported Him under the bodily trials of the Cross. For our pride and aspiring to be above what God had made us, He left that glory which was natural to Him, and condescended to assume the lowest character upon earth; He was mocked at and insulted as a pretended king, rejected as an alien, despised as an outcast, and numbered with condemned malefactors. He was stripped naked at the time of His sufferings, that He might take upon Himself the shame of Adam's guilt: He was executed on a Cross of wood, which is called *the Tree* of His Cross, to remind us of that fatal tree which brought sin and death into the world: He was tried with an agony in a garden, and was at

last buried in a garden, to show that His death proceeded from the offence of man in Paradise. Because our *mouth is filled with cursing and bitterness*, His mouth was filled with vinegar and bitter gall, at a time when they were most distasteful. Our hands having been used as the instruments of sin, His hands were pierced with nails: His feet were torn and wounded, and fixed through to the Cross, as if, like our feet, they had been *swift to shed blood*. Thus was the iniquity of us all laid on Him, according to the strictest law of retaliation. The image of the first Adam, with all its depravity, was crucified in Him, and *the body of sin*, from head to foot, *was destroyed*. When Christ suffered for the sins of the world He suffered in such a sort as to show that He took upon Himself the character of a natural man, and therefore the natural man really is *such in himself* as the Redeemer *appeared to be* for his sake. None of us that are wise can hear of this without praying to God to deliver us from this *body of sin*, that is, *from ourselves*; that we, being *new creatures*, may serve Him in newness of life, to His Glory and our own Salvation.'—Jones of Nayland's *Essay on Man*, ch. ii.

the only receipt, but, in order to heal, it must be received. The most sovereign medicines cure not in any other manner, and, therefore [in the prescriptions of physicians], still their first letter is, *R, Recipe*, take such a thing.

This is amongst the wonders of that great work of redemption, that the sovereign Lord of all, who binds and looses at His pleasure the influences of Heaven, and the power and workings of all the creatures, would Himself in our flesh be thus bound, the only Son bound as a slave, and scourged as a malefactor! And His willing obedience made this an acceptable and expiating sacrifice, amongst the rest of His sufferings: *He gave His back to the smiters*, Isa. l. 6.

Now, it cannot be, that anyone who is thus healed, reflecting upon this cure, can again take any constant delight in sin. It is impossible so far to forget both the grief it bred themselves and that which it cost their Lord, as to make a new agreement with it, to live in the pleasure of it.

His stripes.] Turn your thoughts, all of you, to consider this; you that are not healed, that you may be healed; and you that are, apply it still to perfect the cure in that part wherein it is gradual and not complete; and for the ease you have found, bless and love Him who endured so much unease to that end. There is a sweet mixture of sorrow and joy in contemplating these Stripes; sorrow, surely, by sympathy, that they were *His stripes*, and joy, that they were our healing. Christians are too little mindful and sensible of this, and, it may be, are somewhat guilty of that with which Ephraim is charged, Hos. xi. 3, *They knew not that I healed them*.

Ver. 25. For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned to the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

IN these few words, we have a brief and yet clear representation of the wretchedness of our natural condition, and of our happiness in Christ. The resemblance is borrowed from the same place in the prophet Isaiah, ch. liii. ver. 6.

Not to press the comparison, or, as is usual in a postilling way,* to strain it beyond the purpose, in reference to our lost

* i.e. the usual way with commentators. Postils were expositions of Scripture, so called from being printed after the words of the text *post illa*.

The name was also given to the Homilies delivered immediately after reading the Gospel in the service of the Church.

estate, this is all, or the main circumstance wherein the resemblance with sheep, holds,—our *wandering*, as forlorn and exposed to destruction, like a sheep that has strayed and wandered from the fold. So taken, it imports, indeed, the loss of a better condition, the loss of the safety and happiness of the soul, of that good which is proper to it, as the suitable good of the brute creature here named, is safe and good pasture.

That we may know there is no one exempt in nature from the guiltiness and misery of this wandering, the Prophet is express as to the universality of it: *All we have gone astray*. And though the Apostle here applies it in particular to his brethren, yet it falls not amiss to any others, *Ye were as sheep going astray*. Yea, the Prophet there, to the collective universal adds a distributive, *Every man to his own way*, or a man to his way. They agree in this, that they all wander, though they differ in their several ways. There is an inbred propension to stray, in them all, more than in sheep which are creatures naturally wandering, for each man hath his own way.

And this is our folly, that we flatter ourselves by comparison, and everyone is pleased with himself because he is free from some wanderings of others; not considering that he is a wanderer too, though in another way; he hath his way, as those he looks on have theirs. And as men agree in wandering, though they differ in their way, so those ways agree in this, that they lead unto misery, and shall end in that. Think you there is no way to Hell, but the way of open profaneness? Yes, surely, many a way that seems smooth and *clean in a man's own eyes*, and yet will end in condemnation. Truth is but one, Error endless and interminable.* As we say of natural life and death, so may we say of spiritual, the way to life is one, but there are many out of it. *Lethi mille aditus*.† Each one hath not opportunity nor ability for every sin, or every degree of sin, but each sins after his own mode and power.

Thy tongue, it may be, wanders not in the common path-road of oaths and curses, yet it wanders in secret calumnies, in

* Aristotle, *Eth. Nic.* 2. 6. 14; Sen. *Ep.* 16. Nullus enim terminus falso est.

† Ovid. *Met.* iv. 439. Lucan. III. 689. Seneca, *Thebais.* 1. 153. Cf. Sen. *Ep.* 70:

Nil melius æterna lex fecit, quàm quod unum introitum nobis ad vitam dedit, exitus multos.

detraction and defaming of others, though so conveyed as it scarcely appears; or, if thou speak them not, yet thou art pleased to hear them. It wanders in trifling away the precious hours of irrecoverable time, with vain unprofitable babblings in thy converse; or, if thou art much alone or in company much silent, yet is not thy foolish mind still hunting vanity, following this self-pleasing design or the other, and seldom, and very slightly, if at all, conversant with GOD and the things of Heaven, which, although they alone have the truest and the highest pleasure in them, yet to thy carnal mind are tasteless and unsavoury? There is scarcely anything so light and childish that thou wilt not more willingly and liberally bestow thy retired thoughts on, than upon those excellent, incomparable delights. Oh! the foolish heart of Man! When it may seem deep and serious, how often is it at Domitian's exercise in his study, *catching flies!*

Men account little of the wandering of their hearts, and yet truly, that is most of all to be considered; for *from thence are the issues of life*, Prov. iv. 23. It is the heart that hath forgotten GOD, and is roving after vanity: this causes all the errors of men's words and actions. A wandering heart makes wandering eyes, and feet, and tongue: it is the leading wanderer, that misleads all the rest. And as we are here called *straying sheep*, so within the heart itself of each of us there is, as it were, a whole wandering flock, a multitude of fictions and ungodly devices. *Every imagination of the thoughts of man's heart is evil continually*, Gen. vi. 5, viii. 21. The word here that signifies *evil* in Hebrew [עַר], is taken from a word which signifies *the feeding of a flock*, and it likewise signifies *wandering*;* and so these meet in our thoughts, they are a great flock and a wandering flock. This is the natural freedom of our thoughts; they are free to wander from GOD and Heaven, and to carry us to perdition. And we are guilty of many pollutions this way, which we never acted. Men are less sensible of heart-wickedness, if it break not forth; but the heart is far more active in sin than any of the senses, or the whole body. The motion of spirits is far swifter than that of

* Sicut pecudes errando, id est, vagando pascuntur.—Leigh's *Critica Sacra*, s. v. *Ragnah*. The 1st ed. reads: 'The word that signifies a thought in Hebrew.' Cf. above, p. 359.

bodies. The mind can make more way in any of these wanderings in one hour than the body is able to follow in many days.

Know you not, that though the body be tied to attendance in the religious exercises wherein we are employed, yet the heart can take its liberty, and leave you nothing but a carcase? If you do not know, and feel, and bewail it, so much the worse. This the unrenewed heart doth continually. *They come and sit before Me as My people, but their heart is after their covetousness*, Ezek. xxxiii. 31. It hath another way to go, another GOD to wait on.

But are now returned.] Whatsoever are the several ways of our straying, all our wandering originates in the aversion of the heart from GOD, whence of necessity follows a continual unsettledness and disquiet. The mind, *as a wave of the sea, tossed to and fro with the wind*, tumbles from one sin and vanity to another, and finds no rest; or, as a sick person tosses from one side to another, and from one part of his bed to another, and perhaps changes his bed, in hope of ease, but still it is further off, thus is the soul in all its wanderings. But shift and change as it will, no rest shall it find until it come to this *returning*. Jer. ii. 36, *Why gaddest thou about so much to change thy way? Thou shalt be ashamed of Egypt as thou wast of Assyria*. Nothing but sorrow and shame, till you change all those ways for this one. *Return, O Israel, says the Lord; if thou wilt return, return unto Me*. It is not changing one of your own ways for another, that will profit you; but *in returning to Me* is your salvation.

Seeing we find in our own experience, besides the woeful end of our wanderings, the present perplexity and disquiet of them, why are we not persuaded to this, to give up with them all? *Return unto thy rest, O my soul*, says David, Psal. cxvi. 7: this were our wisdom.

But is not that GOD in whom we expect rest, incensed against us for our wandering? and is He not, being offended, *a consuming fire*? True, but this is the way to find acceptance and peace, and satisfying comforts in returning: come first to this Shepherd of souls, Jesus Christ, and by Him, come unto the Father. *No man comes unto the Father*, says He, *but by Me*. This is the *via regia*, the high and right way of returning unto GOD, John x. 11, *I am the Good Shepherd*; and ver. 9,

I am the Door: by Me if any man enter in, he shall be saved. But if he miss this Door, he shall miss salvation too. Ye are returned, says the Apostle, *unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.*

There be three things necessary to restore us to our Happiness, whence we have departed in our wanderings: 1. To take away the guiltiness of those former wanderings. 2. To reduce us into the way again. 3. To keep and lead us in it.

Now all these are performable only by this great Shepherd. 1. He did satisfy for the offence of our wanderings, and so remove our guiltiness. He Himself, the Shepherd, became a sacrifice for His flock, a sheep or spotless lamb. So Isa. liii. 6, *We like sheep have gone astray*, and immediately after the mention of our straying, it is added, *The Lord laid, or, made meet on Him, the iniquity of us all*, of all our strayings; and ver. 7, *He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter*. He who is our Shepherd, the same is the Lamb for sacrifice. So our Apostle (ch. i. ver. 18, 19), *We are redeemed, not by silver and gold, but by the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot*. So John x. 11, *He is the good Shepherd that lays down His life for His sheep*. Men think not on this; many of them who have some thoughts of returning and amendment, think not that there is a satisfaction due for past wanderings; and therefore they pass by Christ, and consider not the necessity of returning to Him, and by Him to the Father.

2. He brings them back into the ways of life: *Ye are returned*. But think not it is by their own knowledge and skill that they discover their error, and find out the right path, or that by their own strength they return into it. No, if we would contest grammaticisms, the word here is passive: *ye are returned*, reduced, or caused to return. But this truth hangs not on so weak notions as are often used, either for or against it. In that prophecy, Ezek. xxxiv. 16, GOD says, *I will seek that which was lost, and bring again that which was driven away*. And, Psal. xxiii. 3, David says, *He restoreth or returneth my soul*. And that this is the work of this Shepherd, the Lord Jesus, GOD-MAN, is clearly and frequently declared in the Gospel. He came for this very end: it was His errand and business in the world, *to seek and to save that which was*

lost. And thus it is represented in the parable, Luke xv. 4, 5, He *goes after that which is lost until He find it*, and then, having found it, doth not only show it the way, and say to it, Return, and so leave it to come after, but *He lays it on His shoulder*, and brings it home; and notwithstanding all His pains, instead of complaining against it for wandering, He rejoices in that He hath found and recovered it: *He lays it on His shoulder rejoicing.* And in this, there is as much of the resemblance as in any other thing. Lost man can no more return unsought than a sheep that wandereth, which is observed of all creatures to have least of that skill. Men may have some confused thoughts of returning, but to know the way and to come home, unless they be sought out, they are unable. This is David's suit, though acquainted with the fold, *I have gone astray like a lost sheep: Lord, seek Thy servant*, Psal. cxix. 176. This did our great and good Shepherd, through those difficult ways He was to pass for finding us, wherein He not only hazarded, but really laid down His life; and those shoulders which, in expiation, did bear the iniquity of our wandering, upon the same doth He bear and bring us back from it by effectual conversion.

3. He keeps and leads us on in that way into which He hath reduced* us. He leaves us not again to try our own skill, whether we can walk to Heaven alone, being set into the path of it, but He still conducts us in it by His own hand, and that is the cause of our persistence in it, and attaining the blessed end of it. *He returneth† my soul*, says the Psalmist, Psal. xxiii. 3; and that is not all: he adds, *He leadeth me in the paths of righteousness for His name's sake.* By those paths are meant the *green pastures*, and the *still waters* that he speaks of. And thus we may judge whether we are of His flock. Are we *led in the paths of righteousness*? Do we delight ourselves in Him and in His ways? Are they the proper refreshment of our souls? Do we find *His word sweet unto our taste*? Are we taken with the *green pastures* in it, and the crystal streams of consolations that glide through it? Can we discern *His voice*, and does it draw our hearts so that we follow it? John x. 27.

The Shepherd and Bishop.] It was the style of kings to be called shepherds; and it is the dignity of the ministers

* i.e. led us back. † i.e. causeth to return, or *converteth*, as in our P. B. version.

of the Gospel to have both these names. But this great Shepherd and Bishop is peculiarly worthy of these names, as supreme: He alone is the universal Shepherd and Bishop; and none but an antichrist, who makes himself as Christ, killing and destroying the flock, will assume this title which belongs only to the Lord, the great Owner of His flock. He Himself is their great Shepherd and Bishop. All shepherds and bishops, who are truly such, have their function and place from Him; they hold of Him, and follow His rule and example, in their inspection of the flock. It were the happiness of kingdoms if magistrates and kings would set Him, His love, and meekness, and equity, before their eyes in their government. And all those who are properly His bishops are under especial obligations to study this pattern, to warm their affections to the flock, and to excite a tender care of their salvation, by looking on this *Arch-bishop* and *Arch-shepherd* (as our Apostle calls Him), and in their measure, to follow His footsteps, spending their life and strength in seeking the good of His sheep, considering that they are subordinately shepherds of souls, that is, in dispensing spiritual things; so far the title is communicable.

The Lord Jesus is supremely and singularly such: they under Him are shepherds of souls, because their diligence concerns the soul, which excludes not the body in spiritual respects, as it is capable of things spiritual and eternal, by its union with the soul. But Christ is sovereign Shepherd of souls above all, and singular, in that He not only teaches them the doctrine of salvation, but purchased salvation for them, and inasmuch as He reaches the soul powerfully, which ministers by their own power cannot do. He lays hold on it, and reduces, and leads it, and causes it to walk in His ways. In this sense it agrees to Him alone, as supreme, in the incommunicable sense.

And from His conduct,* power, and love, flows all the comfort of His flock. When they consider their own folly and weakness, this alone gives them confidence, that His hand guides them; and they believe in His strength, far surpassing that of the roaring lion (John x. 28-30); His wisdom in knowing their particular state and their weakness; and His tender

* i.e. guidance.

love in pitying them, and applying Himself to it. Other shepherds, even faithful ones, may mistake them, and not know the way of leading them in some particulars, and they may be sometimes wanting in that tender affection that they owe; or, if they have that, yet they are not able to bear them up and support them powerfully: but this Shepherd is perfect in all these respects, Isa. xl. 11. The young and weak Christian, or the elder at weak times, when they are big and heavy with some inward exercise of mind, which shall bring forth advantage and peace to them afterwards, them He *leads gently*, and uses them with the tenderness that their weakness requires.

And, generally, He provides for His flock, and heals them when they are any way hurt, and washes them, and makes them fruitful; so that they are as that flock described Cant. iv. 2. They are comely, but their Shepherd much more so: *Formosi pecoris custos, formosior ipse.* (Virg. *Ecl.* v. 44.) They are given Him in the Father's purpose and choice, and so those that return are, even while they wander, *His sheep* in some other sense than the rest which perish. They are, in the secret love of Election, of Christ's sheepfold, though not as yet actually brought into it. But when His time comes, wheresoever they wander, and how far off soever, even those who have strayed most, yet He reduces them, and rejoices Heaven with their return, and leads them till He bring them to partake of the joy that is there. That is the end of the way wherein He guides them. John x. 27, 28. *They hear My voice, and follow Me.* And they shall never repent of having done so. To follow Him is to follow life, for He is THE LIFE. He is in that Glory which we desire; and where would we be, if not there where He is, who, at His parting from the world, said, *Where I am there ye shall be also?* To this happy meeting and heavenly abode, may GOD, of His infinite mercy, bring us, through *Jesus Christ our Lord!* Amen.

END OF CHAPTER SECOND.

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
46
47
48
49
50
51
52
53
54
55
56
57
58
59
60
61
62
63
64
65
66
67
68
69
70
71
72
73
74
75
76
77
78
79
80
81
82
83
84
85
86
87
88
89
90
91
92
93
94
95
96
97
98
99
100





